



I'm Really a Superstar

Arc 03 - WebTV Arc

by: Chang Yu

Credits

ebook by: mors
translated by: Legge & Cktalon
hosted at: [Gravity Tales](#)

Synopsys

Zhang Ye was originally a mundane college graduate, cursed with below average looks and height but with aspiring dreams of becoming famous. However one day, he woke up and suddenly found himself in a parallel world!

In this new world, most things were similar to his previous world but there existed subtle differences, be it: brands, celebrities or even famous works!

Armed with the knowledge of his previous world and a heaven-defying Game Ring that gives him magical items, stats and skills, Zhang Ye embarks on a journey to pursue his life-long dream of becoming a celebrity.

Follow Zhang Ye as he takes the new world by storm, one plagiarized piece at a time, to hilarious reactions!

(Synopsys by: ThetaJune)

Table of Contents

[Chapter 204](#)

[Chapter 205: School Belle!](#)

[Chapter 206: Game Difficulty Adjustment!](#)

[Chapter 207](#)

[Chapter 208: Zhang Ye Appears](#)

[Chapter 209: Teacher Zhang Ye, I love you to death!](#)

[Chapter 210: You can't open the lock? Let me do it!](#)

[Chapter 211: Who Knows How to Fly a Plane?](#)

[Chapter 212: Teacher Zhang, you really know how to fly a plane!](#)

[Chapter 213: Bro, how do I get to Hong Qiao airport?](#)

[Chapter 214: You China Airlines are too much a bully](#)

[Chapter 215: Everyone's attention on the plane that lost communications!](#)

[Chapter 216: The Hair-raising Landing!](#)

[Chapter 217: The Applause for Teacher Zhang!](#)

[Chapter 218: The Kissing Bet with the School Belle!](#)

[Chapter 219: On Central TV News!](#)

[Chapter 220: Most Raffish Host in History!](#)

[Chapter 221: The Airport Holds an Appreciation Ceremony!](#)

[Chapter 222: New House has been decided on](#)

[Chapter 223: This is the Legendary Zhang Ye?](#)

[Chapter 224: The School Belle is also in the Same Company?](#)

[Chapter 225: Using the Red String of Fate!](#)

[Chapter 226: Stuck in the Ladies'!](#)

[Chapter 227: The Pioneer of Talk Shows in this World!](#)

[Chapter 228: Living with the School belle!](#)

[Chapter 229: What is a Talk Show?](#)

[Chapter 230: No One is Optimistic!](#)

[Chapter 231: I am Zhang Ye, I speak for myself!](#)

[Chapter 232: “I’ll Speak for Myself” Released on the Web!](#)

[Chapter 233: Promotional Advertisement Published!](#)

[Chapter 234: National Buzz!](#)

[Chapter 235: Zhang Ye’s Fashionable Body!](#)

[Chapter 236: Program Title Introduction, “I’ll Feed a Bag of Salt to Myself”!](#)

[Chapter 237: Fusing all Talk Show programs!](#)

[Chapter 238: Talk Show’s Recording Begins!](#)

[Chapter 239: Talk Show’s Recording...Really Begins!](#)

[Chapter 240: The Live Scene Filled with a Volley of Laughter!](#)

[Chapter 241: The First Episode of a Talk Show Comes to a Successful Ending!](#)

[Chapter 242: The Program that Shocks the World!](#)

[Chapter 243: The Airing of Talk Show!](#)

[Chapter 244: So a Program Can be Done this Way!](#)

[Chapter 245: Zhang Ye—Please remember this name!](#)

[Chapter 246: Zhang Ye’s Ratings Legend Continues!](#)

[Chapter 247: A Program Staff Credit List that Shocks Everyone!](#)

[Chapter 248: Live broadcast? Nothing I’m afraid of!](#)

[Chapter 249: A war of words begins again!](#)

[Chapter 250: WebTV’s First Historical Live Broadcast!](#)

[Chapter 251: Zhang Ye’s Continuous Saving off the Situation!](#)

[Chapter 252: Teacher Zhang begins Cursing!](#)

[Chapter 253: Zhang Ye's Cursing Time!](#)

[Chapter 254: Scolding till the Skies Go Dark!](#)

[Chapter 255: Great Victory!](#)

[Chapter 256: A change in schedules for the Talk Show!](#)

[Chapter 257: Numerous Television Stations Head-hunt Zhang Ye!](#)

[Chapter 258: Which is the best in excavating technology?](#)

[Chapter 259](#)

[Chapter 260: Sneak attack on the school belle!](#)

[Chapter 261](#)

[Chapter 262: Talk Show Gets Taken Off Air?](#)

[Chapter 263: If the tiger doesn't roar, do you think I'm an ill cat?](#)

[Chapter 264: The SARFT's Press Conference!](#)

[Chapter 265: During the Live Broadcast!](#)

[Chapter 266: Zhang Ye's "The Answer"!](#)

[Chapter 267: That familiar Teacher Zhang is back again!](#)

[Chapter 268: "The Last Speech" of Zhang Ye!](#)

[Chapter 269: Solidarity from Everywhere!](#)

[Chapter 270: A Carefree Soul!](#)

[Chapter 271: A man answers for what he does!](#)

[Chapter 272: That "Sunflower in the Sun"!](#)

[Chapter 273: One Scolding a Day!](#)

[Chapter 274: The Target of Scrutiny by the SARFT!](#)

[Chapter 275: Another War of Words with 'Working Together'!](#)

[Chapter 276](#)

[Chapter 277: Li Tao's Reputation Destroyed!](#)

[Chapter 278: Hacker Zhang Ye!](#)

[Chapter 279: Support Genuine Products!](#)

[Chapter 280: Finally found Li Tao's skeletons!](#)

[Chapter 281: Revealed at roughly 8:20!](#)

[Chapter 282: Offering a Limerick!](#)

[Chapter 283: "Zhang Ye's Talk Show" Restored!](#)

[Chapter 284: Top of the SARFT's Blacklist—Zhang Ye!](#)

Chapter 204

Afternoon.

Airport.

Just as he arrived at the hall, his phone rang.

It was Yao Jiancai, "Hey Little Zhang, why didn't you pick my call up all night?"

"Hey Old Yao," Zhang Ye was very familiar with him, so he casually addressed him, "Did you call me yesterday? Hai, I left my phone at home and didn't bring it with me.

Yao Jiancai then said, "Where are you?"

"At the airport, why?" Zhang Ye asked.

"The movie has finished pre-production and there should be a celebration today and everyone is gathered for a feast. Now everyone is here except you. What are you doing at the airport? You have a job notice? Forget it. Let's talk when you get here since it isn't that far away. We are at Shun Yi." Yao Jiancai then said, "Be quick, everyone's waiting for you. If not for you subduing those monks on that mountain, our movie would have continued filming until the next month and go to other provinces to get the scenes of other monasteries. The to and fro of taking a plane would have delayed us greatly. So we can't have you not attending. The Deputy Director even asked about you."

Zhang Ye said, "I think I shouldn't go? I have a flight in the afternoon."

"That's in the late afternoon. It's still early. Come here quickly. That's all." Yao Jiancai hung up.

D*mn, Zhang Ye's expression looked mixed. He looked at his check-in time and there was plenty of time, so he grabbed a taxi to the address Old Yao sent him through a text message.

.....

“Here, cheers!”

“Teacher Little Zhang, drink!”

“Yes, I want to have one with Teacher Zhang!”

“Zhang Ye, let us have one drink. I didn’t know you in the past, but I sure got to know you at that little mountain. You sure are powerful. Let’s drink, no wine must be left!”

“Haha, let’s all toss a drink. Let’s celebrate the completion of ‘The Great Pugilistic World’!”

“If the box office exceeds a hundred million, then we will have a formal celebration again. Everyone, cheers!”

.....

Afternoon.

Just past 2pm.

The airport was crowded as the crowds rushed around.

After the social gathering, Zhang Ye was walking inside but he bumped into a man!

“Aiyah!” Zhang Ye turned angry, “What are you doing! Why aren’t you watching where you go?”

The man was dressed in branded clothes and looked like he was in a hurry to catch a plane, as he retorted impatiently, “You bumped into me! And you the first offender wants to make a complaint?”

Zhang Ye stared, “Repeat once again who bumped into who?”

At this moment, the man’s phone rang. He looked nervous and then whispered, “Hi...Hi, I’ll board the plane immediately...I got it, got it!”

Zhang Ye still wanted to argue with him.

But after the man hung up, he ignored him and immediately rushed towards the boarding gate.

Zhang Ye cursed that he was lacking in manners behind him before he lined up for his boarding pass. This fellow was now tipsy after all the drinking and his steps were shaky. He did not have a high alcohol tolerance and Yao Jiancai had kept filling him up with drinks, so drink after drink, Zhang Ye was now really drunk and reeked of alcohol. After Zhang Ye obtained his boarding pass at Air China, he went to the e-ticket service counter nearby.

He placed his documents and said, "Give me my invoice."

An airport staff looked at him and took his documents to begin working on it, "Please keep this well. This is your flight itinerary."

Zhang Ye, who was wearing sunglasses, said angrily, "Why do I want a flight itinerary? I want my invoice."

The staff turned speechless, "This is the airport's invoice, and can be used for reimbursement claims."

Zhang Ye carried on with his ways, "There isn't even a scratch-it part*. This invoice you gave me must be fake, right?"

"What scratch-it?" The staff turned dumbfounded.

Zhang Ye's eyes swept across him, "There should be a thin flap by the corner, so that when you open it, you will know how much money you win. If not, it will have words like "thank you for playing", don't you even know this? Are you new here?"

The staff's eyes nearly went blank, "Bro! That is a restaurant receipt!" He even called him "Bro".

"Right, if a restaurant even has it, why doesn't such a large airport have one?" Zhang Ye said seriously.

The staff was at a loss for words and he did not know whether to laugh or cry. Having worked in the airport for so many years, this was the first time he met such an argumentative passenger. Your sister! You still dare say I'm new here? Which airport have you seen print out a flight itinerary with a scratch-it!

"Pfft!"

"Scratch-it?"

A few staff members near this counter nearly fainted upon hearing this!

Although this was Zhang Ye's first time flying, he would not lack such common sense. The main reason was that he was drunk and saying alcohol-induced words.

It was a domestic short haul flight so this small aircraft did not have first-class, only business class. When he saw the business class people heading towards the gate to get their tickets checked, Zhang Ye also went forward but was stopped because he was not in business class. In his daze, Zhang Ye somehow managed to board the plane and found his seat. His seat was by the window so he leaned onto the window and fell asleep while still muttering. It was clearly in economy class, so he said stuff like, "Such a big company and yet they are so stingy to not buy a business class ticket, so mean!"

.....

In the air.

The passengers were riding through the clouds.

After an unknown period of time passed, Zhang Ye groggily woke up. He found his surroundings unstable, as they were sloshing around. The plane had clearly lifted off early on.

Someone pushed his head.

So it was because he had been woken up by someone.

"Hey, wake up." It was a girl's soothing voice.

After sleeping for approximately 1-2 hours, Zhang Ye suddenly felt awake from his stupor. The first thing he remembered was him quarreling with the staff in the airport's hall about the scratch-it on his flight itinerary. Zhang Ye only felt embarrassment and only when he realized that he was still wearing sunglasses did he heave a sigh of relief. Thankfully he was wearing sunglasses, so that others couldn't recognize him. If it was reported, how was he to carry on living. Hai, alcohol sure isn't a good thing!

Eh?

Am I lying down? The seats in economy class can also go all the way down?

“Wake up!” The girl’s voice sounded angry as Zhang Ye’s head was being pushed again.

“What are you doing?” Zhang Ye also turned angry. He was sleeping soundly, why the f**k would you push me? Did I provoke you? He opened his heavy eyelids and looked forward. This glance didn’t matter much, but it stunned Zhang Ye. His eyes enlarged as he stared. All his tipsiness was now gone, yet his brain seemed to still be drunk and a bit confused. He was wondering if he was still dreaming!

“Still talking about doing what? You have been lying on my legs, so what do you think you are doing?” The girl’s angry voice came. It was very close to him as her breath surged towards Zhang Ye’s face.

Zhang Ye’s face turned pale. It was as embarrassing as it could be. Only then did he know how serious the situation was. Your sister! This bro is already a star now and a famous host. I can’t lose my face. Zhang Ye’s brain was extremely fast so he thought up numerous ideas in a split second. He wanted to find a way to allay this embarrassing situation. He could not be accused of being a gangster!

Play dumb?

Acting cute?

Pretend to be crazy?

Pretend that he did not know anything?

According to that plan, it could very well resolve the situation as long as Zhang Ye raised his head in his daze and said one sentence to that girl, “Daddy, do you know how to sing Twinkle Twinkle Little Star?”.

This sentence would definitely let Zhang Ye get out of this situation but he was too ashamed to say it.

Zhang Ye did not say anything and quickly got off the girl’s body.

The girl was wearing a pair of sunglasses, so her expression could not be read. Besides wearing a short skirt in late autumn, she also wore a black trench coat.

“Sorry, sorry.” Zhang Ye said in embarrassment.

The girl waved her hand seeing that he apologized, “Forget it, forget it.”

Zhang Ye added on, “Uh, friend, how did I end up lying down?”

The girl pushed her sunglasses and said, “How do I know. When I came, I saw you sleeping while leaning on the window. I also slept but after sleeping for a while, there was one more person on my legs.”

Zhang Ye said, “I drank a bit too much before boarding. I’m really sorry.”

“It’s alright.” The girl was rather reasonable, “When you are out, it’s inevitable. As long we empathize with one another.”

Only then did Zhang Ye look at her face. Although the sunglasses blocked a large portion of her face, it could not block her beauty. She was definitely a beauty and was not just any ordinary beauty. This sort of beauty was rarely seen by Zhang Ye even in the entertainment circles. Only Rao Aimin and Zhang Yuanqi could compare.

Eh...why does she look so familiar.

Zhang Ye stared at her without blinking, this person...

“What’s the matter? What are you looking at me for?” The girl frowned.

Zhang Ye suddenly expressed shock and pointed at her, “Hey! Dong Shanshan?”

When the girl heard this, she was dumbfounded, “You can recognize me even like this? Have you seen my shows? It can’t be. My shows don’t even broadcast in the capital!”

“What show? You even went on shows?” Zhang Ye took off his sunglasses.

When Dong Shanshan saw Zhang Ye, she also suddenly laughed and pointed at him, “Zhang Ye?”

* In China, small businesses, especially eateries, would try to evade taxes by not providing official receipts, hence under-claiming their revenue. To combat this, the Chinese government includes scratch-its on receipts to encourage consumers to request a receipt from the business. You can read more about it [here](#) .

Chapter 205: School Belle!

Such a coincidence!

It was really Dong Shanshan!

He never expected to meet an old friend!

Of course, that was in his previous world. Although the game ring changed the world, Zhang Ye managed to realize that his life history and his friends from his past did not change. This was why Dong Shanshan was able to recognize him. In this world, they were still classmates for four years, and they were from the same major, so they took the same classes everyday, big or small.

The school's belle!

She was absolutely their school's belle!

As someone who was borned after the 1980s, there was no such label of "school belles" back when he first entered middle school. People did not make such distinguishment, but by the time he entered university, the Internet created lists of school belles such as the school belle pageants, *etc.* This wave had infected his media college that even the males created a pageant. Dong Shanshan was chosen as one of the school belles. One had to know that their media college was a prestigious school, and with the broadcasting and acting majors, it was filled with beauties. Beauties and goddesses may be few in number in other colleges, but they were common in their media college. To stand out amongst all those beauties indicated how good Dong Shanshan's looks and body were. Even amongst all the mass numbers of school belles in their school, Dong Shanshan was chosen as number one by all the broadcasting male animals. As the media college's most outstanding major was broadcast hosting and not acting, by being chosen as number one for the broadcasting hosting major made Dong Shanshan the best in the entire school. Besides the denial

from the people in the acting majors, all other majors agreed through silence.

As most people did not stay in school for their fourth year, Zhang Ye had almost not seen her for a year!

“How could it be you?” Dong Shanshan gave a charming smile.

“I was just about to ask that.” Zhang Ye had not expected to see the school belle from back then. “You are also going to Shanghai? What a coincidence? And we are sitting together?”

Dong Shanshan laughed, “Not only sitting together, you even slept on my legs.”

Zhang Ye coughed and said, “My bad, my bad.”

Dong Shanshan sized him up and said, “Not bad, you are really doing well these days. You are completely different from when you were in school. Look, even your eyes are emitting electricity. Your voice is also more magnetic than compared to when we were in school. If not for being so close, I might not even recognize you.”

Of course Zhang Ye did not tell her that he had eaten Fruits of Charm, “You’ve watched my program?”

“I’ve watched it.” Dong Shanshan leaned slightly towards Zhang Ye and crossed her legs, “Actually before graduating in our fourth year, I had gone to the Xishan province. The provincial broadcasting corporation had roped me in early, so I did not return to the capital after that. I did not know much, but we had a female classmate gathering last month, and everyone was talking about you while we ate. They said that amongst our broadcasting batch of people, you were doing the best. I heard you are even heading up the 4th ranked celebrities list. I did not believe initially and checked when I got home. I also watched your program and those poems of yours.” She stared at him, “Well done Classmate Zhang Ye. I never noticed that you were that talented back when we were in school?”

Zhang Ye humbly said, “Just average.”

“You have really changed too much.” Dong Shanshan sighed.

“On the other hand, you have not changed. You still look as beautiful as ever,” Zhang Ye complimented her.

Dong Shanshan blinked her long eyelashes, “What use is that? Let’s not talk about our own class, but even in the entire school’s graduating class, no one is doing better than you.”

Zhang Ye did not believe her and said, “It can’t be. What are you doing now?”

“I was a host previously, doing a variety program in one of the broadcasting companies in the Xishan province. It is only broadcast there, and cannot be received in Beijing.” Dong Shanshan said.

Zhang Ye had really not paid attention to this, “How were the ratings like?”

“It was okay.” Dong Shanshan laughed, “About 9+%.”

Zhang Ye exclaimed, “That’s higher than me. And you said you aren’t doing as well as me?”

Dong Shanshan rubbed her wavy hair and said, “It’s not the same. What does it mean to be in the capital? The quality is completely different. BTV’s Arts Channel is much bigger than ours. Uh, but that was all in the past. After that variety show ended, I did not have any more programs. I wanted to go on a provincial satellite TV company, but my leader did not approve it. I was unhappy about it so I quit. Now, I’m going to Shanghai to seek a living, and find some random place.”

Zhang Ye asked, “You are going onto a Shanghai television station?”

“Why are you so worried about me?” Dong Shanshan flashed her big eyes.

“We are old classmates, so I’m just asking. Is this some trade secret?” Zhang Ye said.

Dong Shanshan smiled charmingly, “Going there to film a movie or a TV series would be good too. If there’s anything that suits me, I’ll accept it as long as they give some money. I’m so poor that I can’t even eat.” It was unclear if she was speaking the truth.

Zhang Ye nodded, “With your image, being the main lead would not be a problem.”

Dong Shanshan laughed, “I think so too. If they don’t give me the lead, I’ll make sure they will have it coming!”

Zhang Ye said, “Our relationship isn’t too bad, but you are much better than me. You still have a choice, and you resigned by your own choice. I was fired. Now any television media that mentions me will have a headache. Who do you say I offended? Anyways, I can only find another path in Shanghai.”

Dong Shanshan joyfully said, “Who asked you to mess up the live recording. I watched the video of that live footage. You insisted on killing yourself, creating such a huge incident. Who can deal with you?”

As they were old classmates and in the same line, they had plenty of topics to talk about.

Actually Zhang Ye did not know much about Dong Shanshan. In college, Dong Shanshan was the school belle and the top girl of the school. Everyone around her placed her on a pedestal. Zhang Ye was lacking in looks and was inconspicuous in class. In the four years, he only spoke a few words with Dong Shanshan.

“How’s Liuzi?”

“Man, I don’t know either.”

“You and those guys don’t keep in contact?”

“Many people have changed phones and are busy with their own things so it’s hard to catch up with them. What about those female friends of yours?”

“One of them is also in the broadcasting industry, doing radio. Another is an assistant in a television station, working hard to get experience. Probably next year, she will be given a program to try out. And there are a few who aren’t in this industry. Some of them went to other industries, and some went into banking. All those years of broadcasting studying wasted. As for our class who are hosts that I know of, hehe, there’s probably only the two of us.”

“It is hard to get a job.”

“Right, the competition in our line is too great.”

Suddenly, people around them recognized them after they had taken off their

sunglasses!

An old man who was sitting in front turned around and immediately said, “Heh! Isn’t this Teacher Zhang Ye? Why are you sitting in economy class?”

“Zhang Ye? Where, where?”

“Aiyah! It’s really Teacher Zhang!”

“Zhang Ye, please give me your signature. My whole family likes you!”

The surrounding men and women were extremely happy finding this out. They quickly brought books to get him to sign.

Of course, Zhang Ye did not reject them. As he was signing, the people who were sitting diagonally across him were alarmed! They seemed to also be from the Xishan province.

“Dong Shanshan!”

“Is what I’m seeing right?”

“It’s Teacher Dong! It can’t be wrong!”

“The goddess of the Xishan province public channel!”

A few young and middle-aged men left their seats to obtain her signature.

One could see the difference here. Those who liked Zhang Ye were mixed. There were men and women of all ages, even including children. After all, Zhang Ye had previously done fairy tales for children. But those who liked Dong Shanshan were only males. They were also very passionate. If not for the flight attendant advising everyone to return to their seats, these men would not have left. It was no wonder. According to the ratings, Dong Shanshan’s popularity in the Xishan province was much higher than Zhang Ye’s popularity in Beijing. But in terms of overall popularity and reputation, Dong Shanshan was most likely far worse than Zhang Ye.

Finally, Zhang Ye and Dong Shanshan looked at each other and wore their sunglasses at the same time.

“We are reaching soon. I’ll lie down for a while.” Dong Shanshan tightened her black trench coat. “Are you sleeping?”

“You go ahead and sleep, I’ve slept my fill.” Zhang Ye said in a gentlemanly manner. “If your legs are cold, you can use my coat to cover it?”

“There’s no need. I’m not cold.” Dong Shanshan smiled. After adjusting her body, she tilt her head and slept while resting to the side.

Her hair came down like a waterfall.

Her head was leaning towards Zhang Ye’s seat and some strands of hair fell on Zhang Ye’s shoulders. But clearly, Dong Shanshan did not care.

Zhang Ye noticed that many of the passengers around him had went back to their seats and stopped focusing on them. As such, he slanted his eyes to look at his old classmate. It could be seen that Dong Shanshan would go on the path of sexiness in her job. This path had both its advantages and disadvantages. The disadvantage was that she would be easily criticized. The type of her fans would also be very uniform. At least most females would not fall for her. Her path was much narrower than Zhang Ye’s. It could not target men and women of all ages. But there were advantages going down the path of sexiness. It also meant her position was more firm. She could attract a large number of men. One could tell just by looking at those fans of hers. The people who liked Dong Shanshan would be more passionate. On this point, Zhang Ye’s fans were far inferior to hers.

Chapter 206: Game Difficulty Adjustment!

In the sky.

The sky was blue and the clouds were so close that they could be touched just by stretching out one's hand.

With her body leaning to the side, Dong Shanshan had already fallen asleep.

Zhang Ye looked out of the window with narrow eyes. He was feeling some sense of regret. He felt some longing for this city that he had lived for almost 20 years having left it. But so what if he felt some longing for it? The path of a celebrity was destined to be lonely. It was cold up at the top!

The journey was more than halfway done.

The stewardess pushed a cart of beverages over. Alas, that was all the treatment they received in economy class.

Zhang Ye did not let the stewardess bother Dong Shanshan. He knew that the school belle was tired. Hence, he requested for a glass of fruit juice to be placed on his tray table. He asked for a glass of Coca-Cola, and began gulping it down.

So bored.

What should I do?

The road ahead in Shanghai would be fraught with difficulties. That place was inferior to Beijing. Zhang Ye's popularity there was low and even when he walked on the street without sunglasses, there will probably be less than half a person who could recognize him amongst a thousand people. This was new ground. He had to begin all over again. Therefore, Zhang Ye definitely needed the help from the game ring. Only then could he absolutely shock everyone in his new position as a web host.

Let's play the lottery.

He looked at his Reputation points. It was about 700,000 points.

Zhang Ye sighed. This amount of Reputation was too pathetic. He could not even buy one Taiji fist skillbook. These were obtained from his “Zhang Ye’s Compilation” book and movie’s publicity. Of course, it also came from the sales of his “Ghost Blows Out the Light” book and the “Lecture Room” videos on the web. Although it had been a while since these productions were made, they were still classic. They kept providing him a stream of reputation. There were new people, who previously did not know him, getting to know him everyday. Uh, just that those numbers were decreasing by the day.

The lottery interface appeared.

He clicked to buy and did not look forward to it. It was after all just for fun. He did not mind choosing something he did not need. If he managed to draw a useful item or skill, he would have made it big.

Ding!

The lottery began!

The needle quickly rotated!

Zhang Ye stared at a few large regions on the wheel. Although he wished to obtain something from the special region, it was just a dream. He had gotten lucky previously by obtaining the right to buy the Taiji fist skill books; now, it was unlikely he would be that lucky.

The needle stopped.

It stopped on a consumable item region.

Zhang Ye was neither sad nor happy. He reduced his range of motion to prevent others from noticing. He slowly took out the Treasure Chest (Small) from his inventory. He opened it!

There was a small dice inside!

It was six-sided, no different from an ordinary dice!

[Difficulty Adjustment Die] : After it is thrown, it will randomly change the player's difficulty. The period of its effects are random.

Zhang Ye was surprised. Difficulty adjustment? It was not something unfamiliar to people who played games. For example in a single-player game, upon entering the game, it would allow you to choose the difficulty. Such as “easy” difficulty, *etc.* This dice also had such an effect? But it was by random chance? If he were to really obtain a “very-easy” difficulty, and the period lasted a year, then wouldn’t his work for the next year be many times easier than normal? Difficulty can be reduced? Zhang Ye looked at the great school belle beside him. He was guessing that pushing her onto a bed would also not be a dream?

This is a good thing!

It is a heaven-defying divine item!

Zhang Ye quickly took out the dice from the treasure chest. The treasure chest automatically disappeared after shimmering with light. Zhang Ye looked all over the dice. There were words on the six sides of the dice. They were, Decreasing Difficulty By 10x, Decreasing Difficulty By 5x, Decreasing Difficulty By 1x, Increasing Difficulty By 1x, Increasing Difficulty By 5x, Increasing Difficulty By 10x. The first one was naturally the difficulty of “very-easy” in those games. One could pick up money even with their eyes closed. As for the last difficulty, it was most likely the legendary “ludicrous difficult”, where calamities befell one.

Let’s risk it!

Demacia! (Bravery here we go!)

The chance of reducing the difficulty was equal to the chance of increasing the difficulty. They both had a 50% chance. Zhang Ye did not believe his luck was that bad. Hence, without much thought, he grabbed the dice and threw it up gently. The dice drew a beautiful arc in the air and it flew and flew. It finally stopped before it began to slowly drop down!

Bada!

The dice fell to the floor!

It rolled around a few times on the plane before firmly staying put. Zhang Ye looked at it with excitement. On the “Difficulty Adjustment Die” wrote a few words.

Increasing Difficulty By 10x!

Zhang Ye nearly fainted as he almost vomited blood!

What the f**k! Can we stop messing around!? Stop messing around!

The game system indication appeared:

[Difficulty has been adjusted. 10x difficulty. Lasting for 52 minutes!]

The time had also randomly appeared to be more than 50 minutes? Zhang Ye was scared out of his wits. He felt that he was not just unlucky today. All the bad luck in his past eight lives had fallen unto him!

Curse my hand!

My hand is cursed!

Why did I draw a prize just because I was too free!? What do I do now? Will this bro suddenly suffer a heart attack? Or would the luggage from the bins suddenly crash down, killing him?

[Countdown Begins.]

[00:51:59...]

[00:51:58...]

Zhang Ye immediately went on full alert. It was more than 50 minutes. This time was filled with danger. No, he could not drink water. Who knows if he would suddenly choke to death!

But nothing seemed to happen after about 10 seconds.

The plane was still floating in the sky. The passengers were doing their own things. Dong Shanshan was still sleeping. Everything was still normal.

Zhang Ye blinked with suspicion. That's not right. I didn't feel any increase in difficulty, what more 10 times? I can't even feel it doubling!

Shh!

Drank too much water!

Drank too much alcohol also!

Zhang Ye suddenly strongly felt the urge to use the lavatory. It was not too far

away from reaching his destination and would soon land, but he could not endure any further. He unfastened his seatbelt and quickly moved towards the lavatory.

“Oh?” Dong Shanshan was awoken by him. Her eyes sleepily looked at him, “Going out?”

Zhang Ye clasped his legs and nodded, “Going to the lavatory.”

Dong Shanshan yawned and adjusted her legs, allowing Zhang Ye to pass.

By the aisle was an old granny. She slowly gave way to let Zhang Ye pass.

“Thank you.” After politely saying that, Zhang Ye rushed to the lavatory. There were only a few lavatories on the plane.

He headed backwards and the lavatories there were occupied. He waited for a while, and still no one came out. Again he walked to the front of the economy class, but the lavatory was also occupied. He clasped his legs as he breathed in deeply. After he waited for more than ten seconds without seeing the person exit, he could not help but knock on the door.

“Occupied.” A youth’s voice came out from inside.

F**k! Was this the legendary “Ludicrous difficulty”?

After the difficulty was increased ten times, it made him unable to find a lavatory, causing him to die from holding onto his pee? How could this f**king Difficulty Adjustment Die be so wicked!?

Zhang Ye had no choice. He turned around and went straight for business class.

Between economy class and business class was a corridor that had seats specially for the stewardesses. A slightly plump stewardess was resting there and when she noticed Zhang Ye approaching, she rose up and said, “Sir, can I help you?”

Zhang Ye quickly said, “I need to go there for a while.”

The fat stewardess said, “It’s business class over there.”

“I know, but all the lavatories here are full.” Zhang Ye said.

The stewardess stared blankly, "Going to the lavatory? Just wait a while. It should be very fast."

Zhang Ye turned angry, "It's the same plane, why can't I go there?" He really could not hold on anymore!

The stewardess smiled. "I don't mean that. Alright, go on ahead. Go straight ahead." Saying that, she pulled open the partitioning curtain to give him passage.

Zhang Ye said in his mind that this was more like it.

But upon pulling open the curtain, Zhang Ye and the fat stewardess were stunned!

This small plane did not have first class. Just past business class was the cockpit. There was also a curtain that separated the cockpit door that could not be seen. Yet, he could hear the sound of the door opening. He did not know if the pilot or the co-pilot was coming out, nor did he know if that person was going to the lavatory or to find someone. But Zhang Ye and the fat stewardess only saw a bearded middle-aged man charge forward from the aisle seat. He was in the first few rows and could reach the door in a few steps. The bearded man slapped open the curtain and faced the security officer standing there. Zhang Ye had previously met this person. He was the person he crashed into when he entered the airport. They had even scolded each other. Later the nervous middle-aged man left in a hurry after receiving a phone call! He held a knife in his hand. It was not made of steel but an improvised knife that had been reported on TV. It usually would look like a card, but after folding it a few times, it would become a sharp non-metallic knife. It was small, but it was very sharp!

"What are you doing?" The security officer did not have time to react.

"Out of my way!" The bearded man had good skills as if he was previously trained.

The security officer cried out, "No good! Quickly close the cockpit doors! Don't let him..."

After exchanging two blows with the bearded man, the knife was stabbed right into the security officer's stomach!

The pilot who had just come out was greatly alarmed. He quickly turned around, hoping to close the cockpit door, but the bearded man's speed was extremely fast. He pulled out the knife and stabbed the pilot, then he quickly entered the cockpit and closed the cockpit door with a slam. This series of actions was so fluid that it was clearly premeditated!

The fat stewardess was dumbfounded as she looked back at Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye took a deep breath through his dry throat and stared back at the fat stewardess with blinking eyes, "About that, I think I can endure a little longer."

Fat stewardess, "..."

Chapter 207

The crisis came too fast!

It was so fast that no one had have time to react!

“Ah!”

“A killer!”

“Someone is hijacking the plane!”

The business class passengers screamed!

The flight attendants were all shocked. No one had expected this turn of events. A few beautiful stewardess turned pale as they rushed to check on the security officer and the pilot’s injuries. The security officer was fine. Although he had been stabbed in the stomach, he was still conscious. But the pilot was in a more dire state. He had been stabbed through the side and had collapsed on the floor after passing out. The floor was covered in blood!

“Brother Zhou, wake up!”

“Old Liu! Hold on!”

“Hold on! Hold on!”

“Little Min! Quickly get a first aid kit! Hurry!”

A thin stewardess cried from the stress as she covered her mouth!

It was a complete mess. The cabin turned into chaos, as if a pot of porridge had been messed up!

The passengers did not know what to do. They did not even have the ability to cry. It can’t be? They were actually experiencing a hijacking? This was too unlucky!

Probably only Zhang Ye knew what was going on. Firstly, that bearded man

had really been planning on hijacking the plane. Secondly, this situation was caused by the Difficulty Adjustment Die. It was 10x difficulty! This really is mother-f***ing ten times difficulty! He now understood that the Difficulty Adjustment Die was not lying! To cause Zhang Ye to die from not being able to relieve himself of his pee was not considered 10x difficulty! It's a hijack! This was sending them to their deaths!

“What to do!?”

“We're finished, we're finished! We are dead!”

“*sob*, Mom, Mom, I'm scared!”

Just as a few passengers were at a loss on what to do, a young man stood up. He was about 20 plus years old, and about the same age as Zhang Ye. His body did not seem very stout and was a little thin. His name was Yan Hui and he shouted, “Do not panic! Everyone stay calm! Bring the wounded to the back first! Are there any doctors or nurses amongst the passengers? Is there a doctor?”

Someone responded after he shouted a few times.

A middle-aged woman in her 40s gritted her teeth and came forward. She said nervously, “I'm a doctor, but I'm just a physician, I can't do surgery.”

A boy beside her pulled on to the woman, “Mom! Don't go!”

The middle-aged woman looked at her son and touched his head, “Mom is a doctor. It is my duty to save lives. Hide behind and don't come over.”

“Mom!” Her son did not leave as he was extremely worried. Who knew if there were other accomplices in the cabin!

“Quickly go! Leave me alone!” The middle-aged woman turned serious. She was not pretty, but at this moment, the passengers found her most beautiful.

Behind, a little old man walked over from economy class. He looked frail and he wobbled with each step, “Little Juan, you have grown up.”

The woman turned around and was stunned, “Professor! Why are you on the plane too?”

The little old man had already reached the wounded, “There's no time for crap.

You stop the bleeding, I'll treat the wound!"

The woman exclaimed, "It will be easy with you around!"

The thin air stewardess cried, "I'll leave it up to you! Please save them!"

A few children and timid women were crying from the fright. A few men, under the cabin crew's instructions managed to stabilize the situation as they carried the wounded to the back.

The two doctors began their rescue!

On another side, the sound of exchanging blows rang within the plane!

The young man who stood up first grabbed an air stewardess, "Open the door!"

Just as he said that, two large men suddenly stood up from the front seats of business class. One of the men's face was very black. He wore a hat which concealed his expressions. He held a simple knife like the bearded man from before. The other man had retrieved a metal stick. It was unknown if he had opened his luggage to retrieve it, but it was most likely hidden in his luggage!

Accomplices!

There were a total of three hijackers!

"Get lost!" The man on the left swung his steel stock and hit the neck of a passenger that was closest to him.

The passenger shouted as he clutched his neck. After he fell to the ground, he quickly rushed to the back!

"I warn all of you! None of you are to come over! If you want your lives, get the f**k away!" The other man threw his hat and revealed a fierce-looking face that had a scar across it.

"Ah!"

"Run!"

"There are others!"

The passengers screamed once again!

With a commotion, almost all the business class passengers had run into economy class. They wished to run to the tail of the plane, hoping to get as far away as possible.

The situation was in chaos!

People squeezed against each other, and there was even trampling of others!

Business class was almost empty. There was only one man left. It was that young man named Yan Hui.

Yan Hui shouted towards the back with a solemn face, “What are you all running for! They have two people now! Behind me are the wounded, women, old people and children. With you running away! Who is to protect them? If you are a man, stand here! Don’t f**king be a p*ssy! We have so many people so why must we be afraid of them? A steel stick is a blunt weapon, there is nothing to worry about! The knife is an improvised one! It has limited destructive power! I will take on the one using the knife! I won’t be able to handle the other person! I need helpers!”

No one came out.

The fat stewardess yelled, “Is there anyone else!?”

An old lady squeezed herself out from the crowd. She slammed her walking stick to the ground, “If there’s no one else, I will do it!”

An old person!

An old woman had stood forward!

Many of the men turned red from embarrassment. They felt ashamed!

“I’ll do it!”

“I’ll help you!”

“F**k! Count me in!”

“Me too! F**k, let’s go all out!”

“We don’t know what they are doing hijacking the plane! We can’t be sitting ducks! We need to recover the cockpit! If not, none of us will live!”

“Right!”

“Don’t be afraid of them!”

At this moment, 8-9 men stood forward!

This angered the two men. They sneered and with that, both sides started fighting as sounds of metal rang!

Of course that did not include Zhang Ye. He was squeezing back at this moment, “Make way, let me pass first!”

The fat stewardess who had been arguing with Zhang Ye before immediately showed scorn towards him upon seeing this. The other passengers also looked down on him.

“Isn’t he Teacher Zhang?”

“Right, the one on TV!”

“Teacher Zhang, what are you running behind for!?”

“They are already fighting. If you are a man, you should be helping!”

“Forget it, who isn’t afraid of death. Every man for himself I guess.”

Those words fell on deaf ears nor did Zhang Ye notice the looks of contempt from the surrounding people. He only had one thought in mind—to the toilet!

He was still holding on to his pee!

He could not even stand straight, what the f**k could he help with!?

Zhang Ye was of course anxious, so he had to first resolve his biological needs. He finally squeezed to the lavatory’s door and when he tried opening it, it was locked!

“Open the door!” Zhang Ye shouted!

A soft female voice said, “You, who are you?”

“I’m a passenger. Open the door!” Zhang Ye’s face had turned green from holding it in!

The girl said with fear, “Not opening. Who knows if you are the criminal!”

It seemed liked there were many people inside. He suddenly heard Dong Shanshan’s voice, “Open the door. This person is an old classmate of mine. I

know him.”

A few seconds passed.

The door creaked open.

There were 7 people hiding in the small lavatory. There were four women, two children and an old man. They were hiding in there, afraid of the criminal.

Zhang Ye could not be bothered and rushed inside. “I need to use the toilet!”

“Aiyah, don’t squeeze. It can’t take so many people!” A woman shouted.

A little boy said with fright, “Quickly close the door, quickly close the door!”

With an awkward position, the old man within the lavatory closed the door.

After squeezing through one person after another, Zhang Ye finally arrived at the toilet. Beside it was Dong Shanshan. This old classmate of his sure was alert. By standing right inside, it was highly likely that she was the first person to hide in here at the first notice of danger.

The small lavatory was stuffy.

“Are you alright?” Zhang Ye asked with concern.

Dong Shanshan said bitterly, “It’s alright. I didn’t expect to encounter such a thing.”

Chapter 208: Zhang Ye Appears

In the plane.

In the lavatory.

After relieving himself, Zhang Ye let out a long sigh. He straightened his back and felt alive, "Excuse me, let me go out."

The young boy inside said, "Don't open the door!"

A weak girl also said, "Let's just hide in here!"

"Right, what if the criminals come over here and kill people!" Another girl said with her eyes filled with tears.

Zhang Ye squeezed into the exterior, but could not get out. The exit had been choked by others. He couldn't help but say, "What's the use hiding here for. If the criminals want to kill people, do you think the other passengers will block them for you? They would have all run to the tail. This lavatory is right in front of economy class. With everyone gone, this area is left vacant. There's only you left, and if the criminals were to block the door, there's no room to escape! With just this small door, they can just kick it open. It will be as simple as catching a rat in a hole!"

"Ah?"

"That's right!"

"Damn, let's all get out of here!"

"That makes sense. It's too dangerous here!"

Now, everyone was in a state of panic. Every bush and tree looked like an enemy, so they acted on hearsay. With that, some people immediately opened the door and ran out.

Zhang Ye also managed to squeeze out with this situation.

Dong Shanshan saw this and rubbed the urine off her thigh and overturned her high heels to pour out the dirty water within. She used napkins to repeatedly wipe it before biting the bullet and wear the heels back on. Following that, she ran out into the cabin to see the situation outside.

.....

The struggling sounds had vanished!

The passengers in the cabin were all silent!

The two criminals were standing by the cockpit door sneering. There was no one in front of them anymore. There was some blood on the floor, but it wasn't much. The 8-9 passengers who had rushed forward were all lying on the ground. Some had fainted and some were groaning. All of them were injured and had been lifted back by the other passengers. Yan Hui who had led the charge was most injured. He had a stab wound on his shoulder and a gash along his arm. Blood was flowing out from it as he pressed on his wound without retreating. He stared at the two hijackers!

"Muay Thai expert?" Yan Hui glared angrily.

A criminal looked at him, "You must have practiced Karate? You are still too weak!"

There was no suspense in the fights prior. The passengers had thought that with more people, they would be stronger. But they were all defeated. The two first used their weapons, then their fists and legs. It was clear that they were experts, Muay Thai experts!

Muay Thai was a legendary fighting technique. It was well known for its strength and agility. The main methods were to use one's fists, legs, knees and elbow to attack. Using the limbs to attack was extremely fluid and the abundance in energy created a fierce attacking power!

Yan Hui may have practiced Karate but he was not their match!

Another criminal shouted, "See that!? This is your fate! We have previously warned you, yet you don't listen! Then don't blame us for beginning to kill!" They

were quite pissed that there was some resistance in the situation before. To subdue the people, they had to first kill a few to scare the rest. He left his partner to guard the cockpit door and stepped forward, “Who shall I kill first!? Are you sending a person out or have I got to find one myself? Haha!” He laughed perversely!

“How dare you!” Yan Hui responded angrily. He wanted to charge again, but he had too many injuries. With a misstep, he fell to the floor.

“You can’t take it anymore! Don’t go!” The female physician held on to him.

The medical professor said loudly, “Drag him to the back! Stop the bleeding first!”

Two of the air stewardesses grabbed him by his sides to prevent him from seeking death. The passengers behind opened up a path to allow Yan Hui passage to treat his wounds.

Now, there was no one standing out in front!

The old people, women and children that were all squeezed in economy class were exposed to the criminals!

The criminal slowly rubbed the improvised knife in his hand as he walked over to the crowd!

“Don’t come over!”

“Sob Sob Sob!”

“We’re finished. We’re doomed!”

“Save me! He’s coming over!”

The passengers rushed backwards in a frenzy. But there was limited space to the back. And with so many people, there was no room for retreating after ten meters!

A young man from the cabin crew shouted, “I’ll go out!” He was also one of those who had charged forward just now and had been injured. As a cabin crew, he had the responsibility and the obligation to protect the safety of the passengers. As he said that, he pushed aside the thin air stewardess that was bandaging his wounds to go forward!

The surgical professor shouted, "Sit down!"

The thin stewardess worriedly said, "You are sending yourself to death if you go over! No!"

The young crew member gritted his teeth, "But what do we do now!? No one is their match!"

The oldest air stewardess gritted her teeth helplessly as she looked at the other passengers. She pleaded, "Is there anyone willing to help everyone! Is there anyone to save us all!"

The thin stewardess cried, "Stop them!"

A woman holding onto a child shivered as she said, "There are many old people and children here!"

Many people were crying for help. They could do nothing seeing the criminal walk over with the knife in hand!

"I beg you all! Someone save us!" The criminal was just meters away from them. That fat stewardess' face was filled with desperation as she shouted one last time, "Are there any experts!?"

Suddenly, a young man from the crowd said, "Who's calling for me?"

The fat stewardess was shocked as all the passengers looked at him with surprise, "It's you?"

This person was of course Zhang Ye. He was already squeezing forward. "Let me pass!"

Dong Shanshan was shocked as she quickly grabbed on to him, "Zhang Ye! What got into you!? Being a hero at this time! Don't go!"

Zhang Ye said indifferently, "I'll try."

"Try your grandmother!" At this moment, the sexy school belle had lost her image!

Zhang Ye knew she was worried for him, but he ignored her. The crowd in front of him had made way for him. Zhang Ye smiled and went on out.

"Zhang Ye!" Dong Shanshan said worriedly!

The fat stewardess said, “You, you, weren’t you the first person to run?”

Zhang Ye smiled. “What do you mean run. I was holding onto my pee. You need me to relieve myself first!”

The fat stewardess and a few people who had despised Zhang Ye before then realized that this guy did not run into the lavatory to hide because of fear!

Yan Hui looked at him and was clutching his arm in pain, “I’ll leave it to you, brother!”

Zhang Ye also had a good impression of him, “Thank you my friend for dragging it out for me. Now, leave it to me. Don’t worry.”

Yan Hui nodded slightly, “Be careful.”

Zhang Ye smiled. “Those words should be said to those two criminals.”

Everyone looked at each other. People were thinking, who was this person, was he too confident?

“It’s Teacher Zhang!”

“Aiyah! “It’s Teacher Zhang Ye!”

“Which Zhang Ye?”

“Who else can it be!? “The previous speaker and host of the “Lecture Room”!”

“Host? Then isn’t he just good at talking!? How else...”

The criminal was delighted at this. He looked at Zhang Ye who had stood forward, “Not bad, to think someone dares to step forward? Then sorry, you will be my first victim!”

With one step, he was already in front of Zhang Ye!

Dong Shanshan shouted, “Classmate Zhang! Knock it off!”

Whoosh! The dagger came stabbing! Straight towards Zhang Ye’s stomach!

Zhang Ye knew his most powerful skill was the Taiji Fist. He wanted to use it, but at this critical moment, that Taiji Fist that worked from time to time could not be used. He could only use the basic moves of Taekwondo to retreat. At the same time, he sent out a kick with little warning and unexpectedly kicked the

wrist of one of the criminals!

Whoosh!

Ding Dang!

The improvised knife was kicked to the ground!

The criminal was shocked and turned angry. “Taekwondo?” He thought that Zhang Ye was a weakling and was not careful, resulting in him suffering a tiny loss!

“Good!”

“Beautiful!”

“Teacher Zhang is awesome!”

“Teacher Zhang Ye, you are so cool!”

The passengers began cheering!

The criminal’s face turned gloomy as he charged forward again without a knife. He began using his Muay Thai attacks. It was more threatening than the knife because Muay Thai was his trump card!

Zhang Ye suddenly felt a change. Maybe it was because he had eaten too few Taiji Fist skillbooks, or because he did not have much physical training in it. He had remembered that his landlady had previously told him that Chinese martial arts was different from foreign martial arts. It went from inner to outer. One had to train one’s body and mind first. As for Zhang Ye, he had only eaten the skills and had not trained his inner body. This resulted in the weakness of having being able to use the Taiji Fist at times. However, his Taiji Fist would occasionally suddenly appeared without warning, such as now. With almost a hundred passengers and cabin crew supporting him, he took a step forward to face the criminal, and this step was like that of a cat, it was the basic footwork of the Taiji Fist!

He could use it!

The criminal who was well-versed in Muay Thai clearly knew the Taekwondo forms. He punched at Zhang Ye’s vulnerable points and had prepared to attack his foot!

But Zhang Ye suddenly changed his movements and with a block and stretch of his arms, his hand drew up a half circle along the criminal's wrist. All the criminal's strength had been dissipated away as his body angle twisted. The foot that was ready to attack no longer could attack as he had lost his balance!

Zhang Ye took this opportunity to use his feet to sweep the criminal off his feet and stomp on him!

The criminals were greatly shocked. What the f**k! Weren't you using Taekwondo just now!? Why did you switch moves? What the f**k is this kung fu? He hurriedly tumbled away to avoid Zhang Ye's foot stomp, and looked back, "Hurry over here and help me! I can't beat him!"

The air stewardess and passengers were shocked!

Can't beat him? The criminal said he was not Zhang Ye's match?

Dong Shanshan also gave a what-the-f**k look, "When did this grandson become so powerful?"

The criminals behind also noticed Zhang Ye's strength. Their hearts sank because such an expert was not easily dealt with by just using a stick. They decided to throw the steel stick away and go into close combat with Zhang Ye!

Smash!

Smash!

The three began fighting!

Zhang Ye was going up against two alone!

Chapter 209: Teacher Zhang Ye, I love you to death!

Two people!

Zhang Ye felt the pressure immediately!

Previously on the small mountain, Zhang Ye had fought one against four. Those monks were quite skilled and and was trained in foundational skills since they were young. But it was different. Monks only trained in foundational skills and only used punches, kicks and staff attacks. They did not know many moves and were not considered martial artists. Besides, they were always chanting, so how could they have any battle experience? So back then, Zhang Ye could easily defeat the four of them, but today it was different. The two of them were clearly experts in Muay Thai. To dare to hijack a plane, they were likely battle-hardened people. Those monks who stayed indoors all day could not compare with them!

A punch came flying over!

Zhang Ye blocked!

A kick came flying over!

Zhang Ye dodged to the side!

Quickly, the three of them had fought about eight or nine rounds!

Zhang Ye could not do anything to them and could barely defend. He could not counter attack much. His Taiji Fist worked only at times. When it didn't worked, Zhang Ye would use his Taekwondo to block the attacks, but as he had eaten too few Taekwondo skillbooks, he was clearly not the two people's match. So he had to mainly rely on his Taiji Fist. It was his greatest trump card in martial arts, but it was f**king not usable according to his wishes. If he met an average fighter, it was fine. But against a good fighter, all his weaknesses were exposed. This

intermittent ability could cost him his life! Zhang Ye had decided that if he were to land on the ground alive, he would eat tens of Taiji Fist skillbook properly. If not, he might not be able to handle the dangerous situations he would face in the future!

Zhang Ye could do nothing!

But similarly, the criminals could do nothing to Zhang Ye!

The two of them kept looking at each other in dismay. There was less than 100 people on this plane and they had planned it early on. They never expected that the plane really had hidden dragons and crouching tigers. This was really an expert! The two of them could not do anything to their opponent?

It was unexpected!

Ah Ah Ah Ah Ah!

But it was after all two against one. Be it stamina or body count, they had the advantage. And in the narrow cabin space, this made it very inconvenient for Zhang Ye. The two criminals believed that they would hold the advantage in less than 20 rounds, and definitely taken him down!

The situation became tense!

“Zhang Ye go for it!”

“Teacher Zhang! **** them!”

“Teacher Zhang, kick his pants! Kick!”

“Break his leg! Go for it! We are rooting for you!”

The passengers began to cheer for Zhang Ye and screamed loudly!

But only Zhang Ye himself knew that he was disadvantaged. He could not hold on any much longer and his stamina was lacking. He could not compare to those who had trained since they were young. He was completely a person who started midway. His physical fitness was his greatest flaw, let alone fighting against two people!

At this moment, Zhang Ye could only use his trump card. He trapped them and yelled to the back, “My brothers and sisters! Everyone take something and f**k

them!” You think two against one is a lot? We have a f**king hundred people here!” Zhang Ye was vicious as he said wickedly, “I’ll hold on to them! You guys take things and smash them! The harder you smash, the better! “F**k! I don’t believe we can’t kill them!”

Yan Hui also saw the looming crisis, “Quick, let’s help Teacher Zhang!”

The old granny who had stood forward passed her walking stick to her son, “Little Wei! Go on up for me! Band together!”

The middle-aged man shivered upon receiving the walking stick but hardened his heart and practically charged forward with his eyes closed, “I’ll f**king go all out against you!”

Zhang Ye exclaimed, “Big Bro! Open your eyes bigger! F**k! Don’t hit the wrong person, you!”

Another youth who did not dare step forward previously rushed out, “Whatever! Give me something! Are there any weapons!? I’m going all out too!”

An air stewardess gave him a kettle.

The youth took the kettle and ran over with a warcry!

Many of the passengers began retrieving their suitcases. No matter whose it was, the luggage was rummaged and items were passed to the surrounding people. All of their minds were as one!

“There’s a phone here! Give it to me!”

“A phone is too small!”

“It’s a ‘Big Brother Big ’ mobile phone. It’s comparable to a brick!”

“What the f**k, what year is it that someone still uses a ‘Big Brother Big’ mobile phone? Great! Give it to me!”

“Give me too. Is there any good thing to wield? Damn...Lady, why did you give me a box of sanitary pads!? Do you want me to stick it over their eyes to blind them or something?”

On the other side.

While in battle, Zhang Ye suddenly took a step and using the Taiji Fist’s basic

steps, he circled around to the back of the two of them and moved to the cockpit door, revealing them to the passengers!

“Charge!”

“Smash them!”

“F**k you bas**rds!”

Kettle! Big Brother Big! Vanity mirror! Cosmetic bottle! And the sanitary towels, etc...All sorts of weird things were used to hit the two people!

After one of the criminal’s neck was hit by the Big Brother Big, “Ouch!”

Zhang Ye took advantage of the chaos to punch the man in the face. And with that, the man’s nose started spouting blood as he took two steps backward before falling to the ground. And at that moment, behind him was the middle-aged man who was holding on to the old granny’s walking stick. That middle-aged man was also fierce. He whacked at him without hesitation! His partner wanted to help but without paying attention, a kettle flew and hit him in the head. He stopped moving and stared at the youth who had thrown the kettle. After looking for two seconds, he fainted to the ground! The criminal that had been beaten by the stick was now alone. Zhang Ye rushed up with a sneak attack and stomped on his face!

“Ah!” The criminal’s eyes rolled as he fainted.

The two criminals were finally taken care of, but the excited crowd did not leave them alone. More people came forward as their courage increased. They brutally punched the two of them till they became conscious again, and then... they fainted again!

“Zhang Ye wiped his sweat, “Stop it. Tie them up first!”

“Right, let’s listen to Teacher Zhang. Listen to Teacher Zhang!” An elderly air stewardess said loudly.

At the moment when everyone was facing great peril, Zhang Ye had stepped forward to block the two criminals and saved everyone. The words he said was definitely heeded by everyone.

After everyone calmed down, people felt relieved. It was so dangerous. If not

for Zhang Ye, the two of them would have gone on a killing spree, and they would...

“Thank you Teacher Zhang!”

“Are you really an expert?”

“Teacher Zhang, you’re my idol!”

“You were so cool just now! Wait till I...slim down, will you marry me?” A fat girl said fatuously.

Even Dong Shanshan joined in. She gave a flirtatious look, touched her sexy lips and sent a flying kiss, “Teacher Zhang Ye, I also love you to death!”

Chapter 210: You can't open the lock? Let me do it!

In the plane.

The passengers managed to regain control of the cabin except the cockpit. They tied the two fainted criminals tightly and threw them into the lavatory.

.....

In the back cabin.

A few of the wounded were lying or sitting on the ground.

Zhang Ye came over, "Doctor, I can't take it anymore. My hand has broken!"

Don't think that this fellow was very brave and mighty just now. He was the most afraid of pain and death amongst everyone. After heaving a sigh of relief, Zhang Ye became weak. Firstly, he was tired after expending so much physical strength. Secondly, he had been hit by his opponents a few times. Thirdly, he had been hit by the passengers' heavy items a few times. Look, even two of his fingers had bent. The back of his neck was bruised.

The woman took his hand, "Let me see. Oh, it's dislocated."

"Your skills are too bad. Let me do it." The old surgical professor stood up and pressed on Zhang Ye's fingers. With two cracking sounds, they were restored to their original positions, "It's done."

Zhang Ye was sweating profusely from the pain.

Yan Hui who already had his wound bandaged smiled at him with a thumbs up, "Awesome!"

Dong Shanshan also walked over in her high heels with concern, "Classmate Zhang, I never knew you had such skills? You weren't that powerful back in

school!”

Zhang Ye bragged, “I was being low key in my college years.”

Dong Shanshan smirked, “To think you actually accepted my praise. Fine, I’ll treat it as if you were being low key. You really saved all our lives this time. So awesome!”

But at this moment, Zhang Ye began to worry, “It’s not over yet.”

Dong Shanshan also subconsciously looked towards the cockpit.

Everyone knew that it was not over. There was still one criminal in the cockpit. No one knew how the other pilot was. They had heard the sounds of a scuffle but by the time they had taken care of the two criminals outside, the cockpit turned silent!

Dong Shanshan sighed, “We’ll leave it in god’s hands.”

Zhang Ye was superstitious. He would sometimes throw a coin or a shoe to decide on matters, but he believed that “human efforts can achieve anything, so there was still hope!”

.....

In the frontal cabin.

Everyone here were anxious!

A male passenger that had come over said, “Let’s go in!”

The fat air stewardess said, “We don’t have a key outside. There is only one key hanging inside the cockpit!”

The cabin crew youth had recovered slightly and struggled over. He could tell that the situation was urgent. They definitely could not let the criminals take control of the cockpit or they would all be doomed. As such, he began kicking at the door, but the door remained motionless. It was useless!

Other passengers came forward to help, “Let’s smash it open!”

A few large burly passengers came over and took turns to smash the door!

Smash! Smash! Smash! The cockpit door only had a bit of paint scraped off!

The oldest air stewardess said worriedly, “It’s useless. It’s impossible without a key. We can’t open by hitting it. The door is made of several layers of alloy metal!”

The fat air stewardess said, “But we don’t have the key outside!”

The youth from the cabin crew said decisively, “Let’s find some hand tools! And smash open the door! Once the criminals control the plane, all our lives will be in danger!”

The thin air stewardess said pessimistically, “That person might already have taken control of the plane!”

“We still need to go in. Are we just going to sit here waiting for our deaths?”
The youth said.

The passengers knew that they needed to be united. With their lives on the line, they could only rely on themselves. But the things that could be brought on a plane was limited. If there was an axe, there would be some hope. But now, with nothing, they could only use the most stupid way of using blunt objects to smash at the door!

Once!

Five times!

Ten times!

There was some effect this time. The first outer layer of the cockpit door had deformed. But it could be seen that only the exterior had been damaged!

The door could not be smashed open!

The old air stewardess made a suggestion, “Let’s try to contact the cockpit and see what the criminal wants!”

The fat air stewardess quickly ran over to pick up the communicator but put it down shortly, “It doesn’t work. The cockpit’s communication equipment has been cut off from the cockpit!”

The older air stewardess’ expression changed, “Was it done by the criminal?”

The cabin crew youth also thought of a frightening reality, “Could the criminals

have experience flying aircraft? Or else how would they know so much?"

"Ah?"

"Is that true?"

"It can't be? We are doomed!"

They were struck out of the blue. This news was filled with despair!

Although Zhang Ye was very far away, he could still hear the conversation. His face turned green upon hearing this. There was a co-pilot in the cockpit. If the criminal had forced the co-pilot to go according to his wishes, there might be a chance for the co-pilot as the criminal would not dare to kill him as there would be no one to fly the plane. But if the criminal was able to fly the plane himself, then he had no qualms about anything. With no one else in the cockpit, they had no chance to resist. They could only wait to be slaughtered.

F**k your grandpa!

They know Muay Thai and know how to fly a plane!

How can terrorists be so talented these days!? Can you at least develop your morals?

Bro, it can't be that you are taking this plane and crashing into a building right?

The people of this world had never experienced 9/11. That shocking world event did not happen in this world, but Zhang Ye had experienced it before. He knew the nefarious ways of those criminals, so he was the most worried! These bunch of grandsons would do anything!

The air stewardess turned on her phone again and now was not the time to worry about signal interference. She made a call, hoping to get in contact with the ground but due to being high up in the air, or because their location was geographically remote, there was no signal. The other two air stewardesses tried with their phones but they too did not have any signal!

The cabin crew youth reassured himself, "There must be another way. It's not time for us to sit here and wait for our doom." He looked at the old air stewardess, "Is there any other method to open the door?"

The old air stewardess stamped her feet anxiously, “There’s none. We can’t open the door without a key!”

Despair!

Hopelessness!

The thin air stewardess fell to ground as she hugged her legs to cry. She had cried numerous times on this flight.

The rest of the cabin crew and all the other passengers remained silent. The terrifying atmosphere began to spread in the plane!

But the words the air stewardess said made Zhang Ye’s mind turn. Hey, wait a minute, open a door? Unlock? Heyah! Isn’t this a skill this bro has!?

Zhang Ye immediately stood up after wringing his sleeves!

“What are you doing?” Dong Shanshan tugged at him.

The physician also said, “Don’t move. Your arm is still bleeding. Let me bandage it for you!”

Zhang Ye ignored and strode to the front. “You can’t open the lock, right? Let me try!”

The old air stewardess looked at Zhang Ye in surprise, “Teacher Zhang, so many people were not able to smash it open! How...How are you going to open it?”

Zhang Ye said in a speechless manner, “Who said I was smashing it?”

“How do you open the door without smashing?” The fat air stewardess remained stunned, “There isn’t a key here!”

Zhang Ye chuckled, “Who says you need a key to open a door.” With that, he had already reached the front of the cockpit door. He squatted down and looked at the lock. With a glance, he had an idea. He nodded to someone behind him, “Bring me a ballpoint pen. Not a fountain pain. A normal ballpoint pen!”

The old air stewardess still did not understand, “What are you doing?”

“Quickly give it to me!” Zhang Ye did not want to die young. He still had to contribute his works of art to the people of this world. “Also I need needles,

mainly I need the needle head!”

Everyone stared at him with one eye bigger than the other. But they still followed his instructions.

The floor was littered with luggage and the items used to hit the criminals. With a search, there really was a ballpoint pen.

The fat air stewardess gave the ballpoint pen to him and a needle head was found within a first-aid kit by the old air stewardess.

No one had any expectations. Those who were in despair despaired. Those who were crying cried. No one took Zhang Ye’s “trying out” seriously.

But Zhang Ye was very focused. With a twist of his fingers, the ballpoint pen was dismantled. He only took out the pen core and half-kneeled before the door and glanced at it. This lock was not a normal household lock, but it was not much different. The basic principles were the same. And since this was an old aircraft model, the lock was of the old standards. Zhang Ye had eaten several lock-picking skillbooks which was sufficient to handle this lock. If it was a newer aircraft’s lock, he would be out of luck. Those locks would probably need an additional dozen or more lock-picking skillbooks to have any chance, as for this old lock...

Zhang Ye placed the ballpoint pen into the keyhole and with the needle head in his left hand, he skillfully pinched one fifths of the needle head and knocked it on the wall. The needle head bent into a 90 degree angle. With the needle he stabbed it into the keyhole along the ballpoint pen. Closing his eyes, he felt around and pressed on the correct spot. Something inside the keyhole sounded out. Zhang Ye stopped moving the needle head and opened his eyes to quickly twist the ballpoint pen!

“Oh, what to do.”

“There’s definitely no way of getting in. Let’s try to make contact with the ground.”

“The signal isn’t passing. Maybe the criminals have some jamming equipment? It can’t be!”

A few of the cabin crew were still discussing plans when they heard a soft click.

They froze and then turned their heads over.

Zhang Ye relaxed his eyebrows, "It's done."

Ka!

Creak!

The cockpit door opened a small gap!

Under everyone's gaping expressions, the door was opened by him!

And it did not even take 10 seconds! Zhang Ye's skillful actions was practically done without any pressure!

For a moment, everyone was shocked!

The fat air stewardess exclaimed, "What the!"

"It's open! The door has opened!" The thin air stewardess screamed!

The cabin crew youth's eyes turned round, "Your sister! It really opened?"

The other passengers were also startled. They immediately erupted in a jubilant uproar. They had given up all hope, but they never expected there to be such a hidden professional amongst them!

The old air stewardess slapped her thigh, "Well done!"

"Teacher Zhang, you are god! Awesome! You are so awesome!" All the passengers were excited!

After tinkering with the door for 5-6 minutes to no avail, Teacher Zhang had opened it in seconds. It was clear that he was a professional!

Chapter 21: Who Knows How to Fly a Plane?

The lock was opened!

There were cheers in the cabin!

Seeing Teacher Zhang Ye, who was more talented than the terrorists, everyone gave their warmest admiration and respect!

Zhang Ye could only bitterly smile. Back then when he had received the lock-picking skillbooks, he felt that it was a trash skill. It was wretched for it had no use. But he never expected that he had used this skill the most from just eating a few of lock-picking skillbooks. It had helped him several times. Such as back when the landlady's house had a thief, avoiding the reporters with Zhang Yuanqi, and this time. He could be a f**king lock specialist!

But Zhang Ye was happy. Being praised and worshiped by others felt good, as he cupped his fists, "No big deal, no big deal. Everyone has been too..."

Just as he said that, Dong Shanshan suddenly shouted from afar, "Look out!"

"Watch your back!" A female passenger screamed.

An improvised knife suddenly appeared from the gap in the door. Zhang Ye was nearly stabbed as he rolled on the ground, dodging the calamity!

There was still another person!

There was still another criminal in the cockpit!

Only then did Zhang Ye remember. He stood up in a pathetic manner. It was indeed the bearded hijacker. He had come to block the door upon seeing the door open!

In Zhang Ye's world, after the year 2002, many airlines equipped their new aircrafts with inner locks to prevent hijacks. Only the pilots could open from inside, and this world was similar. However, an old aircraft did not have such a

lock. If the criminal had locked from the inside, then even if Zhang Ye had a key outside, it would be impossible for him to open the cabin door. Not having the new locks installed helped Zhang Ye greatly. The bearded man could only leave the pilot's seat to try to shut the door once again!

But how would anyone let him do so?

Especially with an expert like Zhang Ye around. This fellow was fearless and charged straight forward and sent punches and kicks. The criminal's arm and head was hit by Zhang Ye!

"Quickly come here and help! Hold open the door! Don't let him close it! Pull the criminal out!" The fat air stewardess did not dare to go forward in fear of being injured. She could only shout from the back!

Seeing Zhang Ye's brave performance, and that the criminal was almost taken down, the male passengers did not hesitate. Five young adults piled on and pulled his hair and ripped his clothes. Combined with Zhang Ye's movements, they managed to pull the criminal out! This criminal did not seem to know Muay Thai and only had basic martial arts foundation. He did not have the skills of the two people from before so he was quickly subdued!

"Punch him!"

"Bastard!"

"Beat the f**ker!"

The crowd gathered around him and punched him!

Even old people and women sneaked in a few!

Before the criminal could even fart, he had been beaten unconscious by the frenzied crowd!

There were a few air stewardesses who did not participate in the fight. They rushed into the cockpit the moment the criminal was pulled out. They took the co-pilot out. "Get the doctor!"

The old doctor from before came over, "Quick, carry him over."

The co-pilot was seriously injured. He had many stab wounds all over his body, but thankfully he was still alive. He was still breathing in his unconsciousness. He

was not dead!

Many people heaved a sigh of relieve!

“Great!”

“We’ve finally solved it!”

“We’ve survived! We are out of danger!”

“Haha, unity is strength!”

The passengers and the air crew felt like they had survived a disaster! But at the same moment of jubilation, everyone felt something amiss. It was as if they had forgotten something very important!

Suddenly, someone said something that shocked everyone!

The old air stewardess looked at everyone with a solemn expression, “Who, who knows how to fly a plane?”

Holy shit!

Fly a plane?

Everyone was shocked. But at this moment, they thought of the key problem. Right! Your sister! The main and co-pilots are unconscious. What do we do with the plane?

Next, the scene that agitated more happened!

Everyone felt the plane begin to sink lower. The speed seemed to be extremely slow and the internal cabin began to tremble violently. Everyone began to look towards the cockpit. Some of the machinery might have been smashed when they pulled the criminal out. Now, the plane was out of control and was going to crash!

The cabin crew youth exclaimed, “I’ll go turn on the autopilot!”

The old air stewardess said, “Do you know how to?”

“I’ve seen Brother Zhou do it once.” The youth ran into the cockpit.

A few air stewardesses rushed over to help. Zhang Ye and two passengers also went inside.

But it seemed like Heaven wanted them dead. The moment they entered the cockpit, they gasped. It was obvious that there was a fierce scuffle in the cockpit. At least three dashboards in the plane had been destroyed. One of the button mechanisms had been ripped open and there were sparks in one of the lines. It was a mess!

The cabin crew youth did not think further and immediately pressed a few buttons. He pulled something and realizing that it did not work, he panicked. Again, he repeated his actions before saying in a saddened way, "The autopilot is broken! It can't be started!" Again he turned on the land communication link, "Contacting control tower! Contacting control tower! This is China airlines CA1883! Please respond!" No sound came back. The communication device had been broken!

The plane was violently shaking!

Many people lost their footing and fell to the ground!

Zhang Ye's shoulder slammed on the cockpit door. The pain made him clench his teeth!

Dong Shanshan, who was wearing high heels, also fell down. After she climbed on to a seat, she did not dare wear her high-heels again.

One could see through the cockpit window that the plane was dipping downwards at a 30 degree angle. The speed was very fast, and if this went on, they would crash into the sea!

The fat air stewardess shouted, "Quick think of a way!"

The cabin crew youth said, "I only know how to switch on the autopilot. Now with the autopilot functionality broken, it can only be operated manually. Besides the pilots, no one else knows how to!"

The fat air stewardess fell to the ground, "It's over!"

A passenger screamed, "Can the two pilots wake up?"

The doctor outside heard this, "Impossible. They have lost too much blood and need to be sent to the hospital immediately. They can't even wake up let alone stand up!"

The old air stewardess shouted, “Who here knows what to do now? Does any passenger know how to fly a plane? Is there anyone to save us all!”

Zhang Ye said rapidly, “Now, the plane’s speed is too slow! So it cannot maintain its motion and crashing down!”

The cabin crew youth and the few air stewardesses’ eyes lit up and said with anticipation, “You know planes too?” That’s right! Now, there wasn’t enough power! That was why the plane could not maintain going straight and was being pulled down by gravity!

Everyone looked at Zhang Ye!

Zhang Ye said very professionally, “Of course I know! Step on the gas! Change the gears! Move it to fifth gear to fly the plane!

Ah?

Change gears!?

The cabin crew youth and the air stewardess nearly fell off the plane hearing this. Step on the gas? Move it to fifth gear? F**k your sister and your mom, you think you are driving a car!?

Chapter 212: Teacher Zhang, you really know how to fly a plane!

The plane's altitude kept decreasing!

Sirens began ringing in the cockpit!

The cabin crew and a few enthusiastic passengers tried their best to control the plane, doing whatever they could. They tried pressing some buttons on the panel, but it resulted in the plane falling even faster. And an aircraft door nearly opened. Of course, it was sealed tight through a safety mechanism. Without releasing the safety latch, it was impossible to open. But it was still very dangerous. Laymen were really laymen. It could not be done just through luck!

The plane began to swing left and right.

Zhang Ye could not help but return to the cabin with his face white.

The passengers were aware of the situation. There were people writing their wills.

"Mom, *sob* are we going to die?" A four year old girl asked.

"We won't. Someone will definitely save us!" The mother hugged her daughter.

The little girl happily said, "Really? Ah, will Uncle Superman save us?" In this world, there was also Superman. But it was not the animated ones Zhang Ye had seen before. It had a new artistic image.

The mother shed tears in silence. "Yes, there will be. Definitely. You are so cute, Uncle Superman will definitely come."

"Great." The girl in pigtails turned to look at the other passengers, "Don't be afraid. Uncle Superman will be here soon!"

The woman and her child's conversation made everyone sad. Seeing the child's innocent laughter, no one told her the truth, and only felt grief!

.....

Even Zhang Ye, who was a heartless man, felt struck by this conversation. He clenched his fist. It was not time to give up now. F**k it, there has to be way!

Fly a plane?

Pilot license?

Zhang Ye suddenly thought of something that could give him a glimmer of hope. Because he still had a prize in his game inventory that he was not willing to use, the lucky bread! And he still had 600,000 Reputation points!

Lottery!

His survival rested on this gamble!

There was still 20 minutes left till the 10x Game Difficulty ended. By the time the time was up, Zhang Ye and all the passengers would have died from the plane crash. At this moment, hoping for rescue or expecting others to rise to the occasion was a joke. As such, Zhang Ye did not hesitate in opening his game ring and chose to buy a lottery chance. There was no need for hesitation as this was his only choice!

The lottery interface opened!

He staked all his Reputation points! He added five Additional Stakes!

At the same moment, Zhang Ye took out the only thing left in his inventory, the Lucky Bread. He ate it down. Gulp!

[System Notice: Countdown Begins!]

[Lucky Bread in Effect, Duration of five minutes!]

The plane was still falling. Zhang Ye screamed anxiously in his mind, "Hurry!"
Hurry!

The needle stopped in a skill area. Zhang Ye immediately took out the 6 Treasure Chests (Small) and opened them!

The items came out!

[Commercial Airline Piloting Skillbook x 6 - Learns it the moment it is read.]

Upon seeing this, Zhang Ye could not help but laugh out loud. Hahahaha. There really was always a way out. Thanks to the lucky bread, he had managed to draw 6 commercial airline piloting skillbooks. Without anymore nonsense, Zhang Ye immediately flipped through the experience books!

One book!

Three books!

Six books!

They were all eaten in one breath!

This experience book came at an opportune time! It really sent him whatever he lacked!

.....

“Zhang Ye.” Dong Shanshan smiled sadly as she walked over to her old classmate while holding onto the seats, “Have you written your will? I haven’t thought of what to write.”

Zhang Ye said, “What will are you writing!?”

Dong Shanshan’s eyes were without any glimmer, “Can’t you see it? In this situation, none of us will survive.”

Zhang Ye stared back at her, “If we were to survive? Let’s make a bet. I guarantee that we would be safe and sound!”

Dong Shanshan found a seat and sat down. She was listless and said without much attention, “Alright, let’s make a bet. If we were to land safely, I will let you kiss me!”

“Ah.” Zhang Ye blinked, “Kiss where?”

Pointing at her sexy red lips, Dong Shanshan said, “Is that enough?”

“Enough, that is a deal!” Zhang Ye did not have much confidence, but with this bet, it could only help him encourage himself.

Dong Shanshan ignored him after saying that. She took out her phone and began typing. It seemed like she was writing a will. This will was pretty much

written for herself. If the plane really crashed, the phone would not be fine. Everyone's actions now were as if they were pondering through their life in its entirety.

.....

Over here.

The little girl was still anticipating, "Why isn't Uncle Superman here yet?"

Zhang Ye heard this and walked over while holding onto the seats. He touched the girl's head, "Don't worry darling. This brother is here to save you."

The girl exclaimed happily, "Is brother Uncle Superman?"

Zhang Ye said with a smile, "Of course I am."

The girl said with suspicion, "Why didn't you transform?"

"Are you talking about my Superman costume?" Zhang Ye sighed, "I didn't wash my underwear yesterday so I can't wear it outside. Today Brother Superman is on plain-clothes duty."

The mother, "..."

The little girl clapped, "Brother Superman, quickly save us!"

"Don't worry. Leave it to me." Zhang Ye rushed straight at the cockpit.

The girl innocently raised her arms to cheer, "Oh! We are saved!"

The other passengers did not know what Zhang Ye was up to. They did not even look at him.

.....

"Mom, your son was unfilial. Sorry, I can't take care of you!"

"What are you saying. It's Mom's fault. If I did not pull you to Shanghai for a tour, we would not have encountered this. *sob* I've caused you harm!"

"Mom, don't say so. I don't blame you!"

A mother-son pair's words made many shed a tear!

.....

In front.

The cockpit's communication devices could only be connected to the cabin. They only heard the voice of the old air stewardess say, "Dear passengers, I apologize on behalf of all my crew. Sorry, it was our negligence that resulted in his hijacking. Now we can already see the sea below. We have done our best. The plane will crash into the sea in two minutes. Sorry."

The cabin turned silent.

After some unknown person began crying, and almost everyone began crying!

After battling the criminals for so long, thinking that they were out of the trouble, who knew that this was the result awaiting them!

Inside the cockpit, the cabin crew and the few passengers did not say a word!

Zhang Ye came in and saw everyone looking like this. Without much, he angrily said, "Out of my way! Crash my ass! Let me do it!"

The fat air stewardess wiped her tears, "Forget it."

"Forget your sister! You may have lived enough, but I haven't!" Zhang Ye cursed. He pulled the cabin crew youth away from the pilot's seat and sat there himself. He pressed a button to communicate with the cabin, letting everyone hear his voice, "Everyone, ignore what was just said! The plane has not crashed! Now, you are to find a seat with the fastest speed possible! All of you are to fasten your seat belts! Immediately! Now all the flying duties are taken over by me!"

The cabin crew youth said sadly, "We have tried for a long time!"

Zhang Ye said angrily, "All of you get out! Don't mess it for me!"

"Now, it has to be manually operated. Without a few years of professional and hands-on training, it is impossible..." The old air stewardess did not finish her words.

Zhang Ye said to bolster his courage, "There is nothing I can't do!" Could he really do it? How could he know! Now was the time to go all out!

The sea surface outside the glass window was approaching. Flying seagulls could be seen. If those birds were to hit the aircraft engines, they would be dead.

Flying in low altitudes was extremely dangerous. But, thankfully Zhang Ye still had the lucky bread effect still running. There was 1 minute left, so no flying bird was hit!

The crash would happen in less than a minute!

Zhang Ye tensed his body. He did not know which was more powerful, the lucky bread or the '10x difficulty'. He did not think about it anymore. It was a realm he did not understand. What was most important was for him to pull up the plane with his abilities!

A lot of the dials and buttons were broken!

But there was some that were good!

Zhang Ye reached out his index finger and immediately pressed a button on the panel. After that, he pressed another button no one knew. Following that, a hissing sound was heard. There seemed to have some changes in the internal parts of the plane, but yet it also seemed like nothing had happened. This information was obtained from the six experience skillbooks. His body also subconsciously made the moves. After doing so, Zhang Ye consciously thought and realized what the buttons did.

The fat air stewardess panicked, "What are you randomly pressing?"

The thin air stewardess panicked, "You, don't press randomly!"

Only the old air stewardess was experienced. She looked surprised as she exclaimed, "The cabin pressure has been relieved! It really has been relieved!"

Of course the pressure had to be relieved. After the scuffle, the cockpit was beyond recognition. There were sparks in the circuitry and with the high speed descension, not releasing the pressure would cause an internal explosion. So to prevent this, Zhang Ye ignored the surprised looks of others, and pressed a few buttons no one knew. Finally he pressed something!

The plane suddenly shook!

Its speed suddenly accelerated!

This was the plane's throttle. It was not pressed using one's foot but by using one's hand!

This bunch of cabin crew had tried all day to find the power button to no avail, but Zhang Ye had found it immediately.

The cabin crew were all holding their breaths as they watched with horror while Zhang Ye controlled the plane. They did not even breathe, This...This...

800m!

600m!

400m!

The plane was still moving downwards, but the propulsion power had reduced the declining speed. When the plane reached a dangerous altitude of 300m, where one could feel the sea waves by their hands, the plane suddenly reversed the trend and was pulled up by Zhang Ye!

“Get it up for me!” Zhang Ye shouted!

500m!

1000m!

1500m!

Moved away from the dangerous zone!

The plane flew back into the sky!

At that moment, everyone in the cockpit nearly went mad. Cheers from a few air stewardesses erupted. All of them hugged each other excitedly. There were tears of joy!

“We are flying up!”

“God! Am I dreaming?”

“We are fine! We are fine!”

The cabin crew youth was too excited, “Teacher Zhang! You really are the best! You really are the best!”

After that, a few air stewardesses looked at Zhang Ye in a different manner. What the heck! Did a spirit possess you!? You really can f**king fly a plane!?

Chapter 213: Bro, how do I get to Hong Qiao airport?

In the cabin.

Zhang Ye's voice was transmitted. "Please note that the plane is out of the danger zone. I repeat, the plane is out of the dangerous zone!"

"Ah?"

"Look out the window!"

"We can't see the sea anymore!"

"It has really flown up!"

"This voice. It's...it's Teacher Zhang Ye flying the plane?"

Dong Shanshan, who was using her phone to write her will, was dumbfounded upon hearing it!

The passengers erupted as they whined and howled with excitement. They could only express their hearts of joy, "We are saved! We are saved! Teacher Zhang is too awesome!"

He can write songs?

He can write novels?

He can be a radio host?

He can produce commercials?

He can write poetry, Buddhist verses and couplets?

He can write essays and create internet buzz phrases?

He knows kung fu?

He knows how to pick locks?

Now he even knows how to f**king fly a plane?

Hey! How multi-talented are you!?

The four year old girl was most excited, “Wah, Mom! Mom! Brother Superman is too great! Brother Superman has saved us all!”

.....

In the cockpit.

Zhang Ye heard the commotion from outside and almost got carried away. As he flew the plane, he waved to the people behind me. He said heroically, “All of you can go out. Leave it to me in here!”

The old air stewardess said worriedly, “Are you alright?”

“What a joke, who am I!?” Zhang Ye began bragging.

The cabin crew youth was already completely impressed by Teacher Zhang Ye, so he said, “We can’t help much, so let’s not distract Zhang Ye’s flying. The more people there are, the more chaotic it becomes!”

“Right!”

“Teacher Zhang, please!”

After that, the people from inside came out and entered the cabin.

Zhang Ye was the only person left in the cockpit as he began to hum a melody to soothe his tense emotions.

.....

Outside.

A few air stewardesses had found a place to sit down.

The fat air stewardess said with a sigh, “This Teacher Zhang sure is great.”

The old air stewardess said with some doubt, “Does he really know how to fly a plane?”

The old granny beside her suddenly said, “Oh I recalled something. Isn’t this young man the one who asked for an invoice in the airport halls? The staff gave

him his itinerary and he still said the invoice was false because there was no scratch-it! It's definitely him! He was wearing sunglasses just now. I was lining up just behind him!"

What?

Scratch-it?

The air stewardesses nearly planted their faces into the ground!

After recalling Zhang Ye's previous words of stepping on the gas and changing gears, they really began to feel that Teacher Zhang was not reliable. Fly a plane? He must have blindly pressed the power button just now! A few people looked at the cockpit with fright as their hearts began to beat furiously! What sort of person were they getting to fly the plane? A person who was flying for the first time! A person who wanted to have a scratch-it in his itinerary! A person who was talking about stepping on the gas and switching to gear five on a plane! This pure layman controlled all their lives?

The old granny exclaimed and added on, "But that guy was drunk just now, and was saying alcohol-induced words, so maybe...he..."

The cabin crew youth wiped his sweat, "I feel like I should go up ahead and take another look."

"I think so too." The old air stewardess and company rushed to the cockpit.

.....

The door opened.

People entered.

Zhang Ye turned back, "Why are all of you back in here?"

The thin air stewardess said in a panic, "Teacher Zhang, don't joke with us. Your hosting skills are admirable, and your literary skills is peerless, but this is a passenger plane. There are a 100 lives on this plane, are you sure you can handle it?"

Zhang Ye said confidently, "Of course."

The old air stewardess looked out the window, "Now where are we heading?"

Zhang Ye said without hesitation, “How would I know. We’ll just keep driving.”

“Ah?” The cabin crew youth was dumbfounded, “just keep driving? You don’t even know where you are heading and you dared to ask us to leave? Holy shit! I’ve seen bold people, but they were never that bold!” Previously when they saw Zhang Ye heroically pull up the plane, everyone felt reassured. Seeing him confidently ask them to leave, they thought this fellow was confident. Thankfully they had asked again, or they would not have known how they died!

“Isn’t this the instrument panel and the display screen?” The fat air stewardess said naively, “The air routes are fixed, so just follow the line and we will reach the airport!”

“Come, let everyone pitch in!” The old air stewardess said.

Zhang Ye glanced at them, “There’s no need for help. The critical thing is that two of the direction panels are broken. The same thing for the co-pilot’s side. It was all smashed during the scuffle!”

The cabin crew youth pointed and said, “Aren’t there a few dials here?”

Zhang Ye retorted and looked at him, “Do you know anything about them?”

“...No.” The cabin crew youth’s voice turned silent.

Zhang Ye nodded, “So everything has to rely on me. None of you can help.”

“You know?” The cabin crew youth’s eyes beamed with hope.

Zhang Ye said, “Of course. See that dial? Those numbers and the english alphabets beside it are...are...” After pausing for a while, he turned around to carry on controlling the plane, “Alright, actually I don’t know either!”

Air stewardesses, “...”

Cabin crew youth, “...”

Zhang Ye had originally thought that by eating the passenger plan experience books, he would be able to control the plane, but only now did he realize that he only knew tens of the hundreds of knobs and switches in the plane. A few of the display panels that he knew were broken, and he did not know the rest. Only then did he realize how complex flying a plane was. With the knowledge from his six experience books, he could be said to be a novice who had just one step in

the door. It was not enough. If not, why would pilots need to undergo years of training? Ah, he probably needed to eat tens of passenger plane skillbooks to catch up to professional pilots. The experience from six skillbooks was too little!

But what could he do?

He only had that little bit of experience, and could only use the existing conditions!

The old air stewardess' lips turned white, "The communications equipment are broken, and the instruments are damaged. With no way to determine our location, how are we to land?"

The fat air stewardess stayed calm and raised an idea, "Is there any open space nearby?"

The cabin crew youth scratched his head, "We don't even know where we are. There's no navigation at all. And there's no land. This flight path is either sea or city. You don't expect us to land in the city, right? Not only will our plane crash, we would cause more casualties. We need to find an airport!"

The fat air stewardess looked at her watch, "According to the time, we shouldn't be too far from Shanghai."

Another air stewardess from behind the old air stewardess said, "Keep trying to make contact with the ground. If we are near a city, maybe the cell phone signal will be stronger."

The air stewardess responded and tried to make a call again.

The old air stewardess carried on, "Who has a way to determine the locations of airports? Should we fly at a low altitude to search for a path? Is there enough gas?"

"There's still enough gas, but not by much."

"We can't fly in low altitudes. Hitting a bunch of birds can cause the plane to crash!"

"Is there an instruction manual? To see how the compass dial is used?"

The situation was urgent as everyone rushed to give an opinion. But all their ideas were very rigid and traditional.

Only Zhang Ye had an open mind. He noticed a shadow pass by him, and immediately bent his back, “Don’t say another word! Silence! I have a way!”

“What way?” Everyone looked over. But after the “steeping on the gas and shifting gears” and the “itinerary scratch-if” incidents, the cabin crew still remained skeptical with Teacher Zhang Ye’s words!

“Look!” Zhang Ye pointed to the front.

“See what?” The few of them immediately looked up.

The next second, the cabin crew saw a plane not far away. From the size, it was also a passenger plane. In the direction they were heading, they were on the same route as them. Shanghai was one of the top-ranked cities, so there were countless numbers of aircraft taking off and landing nearby. Because of the near-crash from before, their flight path had been messed up. So meeting another passenger plane was not rare!

Zhang Ye seemed to have found his savior and immediately turned on the emergency contact frequency. He did not care if the pilot of the other plane could hear him. The words he immediately said made people nearly vomit blood. They heard Zhang Ye say in an especially easygoing and casual manner, “Hey, bro. Can I get some directions. How do I get to Hong Qiao airport?”

That feeling was like asking some old man on the road casually, “Grandpa, how do I get to the train station? Head towards the east at the next junction? Thanks!”

But the other passenger plane did not respond. They did not manage to make contact at all.

The old air stewardess thought that if the pilot from that plane had heard those words, he would have vomited blood. Who the f**k has seen a plane ask another plane for directions!?

Chapter 214: You China Airlines are too much a bully

“Say something!”

“Bro!”

“Hey, the plane over there!”

“Do you f**king know the way to Hong Qiao airport?”

Zhang Ye was not resigned as he shouted a few times, however the communication did not work.

With Teacher Zhang’s ‘low-grade words’, the air stewardesses were completely speechless. But they still agreed with Teacher Zhang’s words!

The old air stewardess quickly gave her analysis, “If we did not go off-course when we were descending, then the planes from far away would be on the same flight path as us. They are most likely also heading towards Hong Qiao Airport! After all there aren’t many airports around here. The largest one is also Hong Qiao Airport! Typically any aircraft that are around here land and take off from there!”

Zhang Ye slapped his armrest, “That’s right! I just need to keep up with them and for them to lead the way! Then we can find the airport. Even if it’s not Hong Qiao Airport, as long as we can land, that’s all that matters!”

The cabin crew began discussing and felt that this idea was feasible. They could not care any further, as they all agreed to this proposal.

The fat air stewardess suddenly pointed ahead, “Aiyah, I can’t see that plane anymore!”

The clouds were too dense, and it was all dark underneath as there was haze!

This world's haze was not lesser than Zhang Ye's world. PM xx (particulate matter) were all frightening.

"Follow quickly!" The cabin crew youth was more anxious than Zhang Ye. He pointed in a direction, "That way, that way! Don't let them get away!"

There was only one person who could fly the plane. The old air stewardess looked at Zhang Ye and said, "Teacher Zhang, we are all depending on you!"

"Don't worry! They can't run away!" Zhang Ye accelerated the plane. Knowing that this was their lifeline, how could he let it go?

The clouds were dense and visibility was low.

If there was still radar, they could tell the location of the other passenger plane, but now with most of the display equipment smashed, they could not be used. They could only use their naked eyes to lock on. The visual range in the cockpit was very limited, and due to the angles, it was not easy to see!

"Where did it go?"

"Where is it? Where?"

"I see it! On the left!"

"They are reducing their altitude!"

"Teacher Zhang, quickly chase it On the left!"

A few air stewardesses chattered immediately.

Zhang Ye rolled up his sleeves and increased the driving force and chased, "Damn, to think you want to race cars with me? I won't lose to you!"

The cabin crew youth had nearly wanted to say countless times that this was not car driving but flying a plane, but he did not say a word.

.....

High altitude.

The passenger plane not far away.

This was a Hainan Airlines flight. It did not provoke anyone and was flying its course, but no one expected the radar to detect another China Airlines plane. It

was approaching their plane so the pilot sped up to maintain a safe distance away from the China Airlines plane.

The Hainan Airlines main pilot immediately transmitted, “This is Hainan Airlines 7781. Your route has deviated. I repeat, your route has deviated. Please immediately correct your route!”

No response.

The co-pilot said unhappily, “We can’t connect?”

The pilot frowned, “What the heck is that flight doing?”

The co-pilot guessed, “It must be manually operated and controlled by the co-pilot. There’s a 80% chance that he’s a pilot trainee. But even so, he shouldn’t be doing this.”

The pilot said, “It doesn’t seem like a pilot trainee. It can’t be that they don’t even turn on their communications, right?”

As the two of them were guessing, the co-pilot suddenly screamed and even cursed, “F**k your sister! Quickly dodge! They accelerated and chased after us!”

The pilot was also shocked that he was covered in cold sweat. As he cursed, he adjusted his height, “Who the f**k is flying that plane! Do you want to die!?”

Whew!

The China Airlines plane exceeded the speed of the Hainan Airlines plane and rushed to its side and was almost flying parallel to it. The distance between the two planes was only 100m! What did it mean by 100m? If two people were standing on a street, 100m was quite a distance. They could only see each other vaguely. But in the air, these were two passenger planes. 100m was not called a distance. It had the feeling of being shoulder to shoulder. One could use the two planes’ windows to see the expressions of the other side!

The China Airlines passengers were calm. After experiencing a hijack and having nearly crashed into the sea, all of them had made the necessary mental preparations. They had nearly died a few times, so this close distance flying was nothing more than just a fart. And they knew that the person flying their plane was once a television host, and he did literary works. F**k it, if that guy could fly

a passenger plane, it was not bad. They were already lucky, so they did not have much expectations!

But the Hainan Airlines passengers were not mentally prepared. Upon seeing this shocking scene, seeing the aircraft so near to them, the Hainan Airlines passengers nearly peed from the shock!

“Ah!”

“Holy shit!”

“Quickly get away!”

“A plane is colliding with us!”

“We are about to hit, we are about to hit!”

The Hainan Airlines plane was in a mess!

The Hainan Airlines air stewardesses were all frightened as their faces turned pale. As they were trying to maintain order while suppressing their fear, they made sure everyone wore their seatbelts and would not leave their seats. After that, they rushed to the pilots and asked, “What’s the matter! There’s a f**king retard beside us!” The person who said this was a quiet air stewardess. She had even received best conduct meritorious awards previously but one could tell that she was filled with emotion with her swearing. Anyone would curse if they encountered this!

The two pilots also wanted to know what was going on!

The co-pilot said angrily, “Do they even know how to fly!?”

The pilot did not hold a grudge, “Cut it out. Let’s dodge and slow down to let them pass. We got to cool down. Safety comes first!”

But when the Hainan Airlines plane lowered their speed and opened up a safety distance, another scene that made them curse happened. Although the Hainan Airlines plane had lowered its speed, the China Airlines plane behind them did not relent and kept close to them. When the Hainan Airlines plane raised five degrees, they would also raise five degrees. When the Hainan Airlines plane rose in altitude, the China Airlines plane also rose in altitude. The feeling was that of a weasel chasing after a chicken after catching sight of it!

No matter how cool headed the Hainan Airlines people were, they could not take it anymore!

F**k! I know you China Airlines are the best amongst the domestic airlines! But you can't f**king bully us like this!

The pilots immediately reported this matter to the Hong Qiao Airport command center on the ground, "Ground Control, Ground Control, this is Hainan Airlines 7781."

"Roger, this is Ground Control. Please speak." A female voice came.

The pilot was wishing he could smash something as he said, "There is a China Airlines plane that has deviated from its flight path. It has made provocative moves to us. It has been following our plane within the safety distance. Awaiting instructions from Ground Control!" He then described in detail without any swearing. But his tone expressed his crew's anger!

Ground Control said, "Which flight number is it?"

The pilot said, "Its label says CA1883."

After a pause in the communications with Ground Control, a middle-aged man's rapid voice was heard, "7781, this is Ground Control. We lost communications with the plane, CA1883 you mentioned 25 minutes ago. The last transmission we received from that flight was muffled sounds and smashing sounds. Preliminary suspicion is that the flight has encountered some sudden damage to the flight controls. According to your description, we believe that CA1883 has lost its ability to follow a flight path and we wish for you to lead the way!"

The pilot was stunned. Some sudden event had happened? Was it a hijacking?

"Repeat, please take responsibility to guide the plane. Please respond upon receiving this!" The middle-aged man said seriously.

The pilot's face turned serious, "Roger! We will lead the plane to the assigned location at Hong Qiao Airport! Please give us a new flight path!"

"Roger. We will begin implementing total traffic control. All priority will be given to both your planes. Please maintain a safety distance and keep in

constant communication!” The middle-aged man said nervously.

.....

On the China Airlines plane.

Seeing the Hainan Airlines plane not running away, Zhang Ye could not help but let out a laugh, “Competing your speed with me? Car racing with me? You guys are too inexperienced!”

Cabin crew members, “.....%&(&#@@!”

It was clearly you trying to get them to lead the way, when did it become car racing!

And...where the f**k did you get a car!

Chapter 215: Everyone's attention on the plane that lost communications!

Hong Qiao Airport.

Ground Control Command Center.

A few of the airport's leaders were sitting on pins and needles as they directed traffic control. A few of the leaders and administrators from China Airlines also rushed here upon realizing that they had lost communication with one of their planes. They had just arrived. The atmosphere was deary and suppressed. The voices of the operators rang out from the small hall as two planes that were about to land were not permitted to land. They were redirected to an airspace in the South. With complete control over the airspace by the airport, all planes were banned from taking off or landing. The runways had been opened up. Ambulances, fire engines and police had all taken up position!

Something had happened!

Something big had happened!

Their airport had gone without any mishap for years. This was the first time they had experienced such a serious loss of communication. No one expected it to happen today and everyone's faces were ugly!

The airport head held his breath as he tensely said, "How is it?"

An operator turned around and said, "We still can't get in contact with CA1883!"

Another operator said, "Hainan Airlines 7781 has entered Zone C. CA1883 is following closely behind. They are expected to arrive in Hong Qiao Airport airspace in about seven minutes!"

The airport head ordered, "Do not interrupt any communications. Make sure

to be kept abreast of the situation!”

It could be seen that everyone within the command center was nervous. It would be odd to not be nervous. This was a plane. Any inattentiveness would result in the plane crashing and the loss of lives!

At this moment, the city’s Public Security Department officials had arrived. After some exchanges to understand the situation, one said, “The city mayor is on the way here! We are mainly heeding your command! If there’s any need for us, feel free to tell us!”

Suddenly, an airport staff member’s phone rang. Everyone looked at him with a frown. The staff member wanted to cut off the call, as he did not dare pick up the call with so many leaders around. But upon seeing the number, he was shocked. He immediately picked it up, “Hello! Jun! What has happened to you? What is going on with you! Did something happen?”

“Wang...Director Wang!” The female voice was intermittent as the signal was unstable, “Thank Hea...vens! We finally managed to get through! Get...through!”

The staff immediately shouted to the rest, “It’s a flight attendant of CA1883!”

“Aiyah!” A staff slapped his leg.

“We finally managed to get in touch!” Another airport official said.

“Give me the phone!” The airport head charged forward and took the phone, “I’ll be the one in contact. What is the situation now?” Saying that, he pressed speaker mode button for everyone to listen.

The air stewardess was full of words. Upon hearing a familiar voice, she was so excited as she said and cried, “We don’t know what happened in the beginning, a thin... a person suddenly stabbed one of our flight attendants and then rushed into the cockpit. Later two of his accomplices blocked the cabin. We had been hijacked midway through our flight. Thankfully there was an expert amongst our passengers, and through the hard work of the flight crew and the passengers, we managed to restrain the hijacking terrorists. We managed to regain control of the cockpit, but, but many of the instruments inside were destroyed. There was no way to determine our flight path, nor was there autopilot. The pilot and co-pilot were seriously injured and are unconscious. Now, we are following a Hainan

Airlines plane, hoping to reach the airport!”

It was really a hijacking!

Everyone’s faces changed!

The airport head quickly said, “You handled it very well! The Hainan Airlines flight will be responsible in guiding you. We have already implemented complete air traffic control. All favorable conditions are provided for your landing. The Hainan Airlines plane will bring you to the airport!” Upon saying this, he suddenly felt something amiss. With a blink and a moment of thought, his body trembled, and suddenly said, “Wait! Wait first! You said the pilot and co-pilot were seriously injured and unconscious? And there’s no autopilot? Then...Then who is flying the plane?”

Right!

Who is flying the plane?

The command center people suddenly thought of this problem and were greatly shocked!

The air stewardess stuttered, “That...That...Currently, the person flying the plane is Beijing’s Teacher Zhang Ye!”

“Teacher Zhang Ye? Who is he?” The airport head said with a pleasant surprise, “A teacher from a Flight College? Or is it some retired passenger plane pilot?”

The air stewardess said, “No, Teacher Zhang Ye was...a television host.”

What?

Host!?

The command center suddenly turned into an uproar!

The airport head said angrily, “You let a television host fly a plane? What are you guys thinking!? This is a hundred lives!” If not for there being so many people, and with the public security administrators present, he would have jumped up and cursed. Is there a bun for your brain in your head? A bun!

Upon hearing this, the air stewardess felt a sense of helplessness. Just the way

Teacher Zhang Ye flew the plane and how he had the intention to “car race” the moment he hit the controls, did you think that they wanted to let Zhang Ye fly the plane!? The “car racing” scene with the Hainan Airlines plane had terrified many of them early on! But what could they do!?

“We...” The air stewardess said.

But all that was left was the sound of “Doo Doo”!

“Hello? Hello?” The airport head said loudly.

The line had been cut up. There was no signal although they tried calling again!

The airport head was in a panic as he shouted, “Get an additional 5 ambulances and fire engines! Hurry! If the airport doesn’t have enough, transfer them from surrounding areas!”

The China Airlines CEO was also in shock. A host, who was a complete layman was flying the plane? And the autopilot was broken? And it had to be manually operated? Their first reaction was “we’re doomed”! The chances of those people surviving was zero! This was a plane, not a motorbike! It was not something a layperson could handle!

.....

At the same time.

On the China Airlines plane.

The thin air stewardess rushed into the cockpit, “I’ve made contact with the ground!”

The old air stewardess turned around, “Where’s the phone? Let me speak!”

“The signal has been cut off. I have already reported our situation to the ground. The head has told us to follow the Hainan Airlines plane. The airport is in completely control over air traffic. Everyone is waiting for us!” The thin air stewardess saw a glimmer of hope, but seeing the extremely unreliable Zhang Ye, who was sitting in the pilot seat, all the hope she had disappeared!

The old air stewardess pointed out, “The Hainan Airlines plane is descending. Look, we can see the airport already!”

Zhang Ye had already felt the difference between flying a plane and driving a car. It was completely different. Your target was at most to travel the world with a car, but flying a plane gave Zhang Ye a feeling of “traversing the stars”. It was a great feeling. He took a deep breath, “Return to your seats and fasten your seat belts. The descent would be filled with tremors. You guys can’t stand here!”

The fat air stewardess’ eyes glistened with tears, “Can we really have a smooth landing?”

The cabin crew youth’s eyes turned gloomy as he bit his lips, “The takeoff and landing of a plane is the most difficult part, especially with it being manually controlled. Even a co-pilot who has a year’s experience might not do well. It requires many years of theory learning and practical experience...” After experiencing so much danger, what was left was the most critical descent, but he still felt the chances of survival was slim.

The old air stewardess looked at Zhang Ye and her gaze was filled with mixed emotions. “Our lives are in your hands. Young man, please!”

Zhang Ye said, “I’ll do my best.”

The old air stewardess hesitated, “If anything happens during the plane landing, this place is the most dangerous spot. There is almost no chance of survival. Are you sure!?”

The fat air stewardess echoed, “Right, if you don’t want to do so, we won’t say anything. Just telling us how to land would do. This was supposed to be the flight crew, our responsibility, and not a risk a passenger should undertake! If not... Should I do it!?”

The cabin crew youth also said, “If it’s anyone, it has to be me!”

Zhang Ye looked at them and said in an awe-inspiring but serious manner, “Don’t argue. How can my personal life be compared to everyone’s? Even though this spot is the most dangerous spot, I will risk my life to land it properly. To protect the lives of everyone, my personal life is not important!”

The cabin crew youth was infected by this and clenched his fist, “What you said is great!”

A few of the air stewardesses was impressed. Look at his morals! Look at his

style!

Previously, when they had transmitted to the cabin to calm everyone down, they forgot to switch off the transmission, so Zhang Ye's words reached both economy and business class!

Upon hearing Zhang Ye's words, the passengers were moved!

"Teacher Zhang..." A girl's eyes turned red!

"Kid! No matter if we come out alive or dead, we can only thank you!" An auntie shouted.

Another middle-aged woman also felt encouraged and shouted, "That's right! He's a celebrity and a host, yet he's risking death by sitting in the most dangerous place to fly the plane for us! What are we crying for? We must cheer up!"

"Right! Don't cry!"

"Everyone, let's pray together!"

"We must trust in Teacher Zhang!"

"That's right! We will surely land successfully! For sure!"

Everyone was inspired by Zhang Ye's magnanimous spirit. All of them renewed themselves with a strong desire to live!

The old air stewardess pinched Zhang Ye's shoulders and said, "You be careful yourself. If we are to survive, all the air stewardesses in our airline will become your brainless fans! Even if you were to release a car racing program! We would support it too!"

"...Why does it feel like you are scolding me?" Zhang Ye asked.

Suddenly, someone came in from outside. It was Dong Shanshan, "Zhang Ye!"

Zhang Ye looked at her and smiled miserably, "Hurry back and sit well."

Dong Shanshan hesitated before nodding slightly. "Be careful."

"Got it." Zhang Ye nudged his palm forward.

After that, all the cabin crew members returned to their cabin seats.

The moment the door closed, Zhang Ye was left alone in the cockpit.

Seeing that there was no one left, Zhang Ye began crying. Your sister, you guys really think I wished to stay here? If anyone of you f**king knew where the throttle was, I would not be f**king risking my life sitting here. I was left with no choice! If any of the two pilots could still move, I would be the one who would be running f**king faster than anyone of you! You think I really am a retard!?

Chapter 216: The Hair-raising Landing!

In the cockpit, the airport control tower could be seen in the distance!

Many fire engines and ambulances were on standby below!

It was obvious that everyone on the ground was paying attention to their plane!

In the plane, the old air stewardess looked out the window and began pursing her lips as she muttered, “Just the last step. Just one more step. Come on!”

The fat air stewardess had her eyes closed as she prayed and did not say a word.

The thin air stewardess and a few other passengers had their heads lowered as they wrote their wills. They were prepared for the worst!

The cabin crew youth who had been in fear all along no longer thought much. There was no meaning to it. The only person in the plane that could barely control the plane was Zhang Ye. He could only place all his hopes on Zhang Ye. He only wished that the Teacher Zhang who was shouting, “Step on the gas, switching to gear five” previously would not use a method like “Step on the brakes, pulling the handbrake” to land the plane. If not, they would really f**king die on this runway!

Compared to them, Zhang Ye was undergoing the greatest stress. He too was nervous. Don't you see this fellow's legs trembling? He had never encountered such a huge situation before. But now he was forced into this position with no turning back. He could only reduce the plane's speed as he cheered on himself!

How to cheer?

How to gain courage?

Singing! He began singing the song from his world, “[Let's meet at the next](#)

[juncture](#) “!

Why did he sing this song? Nonsense! What else could muster courage better than Brother Chun’s song!?

And Zhang Ye hoped that even if he were to sacrifice himself, he would have the opportunity to be resurrected in place in the future!

After taking a breath, Zhang Ye tried the landing gear. Seeing the landing gear symbol appear on his display screen, he heaved a sigh of relief. Thankfully, this button was not broken. The landing gear could be deployed. The only thing left for him was to lower the speed and find the longest runway to land. The planes of this time all had a blind drop system. It just needed to synchronize with the system to work, but firstly Zhang Ye did not know this. Secondly, many of the apparatus were broken. There was no way of controlling it so he had to use his naked eye and intuition to recognize and judge. Thankfully, the automatic procedure these days were advanced. For example, an A320 could maintain a level angle automatically under normal circumstances. Even the rudder was done through sensors, and did not need to be controlled by the cockpit. As such, the difficulty was greatly reduced for Zhang Ye!

Let’s land!

F**k it, who cares!

After circling twice in the air, Zhang Ye went all out. He switched on the cabin transmission, “Dear passengers, this will be the last transmission in this flight. Those who have not taken off your shoes, glasses or any sharp objects, please do so as soon as possible. We will attempt landing in 30 seconds. Wish us luck!”

Cease transmission!

He had arrived above the airport!

Zhang Ye superstitiously prayed to the heavens and with his eyes focused and without distraction, he lowered the plane’s nose in a determined manner!

The plane’s angle clearly did not look good. In fact, it could be said to be eye-shocking!

.....

On the ground.

Runway perimeter.

A portion of the ground control people remained in the tower while the rest all rushed out. Seeing the China Airlines plane overhead, they felt their hearts in their mouths. The leaders stared with rounded eyes as their bodies tensed up. All the firemen were on standby!

Below the control tower were about 20 beautiful air stewardesses.

“Everybody hold hands!”

“Right, let’s pray together!”

“They will definitely be alright, *sob*, definitely!”

“Jun, Sis Zhao, stay strong!”

The air stewardesses held hands and prayed for their sisters in the plane. Many of the airport staff covered their eyes and did not dare look!

It was descending!

The plane was coming down!

Could the plane land at such an angle?

A very experienced and retired pilot present screamed, “No good! This angle won’t work! The plane’s nose is too low! It will make contact with the ground!”

A few pilots also exclaimed, “The speed is too fast! It should be slowed down more! Otherwise, the buffer distance is not enough!”

“Ah!”

“What do we do?”

“We’re finished, we’re finished!”

“Jun and company are still on that plane!”

Seeing the plane about to crash, everyone screamed!

The passengers on the plane also saw the horror in the eyes of the ground crew. A few air stewardesses looked at each other with tears in their eyes. They understood that it was more ominous than propitious! It was not enough. They

had worked hard so many times, why did they still have to die!? People were very sensitive the moment before they died. Many things flashed past their minds as they felt how the Heavens were unfair! They were unwilling to submit to fate! They did not want to die!

The fat air stewardess shouted!

The old air stewardess covered her face and did not dare look!

The little girl who called Zhang Ye “Brother Superman” was curled up and shivering in fear!

About 200m off the ground, Zhang Ye felt that the angle of approach was not right. He did not intend for it to be so, but as he was descending, the plane had received great airflow resistance, so the fuselage deviated from his expectations. Besides, Zhang Ye had no prior experience. The nose was too low, and if this carried on, he did not know if the nose or the landing gear would first come into contact with the ground. Crisis was imminent!

This was the end?

Zhang Ye was flustered. He knew that it wouldn’t work if this carried on. There was not enough time left!

180m!

150m!

Suddenly, Zhang Ye used all his strength to pull on the controls. Get it up for me! Up! Just a bit! Just a tiny bit would do!

A thud!

The plane had come into contact with the ground!

This sound almost scared the wits out of Zhang Ye. The entire plane began to rumble without control as if it was to explode any second. Zhang Ye was so afraid that he closed his eyes. He waited for a second before he opened his eyes again. He realized that the cockpit was fine. The nose was fine too. He had pulled back the plane to a proper balance during the most critical landing process! This could really be described as a miracle. Only a person like Zhang Ye who was fearless and a pure layman could create this miracle. Because if an experienced

pilot were to encounter this situation, they would choose to increase the throttle and attempt landing again at a better angle. But that method did not work in this situation as they were too low. The plane could not be pulled back up, and would end up not being able to stop after accelerating!

However. Zhang Ye managed it!

It wasn't because he was awesome, but because he was purely a layman and by not having fear from ignorance. As the saying goes, "Fools are bold"!

But the greatest danger had not been eliminated!

The plane was heading straight across the runway. Clearly, he did not control the descending speed well. It was too fast, and the point of landing was not chosen properly. It was only midway of the runway, and the path was a bit slanted. The plane had longed gone off the normal pathway and was sliding diagonally into an open space. Just ahead was a passenger plane parked there and a terminal! Zhang Ye immediately reduced his speed!

Stop!

Please stop!

The plane's body began to shake causing Zhang Ye to feel dizzy from the tremor!

The passengers and flight crew were all screaming as they felt the moment of their death approaching!

This time both felt very short and very long. As if a century had passed when suddenly it became silent!

Zhang Ye, who had his eyes shut tightly, was the first to open his eyes. This was because he heard a system message:

[Countdown Complete. 10x Game Difficulty Adjustment has ended!]

.....

In the cabin.

It was complete silence before a few voices erupted!

"We aren't dead? Is this heaven?" The fat air stewardess rubbed her eyes!

“Look! Quickly, quickly look outside!” The thin air stewardess stuttered with excitement. She began screaming as if she was mad!

The fat air stewardess looked up as Dong Shanshan and the other passengers looked out the window. Heavens! It was the ground! The fire engines and ambulances were approaching them! It was the faces of pleasantly surprised rescue and airport personnel! And there were the familiar faces of their colleagues!

The plane had come to a stop!

They had landed in the airport!

“Oh my god!”

“We landed! We landed!”

“Someone pinch me! Am I dreaming?”

“We have come back to life! We are safe! Sob Sob Sob! We are safe!”

At this moment, whatever said was nonsense!

The cabin crew youth unfastened his seat belts with trembling hands. He nearly jumped out from his seat and threw up his hands into the air to yell for 10 seconds, “Ah Ah Ah Ah Ah!”

With his lead, the passengers quickly unfastened their seat belts. As they cried, they screamed!

The entire cabin was filled with screams and cheers! Everyone was dancing to express their joy! The entire plane was in a tumultuous uproar!

Chapter 217: The Applause for Teacher Zhang!

In the cockpit.

Hearing the jubilant uproar from the passengers, Zhang Ye looked straight ahead in a daze and then to the side. He was covered in sweat after having survived a disaster!

Seven meters!

He was just short of another seven meters before he would have hit that parked passenger plane!

This seven meters separated him from life and death. Zhang Ye once wondered if he had died himself, because from his angle, he could see if there were dead mosquitoes on the plane across him. It was that close. Zhang Ye had tried singing as a last resort hoping that the plane would stop before colliding. He never expected a miracle to happen. Zhang Ye's "Let's meet at the next juncture" was so powerful that it stopped the plane!

It was a divine song!

An absolute divine song!

His entire body went limp on the pilot's seat. He used his last bit of strength to release the safety and opened the airplane doors, facilitating the disembarkation of the passengers. He laid there motionless and rested his head. He didn't even know what he was feeling. He was terribly frightened! He had nearly died without a proper resting place! Amongst the thousands of phrases available, Zhang Ye only wanted to say one thing, that was: Brother Chun's song is so f**king useful. Don't speak about flying a plane in the future, just having Brother Chun's song will give me the courage to even f**king fly a carrier!

In the back cabin.

The airport staff in charge of the rescue quickly brought a dock ladder over. They connected the cabin doors and the rescue team was the first to rush in!

The old air stewardess interrupted the excited passengers and cabin crew, “We need to transport the wounded first.”

Right!

There were three heavily injured people on board the plane!

After sharing weal and woe, the passengers were extremely cohesive. No one said anything else, and helped the rescue team carry the wounded off the plane. There were even 5 burly passengers who pulled the 3 unconscious hijacking terrorists off the plane and passed them to the police.

After doing this, everyone disembarked the plane according to instructions.

Seeing the blue sky and white clouds and the familiar ground, many of those who did not shed a tear in the plane nearly wept!

It was great to be alive!

There were a lot of people rushing over!

“Jun!”

“Sis Guo!”

“You’ve scared us to death!”

More than 10 friends and colleagues had been long awaiting for their arrival so they rushed forward!

The fat and thin air stewardesses felt a lump in their throat as they hugged their sisters before they cried!

Even the most calm and composed old air stewardess dropped a few tears from the excitement of seeing her familiar sisters!

The airport’s leaders and China Airlines’ leaders walked over. Seeing the plane’s risky landing angle, and having heard all the experienced professional pilots’ analysis, they never expected the plane to land safe and sound. They were extremely excited and a middle-aged man came forward and said loudly, “Comrades! You did well! You did extremely well! Facing such an emergency and

not lose your calm. Being able to suppress the pressure at the critical moment. Minimizing economic and human loss, our China Airlines are extremely proud of you heroes. Thank you for your hard work! Thank you for your hard work!”

“Thank you leader!”

“It was necessary!”

“It was not hard work at all!”

They really did not find it hard, because they had done nothing once the hijacking occurred!

The China Airlines’ leader smiled. “Don’t be modest. We will definitely compliment and award you when we return!”

The old air stewardess immediately said, “Leader, we really did not do anything. This was mainly due to one of our passenger’s help.” She looked at the plane’s hatch. That person had not disembarked. Truthfully, in response to this incident, they as cabin crew really lacked the composure and experience needed to deal with it. They had panicked themselves, and if not for Teacher Zhang Ye volunteering to risk his life, the outcome would have been unimaginable!

“Passenger? Which passenger?” A few leaders asked.

“He is still on the plane.” The old air stewardess said.

“Let’s go, let’s talk only when we get back. There are still a lot of things to do here. The air traffic control needs to be halted too. We can’t stay on the runway.” An airport administrator said.

The leaders immediately led their staff to help and evacuate the passengers, allowing the heroic cabin crew’s air stewardesses to quickly rest. But the air stewardesses did not leave. The passengers also did not leave. They were all looking firmly at the plane hatch. All of them were waiting for one person.

For some unknown reason, the entire scene fell into silence.

.....

In the cabin.

Zhang Ye was the last person remaining on the plane. After he recovered from

his nearly-collapsed state, he unbuckled his seatbelt and his earpiece before pushing the door to the cockpit. He did not alight from the plane but the first thing he did was to clasp his legs while he ran to the lavatory to settle a problem. The huge ups and downs in the crisis had nearly made him pee himself. He had that feeling once again.

Whew.

His body was lightened.

Only then did Zhang Ye begin walking to the hatch. But at the moment he stood there, he stopped. He was surprised to see the packed crowd below!

“He’s out!”

“It’s Teacher Zhang!”

“Teacher Zhang is coming down!”

Everyone was looking at him. What was this?

One second.

Two seconds.

Suddenly, Dong Shanshan began clapping!

It was followed by a second person, a tenth person and the hundredth person!

The other airport and China Airlines personnel stared with uncomprehending looks at Zhang Ye!

The applause was tumultuous. Everyone was clapping for Zhang Ye. The hundred claps could even drown the noise of the airport. It was like an explosive scene in a live concert!

“Great!”

“You are too awesome!”

“If not for you, we would not have survived!”

“If you are buying a house in the future, look for me! I’ll give you a 20% discount!”

“Teacher little Zhang, when you are free, come to Granny’s place for a meal!”

“Brother Superman, thank you!” The little girl with a childish tone.

Zhang Ye felt flattered as he walked down, “You’re welcome everybody. You’re welcome. I didn’t do anything!”

When he reached the ground, the fat air stewardess took the initiative to step forward, “You saved the lives of everyone on board, how can you say that you didn’t do anything? We really do not know how to thank you, yes.” Saying that the fat air stewardess suddenly kissed Zhang Ye on the cheek, “You were too cool today!”

Zhang Ye nearly choked.

The thin air stewardess did not hold back and shyly kissed Zhang Ye on the other cheek.

The old air stewardess laughed and walked over, giving Zhang Ye a kiss on the forehead, “If this elder sister wasn’t married, I would have gone with you!”

With a face full of lipstick marks, Zhang Ye felt his face go warm, “Ahem, about that...”

“Woo!” Many people shouted again.

Another round of applause rang for Zhang Ye once again! This was what he deserved!

Everyone was sincere in their gratitude. They all knew that without him, they would never have the chance to stand here. He was definitely their savior!

The airport leaders and the surrounding staff looked at Zhang Ye with surprise. This was the person who landed the plane by himself, saving everyone’s lives? He was so young? The person who flew the plane was really a radio host? Even when they saw him in person, they still could not believe it!

.....

On another runway!

The Hainan Airlines plane that was responsible to lead the way landed. The moment the plane stopped, two pilots and a few air stewardesses rushed over angrily!

The old air stewardess looked at them, “Oh? Brother Zhao? It was your plane?”

Although they were not from the same company, they often met, so everyone knew each other. The other Hainan Airlines pilots looked at the old air stewardess, “It was your plane?”

The old air stewardess laughed, “Yes, thank you to all of you.”

The co-pilot did not care and was in rage, “Do you only know to thank us? An emergency situation happened with your plane, so we wouldn’t say anything about it. It was inevitable, but we were f**king guiding you, and even gave you a signal, why did you stick so close to us! Do you know how dangerous that was? Numerous passengers on our plane cried due to the fright! Who was the one flying the plane!? Was it old Zhou? Get him out here! I definitely need to say something to him! This, this was absolutely bullying!”

The fat air stewardess answered, “Brother Zhou is seriously injured and has been taken away by the ambulance!”

The Hainan Airlines pilot was shocked, “Then was it flown by the co-pilot? But even a co-pilot wouldn’t have such poor techniques. How can you bite at our plane’s ass so closely! Do you think you guys were car racing!?”

The fat air stewardess said, “The co-pilot is also seriously injured.”

“The person flying the plane...” The old air stewardess pointed in Zhang Ye’s direction, “was Teacher Zhang Ye, a famous radio host from Beijing.”

The Hainan Airlines pilot scoffed, “Come on, who are you bluffing. Are you pushing the blame all onto a layperson? We don’t really want anything, but want to mention that this matter was too dangerous!”

The thin air stewardess was at a loss on whether to laugh or cry, “But it really was Teacher Zhang flying the plane.”

Seeing all of them looking as if it was only right and proper, the Hainan Airlines pilot and flight attendants were dumbfounded, “Ah? Was it flown by autopilot?”

The China Airlines cabin crew youth said, “It was manually operated!”

The Hainan Airlines people looked at each other and went silent!

F**k! A layman can f**king fly the plane and land? No wonder! No wonder when they were leading the way, they felt that the plane was chasing them without following any flying codes, and it felt like it was driven like a car!

“What is the matter” The airport leader came over. He had only received a general overview of the situation and was lacking in detailed information!

The Public Security department people came. They needed to investigate it thoroughly.

“I’ll give the details.” As they walked towards the terminal, the old air stewardess narrated to the leaders and the Public Security officials, “After the hijacking, one of the criminals was in control of the cockpit and the other two criminals were blocking the door outside. They were Muay Thai experts. About ten strong passengers went up but were all defeated by them. The passengers were not their match at all. They even wanted to kill later on...”

The China Airlines leader gasped, “Then how did you...”

The old air stewardess said appreciatively, “It was Teacher Zhang Ye who blocked them. Later the cockpit was locked, and it was Teacher Zhang Ye who used a tool to pry it open. Later he flew the plane and landed us!”

Zhang Ye?

Everything was done for Zhang Ye!

He was that powerful? What the heck! How much stimulants were injected into you!?

Chapter 218: The Kissing Bet with the School Belle!

At night.

At 7PM, Zhang Ye was finally leaving the airport.

The moment he stepped out, a group of reporters, an estimated 40 to 50 of them and another 7 to 8 holding cameras, surrounded him. It was as if the whole of Shanghai's newspaper agencies and television stations had gathered here. Zhang Ye was blinded by multiple bursts of camera flashes. He could not see clearly what was in front of him as the reporters took photos and asked questions one after another!

"Teacher Zhang Ye!"

"I'm from Shanghai Daily News!"

"Please tell us about how you felt during the hijack!"

"I'm from Shanghai Television Station, please accept our interview!"

"We heard that you were the one who landed the aircraft at the airport, saving hundreds of lives. How did you do it?"

"As a radio host, how did you learn to fly an aircraft? And it's even a commercial airliner? Did you receive some sort of special training before?"

Zhang Ye had nothing to say.

How could he explain? He couldn't possibly tell them Shandong Lanxiang Vocational School?

Zhang Ye said vaguely, "I do not know how to fly an aircraft. It was just coincidental meddling. The two pilots were injured badly and unconscious. The autopilot was also damaged. I was forced by the circumstances. To land the

plane hugely depended on luck!”

“But you increased the throttle of the plane?”

“.....A wild guess.”

“You also put down the landing gears?”

“.....A wild guess.”

“And you decreased the speed while landing too?”

“.....A wild guess.”

The reporters went: “%\$\$###@@#(%#@!!!”

Guess your sister! How could everything be a wild guess! How could such things even be blindly matched? The stewardesses and those who worked on the plane didn’t even know what the buttons were for or how to fly the plane, they were all blindly trying and failing. But yet, you, a host from Beijing, could make wild guesses and fly it successfully? Just randomly switching on a button and you could decrease the speed? Just randomly pushing a button and the landing gears came down? What the heck! Why don’t you say that those buttons were voice activated instead! We would be stupid to believe you!

The reporters surrounded him and did not let him leave.

But faced with such a situation, Zhang Ye did not panic like the other passengers who had been interviewed earlier. He had after all seen it all before in television work. Besides, he was also a hooligan who had made trouble during a live broadcast before, so how would he be overwhelmed by these reporters? No matter what they asked, Zhang Ye only said — Wild guess, I had a lot of luck!

You don’t believe?

So be it!

Even if you don’t believe, it was all still due to wild guesses!

In the end, the reporters could do nothing about Zhang Ye. They were all in the media line so they understood that such a person were the hardest to deal with. They knew him like they knew themselves, they could not fool anyone!

In front, a van stopped.

The door opened and a driver said, "Teacher Zhang, please get in. I am with the airport crew. The leader would like us to send you to the hotel."

"Zhang Ye answered, "I will go by myself, you don't need to be troubled."

The driver said, "How can we do that. The hotel has been booked and there will be a celebration party tonight. We would like to invite you as you are the star today, you can't be absent."

"Then....alright." Zhang Ye went into the van.

The van moved off. Zhang Ye saw 3 or 4 people inside around him. They looked familiar, probably the passengers from the plane. Dong Shanshan was there too.

"Teacher Zhang."

"Brother Zhang."

The few passengers greeted him courteously.

Dong Shanshan played with her sexy curled up hair smiling, "Yo."

To make up for the psychological stress of the passengers and also to thank them for sticking together and prevent a tragedy, the airline had booked a hotel and arranged for a majority of the passengers willing to join the celebrations. Only those who had urgent matters to attend did not participate.

"Classmate Zhang." Dong Shanshan said with a sigh, "It's been about 2 years since we met, but you really made me change my view of you. Just how talented are you?"

Zhang Ye still answered the same, "I was just lucky today. I guessed my way through."

A teen asked curiously, "You two know each other?"

Zhang Ye smiled. "We were in a same class in college."

"Oh, that's how it is. I am a fan of Teacher Dong and a local bred Shanxi guy. Teacher Zhang, you were from Media College too? Hehe, looks like I should choose to apply to the Media College too when I take my college entrance exams. That's a place where I can make good of my life." He joked. The teen gave up his seat without being asked to, "Here, let me change seats. Teacher Dong,

you sit with Teacher Zhang.”

“Alright, thank you.” Dong Shanshan then sat over.

When the school belle sat down, 2 slender legs were put in front of Zhang Ye’s eyes. They stuck beside his own leg as the space in the van was rather small and crowded.

Zhang Ye subconsciously took a look at her legs.

Dong Shanshan stared at him, whispering, “What are you looking at?”

“I’m sorry.” Zhang Ye said apologetically.

“Why so serious?” Dong Shanshan smiled. “You saved my life, it’s no big deal if you took a look. It’s great to be alive.”

Zhang Ye suddenly remembered. He blinked and leaned over whispering, “Oh right, we made a bet when we were on the plane. You said that if everyone survived the hijack, you would....”

Dong Shanshan looked at him, “Ah? Did I say anything?”

Zhang Ye nearly fainted, “This sounds like the precursors of you trying to back out!”

“Haha, I don’t really remember much.” Dong Shanshan’s big eyes shyly avoided him.

Zhang Ye was at a loss for words. He did not expect the school belle to have such an unreliable side to her, he was at a loss whether to laugh or cry. But the bet they made on the plane was something that Zhang Ye had suggested to boost his confidence and fighting motivation. He had no other thoughts about it, so he did not take it too seriously either.

.....

They reached the hotel.

Once Zhang Ye got off the van, a number of stewardesses came rushing forward. There were plump stewardesses, slim stewardesses, old stewardesses and 7 to 8 stewardesses he did not know. They were all waiting here to begin the celebration party.

“Teacher Zhang is here!”

“Let me get your luggage for you!”

“I’ll take it for you, I’ll take it for you!”

“Give one to me, I’m stronger!”

The few stewardesses were suddenly fighting to carry his luggage. In a moment, all of Zhang Ye’s luggage were taken away upstairs. They did not give Zhang Ye a chance to reject their help.

Zhang Ye smiled bitterly, “Let me do it instead. I’m a man, how can I let our female comrades carry the heavy stuff.”

The stewardesses did not care but laughed happily as they brought the luggage upstairs.

Seeing that, Zhang Ye walked back to Dong Shanshan to help her with her luggage, “Give yours to me.”

Dong Shanshan did not reject her old classmate but wiped off her sweat and passed it to him, “Then thanks a lot.”

The other passengers did not get the same treatment from the stewardesses but they did not complain. They had expected this as Teacher Zhang had single-handedly saved all of them. It would be wrong if he was not treated like this. He was the biggest hero!

.....

12th floor.

Their belongings were brought up here.

The old stewardess turned around smiling, “Teacher Zhang, your luggage is in your room already. The dinner will be held at the big hall afterwards, so remember to join us.” Actually, this was not exactly a celebration party but just an event to express their gratitude to the passengers. Since the pilots and one of their security air crew are still be in the hospital having an operation, the airport authorities felt it was not right to have a celebration right now as they are waiting for the employees to be out of danger.

Zhang Ye said, "Sure."

"Let's go." the few stewardesses headed downstairs.

Only Zhang Ye and Dong Shanshan were left behind now.

Zhang Ye turned his head and asked, "Which room does your card go to?"

Dong Shanshan looked at the room card the staff gave to her earlier and looked around, "Over there, the third room from yours. It's quite near."

"Let's go, I will help bring these in for you." Zhang Ye pulled her luggage over.

Dong Shanshan opened the door with the card. The first thing she did when she entered was to bend down and take off her high heels.

"Where should I put them?" Zhang Ye asked.

"Wherever." Dong Shanshan went to look for a pair of hotel slippers.

Zhang Ye brought in a big and a small luggage and placed them by the side of the bedside drawers.

This was a business class room. It was neither small nor big. Dong Shanshan changed into her slippers and sat down on the bed, "What a scary day! I think I've never experienced anything more thrilling than this. We nearly did not survive." She looked towards Zhang Ye as she was speaking, "China Airlines would definitely give out rewards to those who contributed to the safe recovery of the plane, that would include you for sure. Don't forget to give me a treat!"

"Sure," Zhang Ye said easily, "Then I'm leaving?"

He knew that Dong Shanshan needed a bath to clean up her legs and her shoes. He was well aware of that.

Dong Shanshan laughed, "Come over here, I've got something to tell you."

Go over? Zhang Ye looked at her confused. He took two steps to the bedside and put his head towards her, "What's the matter?"

But before he could finish speaking!

A pair of hot and wet lips belonging to Dong Shanshan had without prior warning, planted a kiss on Zhang Ye's lips.

Zhang Ye was dazed.

After a second, their lips separated.

Dong Shanshan awkwardly stroked the hair on her temples, “There, I’ve given you your kiss, you can go be happy now. Hai, next time I won’t make any bets.”

A Kiss?

That was your kiss?

Zhang Ye woodenly stood there. Actually this guy had never actually kissed a girl on her lips before, feeling the remnants of Dong Shanshan’s satiny lipstick and moist saliva, Zhang Ye swallowed a mouthful of saliva. Immediately he felt his spirit became clear, his qi felt comfortable and the days exhaustion totally disappeared.

It tasted sweet.

The feeling of her lips was too good.

“I’m sorry.” After the blessed feeling had passed, Zhang Ye felt some pressure. “If I had known earlier you would really kiss me, I wouldn’t have let you... Hai, it was just a bet made on a whim and didn’t really matter, you...”

Dong Shanshan laughed gently, “I said it was a kiss and you just believed me?”

Zhang Ye hiccupped, “So it wasn’t?”

“Why would it not be? That’s exactly it.” said Dong Shanshan

Zhang Ye wiped his sweat, “Then what were you asking, saying it was a kiss and I just believed you?”

Dong Shanshan chuckled: I was just casually asking, otherwise you can take a guess?”

Zhang Ye attached a great importance to this question, because the significance of the kiss was really different. “Can you not beat around the bush? Was it or was it not, tell me the truth.”

Dong Shanshan giggled again, “Go take a guess yourself, I’m going to take a bath already, help yourself out.”

Seeing her affix her gaze on him, Zhang Ye could only laugh bitterly and leave.

After the door was closed, this question continued to hover within his heart. This Dong Shanshan ah, back in school he had not much contact with her at all, nor did they speak much. Right now it looks like this Media College number one school belle had nary a straight word to say, unexpectedly her personality matched her style of dress - half hidden and hard to tell if it was real or a sham.

However after returning to his own hotel room, Zhang Ye stopped thinking blindly about it. Who cares what kind of kiss it was, after all it was still a kiss.

There was saliva?

Would it count as a French kiss?

Pondering over it, Zhang Ye's felt his blood was awfully hot and galloping around his bodu, the effort he had expended on this afternoon's flight was not wasted at all! His desperate struggle was worth it, back in school, this was after all the great school belle! In College nearly all of the males were infatuated and chasing after this number one school belle, how many wild animals were wildly chasing after Dong Shanshan yet were all payed no attention to, an innumerable number of these wild animals could only think of kissing that fragrant lustre, but it would forever only be a delusion.

However on this day, Zhang Ye had inadvertently kissed her.

What's more Dong Shanshan had taken the initiative, and on top of that her lips were moist!

If Zhang Ye spoke of this matter to his old schoolmates, they would definitely not believe him. At that time in Media College, among her peers Dong Shanshan was the moon among the stars! Whereas Zhang Ye? In class he was inconspicuous, common and ordinary. Don't even mention finding him in a crowd, even if he was alone in the middle of a sports field and shouting, nobody would even look or pay attention to him. But now, he had managed to get a kiss from Dong Shanshan, if his peers from school found out about this most likely Zhang Ye would be disposed of into eight different chunks, he would definitely be envied to death.

Translators' Notes: There were scenes redacted after this that goes into detail about the kiss. However, our principle is to translate whatever is accessible from the official Qidian raws and not use deleted text available from pirated sources.

Someone has translate it, and can be [accessed here](#) if you really want to.

Translators' Notes: Thanks to all sponsors for yesterday. With the sponsorship limit back, we are doing up to 14 chapters a week for now. Thanks again!

Chapter 219: On Central TV News!

Zhang Ye's room was also business class. But it had an extra word, business class suite. It came with a kitchen attached to the living room. The bathroom and the bedroom were inside. This was one of the few rooms which were located at the furthest ends of the building. It was better than the other rooms. One look and he knew that he had received preferential treatment. Zhang Ye was not surprised. He went to take a shower before coming out to switch on the TV.

It was 7:20PM.

At this time, almost all of the satellite channels were showing Central TV's News Simulcast.

When the TV screen came on, it was showing Shanghai satellite channel. Central TV's news was being broadcasted. Zhang Ye had wanted to change the channel but decided to keep watching anyway.

The hosts were a man and a woman, they were both old anchors.

The male anchor reported: "A chemical factory incident left 2 dead and 8 injured."

The female anchor reported: "The relevant authorities are already looking into the cause of this incident."

"Next, we have a news flash." The male anchor was probably looking at the teleprompter. A news flash was very common on many news channels, but on Central TV's News Simulcast it was a rare occurrence. Because it was a live broadcast with prescheduled news reports, time was very tight. News programs were very properly timed and scheduled as there were other programs after it, so even a second of delay was not tolerated. Unless it was something of importance, a news flash would never occur on the 7 PM news of Central TV.

"At 4 PM today afternoon, flight CA1883 from Beijing to Shanghai was

hijacked by three hijackers. The incident caused severe injuries to three people and slight injuries to eight. The three hijackers are already in police custody and the incident is currently under investigations.”

The female anchor reported: “According to sources, when the hijackers seized control of the aircraft, the situation was already very dangerous. A broadcasting host stood forward and led the passengers to seize control back from the hijackers. It was again him who then piloted the plane when the pilot and co-pilot were critically injured. With no one to control the aircraft and heavy damages in the cockpit, he took the pilot’s seat without caring for his life and safely landed it at Shanghai Hong Qiao Airport. He saved almost 100 lives. As fellow hosts, we would like to just say — Teacher Zhang Ye, good on you!”

Central TV’s news program were now much more open. The hosts were no longer too rigid, sticking to the script. Some words could be spoken freely by the hosts.

He was on the news?

This bro has gotten onto Central TV news?

After watching the broadcast of News Simulcast, Zhang Ye was still finding it unreal. He had fantasized multiple times of himself appearing on Central TV news before, like holding a concert tour around the world or a movie that he acted as a lead in breaking a few billion Yuan at the box office. But he never expected that he would appear on Central TV news in this way.

What a great feeling!

This was Central TV’s 7 PM news, News Simulcast!

It was not necessary to speak of the ratings. This was an enforced broadcast on all local and satellite television. The number of people watching would definitely be a lot. It was not a number that an Arts Channel in Beijing could compare to!

He was once again famous!

His fame would definitely go to the next level!

Ring, ring, ring. The phone that Zhang Ye had thrown onto the bed when he

first entered the room was ringing. He picked it up and saw on the display the number of his landlady's apartment.

"Hello?" Zhang Ye answered.

But it was Little Chenchen's deep voice on the other side, "Zhang Ye, you are on the news."

Zhang Ye laughed, "I know, I saw it. How was it, Uncle is great right? Did your Big Aunt ask you to call me? Ask her to answer the phone."

"Big Aunt...." Chenchen shouted.

"Did it get through? Give it to me." Rao Aimin's voice was getting nearer.

Zhang Ye said, "Landlady Auntie, I'm alright. Please don't worry."

Rao Aimin said, "When did you learn how to fly a plane?"

"Hai, this bro was self-taught. I flew it blindly," Zhang Ye answered laughingly.

"What kind of people were the hijackers?" Rao Aimin asked.

Zhang Ye became a little more serious, "I don't know, but I could tell from their accent that they were definitely Chinese citizens. But they fought with Muay Thai moves, they were rather good."

"Are you hurt?" Rao Aimin asked.

"Me? Hurt? You must be joking. With my kung fu, how can any Tom, Dick or Harry hurt me? I put them in their place with just a few punches and kicks!" Zhang Ye boasted. Actually, it had been a really close call. He was unable to to match the two of them in the fight. If the passengers did not help him, then Zhang Ye might have died there. But of course he would not say the truth to Big Sis Rao, otherwise how could he show his heroics to her?

After a short conversation, they hung up.

Shortly after, he got a call from his home.

"Son! What happened? Were you the person News Simulcast was reporting about? The name was Zhang Ye and a broadcast host flying from Beijing to Shanghai...." His mother asked anxiously.

Zhang Ye laughed, "Mum, it's me but I'm fine."

“Do you want to scare me and your dad!” His mother said angrily.

“I didn’t have a choice, I was unlucky to have met such an incident.” Zhang Ye was not actually unlucky. Rather, the game difficulty had been adjusted by the dice roll.

His mother said, “But that doesn’t mean you should fly the plane!”

“If I didn’t, no one would be able to do it. Neither did any one else know how. I had to do it.” Zhang Ye laughed bitterly.

His mother scolded, “Only you can? Had to do a fart! You were a broadcasting major! What do you know about flying a plane!”

“Who do you think I am? There’s nothing your son doesn’t know and wasn’t this good luck? I am fine anyway, tell dad not to worry.”

“How can I not worry?”

“That’s all for now, the airport and airline’s staff are asking me to go for dinner.”

He hung up as he did not want to hear his mother nagging at him. But the calls kept coming. His old colleagues, old friends and relatives all called him, probably because they watched the news.

.....

“Aiyo, Little Ye. Are you alright?”

“Big Uncle, I’m alright.”

.....

“Teacher Zhang, why are you getting into trouble again?”

“Xiao Lu, look at what you’re saying. What do you mean I’m creating trouble. It was the criminals who caused the trouble!”

.....

He received more than a dozen calls in a short period of time.

Zhang Ye explained until his mouth turned sore. After hanging up the last call, he took the mineral water on the table and drank it all in one gulp.

Ding dong, the doorbell rang.

Zhang Ye opened the door to see Dong Shanshan standing outside.

Dong Shanshan had obviously showered and changed into a new dress. It was a one-piece dress, fully white matched with a white pair of stilettos. Her dress was the very low cut type and it felt like her big bosoms were going to pop out at any moment. She had a deep cleavage and her dress was pretty short as it hugged her butt tightly. It was as if she would almost have a wardrobe malfunction, but didn't. It left him wanting!

Dong Shanshan said, "Did you watch the news?"

"Yes, I just watched it." Zhang Ye said.

Dong Shanshan glanced at him, "This time you will be promoted into the D-List celebrity rankings without a problem."

Zhang Ye blinked, "That's not possible, I think I am still a little short of that."

Dong Shanshan laughed, "With this incident, you won't be short of that at all. If you don't believe, go and check the Celebrity Rankings tonight or tomorrow morning. You're good! We've just graduated a few months ago and you are already a D-List celebrity. Your fame is shooting up like a rocket!"

Zhang Ye waved it off, "Alright, even if you praise me so much, I still wouldn't be able to afford a meal for you. I am worse off than you. You are pretty and have a good figure. Even if you don't do hosting, you can go into movies or television serials without a hitch. You can easily become famous but not me. This bro's looks doesn't even qualify me to be a main lead, have you ever seen a lead without a pretty face? Even if they were ugly, they were ugly with the right features. So if I wanted to continue on in the entertainment industry, it would be harder to survive in it than you. Since I don't have anything, I will need to slowly find a style of my own."

Dong Shanshan glanced at him, "You have talent."

Zhang Ye thought for a while, "That's true, I won't deny that."

Dong Shanshan managed a laugh, "You really are not humble at all."

Her earlier makeup had been removed but she did another round of makeup to

match her current dress. Her lipstick color was the glittering type and made her lips look tender and wet. It matched her short white one piece dress very well. It made Zhang Ye, who shared a kiss with her earlier on wanted to give her a playful bite on her lips again. The school belle's charms did not fade since her school days, but instead it became more intense and more matured like her career and age. Her charm had totally gone through the roof, it felt like every part of her was more alluring than the other. Even the nail glitter was bursting with charm!

"Let's go." Dong Shanshan tilted her head towards the direction of the lift, "The event is going to start soon."

"Sure." Zhang Ye walked into the lift with her saying, "Let's exchange numbers and keep in contact."

"Oh right, I don't have your number yet." Dong Shanshan took out her cellphone and exchanged numbers with him. Just as they were done, her phone rang.

Dong Shanshan was not bothered by Zhang Ye's presence and answered it in the lift, "Hello....yes, it's me....OK, I've already arrived in Shanghai....yes, it was that flight... I'm fine, why would I blame you? You would not have known when you were booking the tickets....Alright, I will go report tomorrow...Yes. We can discuss about the contract tomorrow...alright, I will hang up now."

Zhang Ye asked, "You are going to the drama crew already?"

Dong Shanshan smiled. "It's a hosting job."

"Zhang Ye was stunned, "Eh, you are a host too? Didn't you say that you came to Shanghai to shoot a drama?"

Dong Shanshan looked at him confused with her big and sexy eyes, "Did I say that?"

"Yes, you did." Zhang Ye was now staring at her in disbelief, "You said it yourself on the plane?"

"Really? Alright, hur hur, then I'm going to report to the drama crew, I made a mistake." Dong Shanshan changed her words once more.

Zhang Ye nearly fainted, “Hey, hey, you just said you were going to be a host just three seconds ago. How could your job change twice. Do you even speak the truth from your mouth? We have been classmates for so long, do you need to hide it from me?” Saying this, he remembered the kiss from earlier again. Just before the lift doors opened, he whispered, “And was that really your first kiss just now?”

Dong Shanshan smiled with her eyes and put her face close to Zhang Ye’s ears, saying to him in a soft whisper, “Guess, but even if you guess correctly, you won’t get a prize.”

Her breath flowed into Zhang Ye’s ears silkily. It tickled him and as he looked over at her once more, Dong Shanshan had already started walking out of the lift.

Zhang Ye could only follow as he shook his head in annoyance.

This school belle, I really wonder which words of hers were truthful!

During their university days, the reputation of Dong Shanshan, who was the school belle, was not too good. In class or in the faculty or even in the university itself, those who liked her really liked her deeply. But those who hated her wanted to spit at her whenever they saw her. Back then, Zhang Ye could not understand why they had such criticisms of Dong Shanshan, but he probably could understand now. Classmate Dong’s mouth really ticked people off. Sometimes she was sincere and sometimes she was fake. After listening to her for a whole day, you would not know which of her words were true. So how could her reputation be good!?

Chapter 220: Most Raffish Host in History!

The dinner ended at 9PM.

The guests included the leaders, stewardesses and the plane passengers.

These days, it's all about being thrifty, so the dinner was not as extravagant as expected. The alcohol was not expensive. They served a rather well known wine called "Shikumen", which was a type of rice wine. There was a similar brand of rice wine back in Zhang Ye's previous world, he remembered that a classmate from Shanghai had brought this for them to drink during their university days.

"Here, let's have a toast."

"I represent China Airlines Headquarters and thank everyone."

"Teacher Zhang Ye, drink up. You cannot refuse!"

"Teacher Dong Shanshan, I've seen your programs on the internet. They are really good, cheers!"

Zhang Ye could no longer take another drink. He already had a few rounds earlier in the afternoon before the flight with the crew members of "The Great Pugilistic World". But with the everyone being so passionate and the China Airlines leader and those passengers he saved toasting him, Zhang Ye could not refuse them.

"I can't hold my drink well." Zhang Ye said beforehand.

"It's alright." The China Airlines leader said, "Haha, we will not drink past the limits."

And so Zhang Ye stood up and drank with them. Rice wine gets to your head very quickly, so he didn't dare to drink too much.

Dong Shanshan was also drawing a circle of admirers around her. When she sat at the table, a few of the beautiful air stewardesses immediately lost their

luster. Beauties were always noticed no matter where. Dong Shanshan was naturally toasted several times. However, Dong Shanshan only had a cup before rejecting the rest. Her face was flushed as she held her forehead saying, “I can’t have anymore, I can’t withstand the alcohol. I really can’t drink anymore.” as her body swayed.

Someone toasted her again.

Dong Shanshan refused to drink.

After dinner, Zhang Ye helped Dong Shanshan out.

Everyone was gone by now. They knew that Dong Shanshan and Zhang Ye were university classmates, so they were not worried.

Taking the lift up, Dong Shanshan kept swaying and holding her head. Zhang Ye dragged her towards her room.

As Zhang Ye walked, he grumbled, “Can’t even have a peaceful dinner these days, everything must include drinking and drinking more, will they die if they don’t drink? This issue is really not something that our country should let others know!”

They reached the room.

“Can you go in by yourself? Can you walk?” Zhang Ye asked. It was already very late and it wasn’t very convenient for him to go into a female comrade’s room. But Dong Shanshan kept leaning onto Zhang Ye. Her alluring perfume flowed towards him and as she got closer, the fragrance of her lipstick shot up Zhang Ye’s nose. She was very close. Dong Shanshan’s hair was all over Zhang Ye’s shoulder and neck, and now, Zhang Ye’s heart was fluttering. He somewhat wished that he could go with Dong Shanshan into her room since no one was watching.

Seems like there was really no one in the corridor watching.

Zhang Ye was fighting against his urges.

Dong Shanshan suddenly straightened up and flipped open her purse for the key card. She swiped it cleanly and pushed the door open and placed the key card in the slot to turn the electricity on. She looked at Zhang Ye with her clear

eyes and smiled. “Alright, here will do. Thank you. You should rest early too, we’re leaving tomorrow. Let’s have a meal together when you are free.”

Which part of her looked drunk?

Zhang Ye eyes widen and was tongue tied, “F**k, you were just putting on an act just now?”

“Who asked them to keep toasting me!? I can’t possibly drink that much.” Dong Shanshan explained logically.

Zhang Ye slapped his thighs, “Sigh, if I knew you were putting on an act, I would have done the same! I had too much to drink in the afternoon, so I didn’t want to drink again at night.”

Dong Shanshan smiled. “It wouldn’t work. This is a special skill of women. Time to sleep.”

‘Boom!’ The door closed.

.....

Back at his own room.

Zhang Ye was left with a deep impression again by the character of his old classmate. He would never believe her words again in the future. Look at how correct [Zhang Wuji](#) ‘s mother’s saying was — The more beautiful a woman, the harder she lies. This was indeed a wise saying.

He couldn’t sleep.

Let’s take a look online.

Zhang Ye had brought his notebook computer along, but he did not use it. The suite had a tablet computer of a foreign brand which he used instead. He browsed through the Celebrity Rankings website first. This was the most authoritative reference for a celebrity’s influence and fame. It was also a reference for a celebrity’s endorsement or appearance fees When he saw it, Zhang Ye whistled!

D-List Celebrity! He had really made it into the D-List rankings!

Back when Zhang Ye lost his job, he had been hovering in the first few spots of

the E-List rankings. He barely solidified his standings within the top five places where he hovered for a bit, he was still far from first place. This was not a position that he could assume in a short moment. Even if he did, to keep his placing would have taken Zhang Ye a great deal of effort by filming or publishing books. But now, just because he had gotten onto Central TV news and mentioned in name by the hosts, he had jumped out of the E-List and promoted into the D-List rankings. Although he was in last place of the D-List, it was still a commendable leap!

The netizens had also noticed it.

“Eh, why did Zhang Ye get into the D-List rankings?”

“Surely not? Isn’t he jobless now? His popularity should have fallen quite a bit, how could it have risen? And it even rose by so much?”

“It’s fake?”

“F**k, it’s real! He really got into the D-List!”

“Teacher Zhang has just debuted for a few month and he’s already a D-List celebrity?”

“The few jokers upstairs, did you all just get online?”

“Hey, why are you scolding us, did something happened? What is it that we do not know about?”

“Didn’t you watch the news? A China Airlines plane had an incident, a hijacking.”

“I know, the papers reported it, what about it?”

“Then you surely did not know that the mortal situation where there was no pilot, with an imminent crash and loss of life, it was Teacher Zhang Ye who took control of the plane and recovered it safely!”

“Ah?”

“What the heck!?”

“Are you guys bullshitting?”

“Bro, are you a scriptwriter?”

“Go online to check if you don’t believe me! Only the few of you do not know!”

As mentioned, the internet was littered with news of Zhang Ye. Many discussion forums and web portals had put this news on their front page. It was also heatedly discussed on Weibo and it received unprecedented attention. That Weibo post had already been bumped to the top page in 2nd position. The first post was about a male Korean celebrity, the number 1 Asian Heavenly King, who announced his wedding. This post was already firmly in first position since afternoon as numerous teenage girls posted congratulatory messages or curses. It was a post that made many people who saw it speechless. But Zhang Ye was not surprised. Because in China, many people loved the Koreans more than their own countrymen. A hijacking incident that hasn’t happened in over 10 years was still incomparable to a Korean celebrity’s wedding.

Let’s not talk about this.

In any case, Zhang Ye was once again the topic of discussion on the internet!

“It’s Teacher Zhang again!”

“Hello, Teacher Zhang. Goodbye, Teacher Zhang!”

“Zhang Ye, do you need to be so savage!?”

“He can even pilot a plane? Are you sure that you’re a broadcast host? Are you sure that you are the most talented broadcast major graduate in the nation?”

“My adoration for you is like the never-ending continuous surge of water in a river!”

“Teacher Zhang, do you know how to pilot an aircraft carrier? The country needs someone who is multi-talented like you!”

“Fierce, Teacher Zhang heroics and disregard for his own life makes him a role model to me!”

“Hahahaha, I ROFL-ed when I watched the news, it’s Teacher Zhang once again! What did I say again? Those who know Teacher Zhang would understand!”

“Teacher Zhang Ye, you really can’t give it a rest just for a day!”

“Right, I was wondering why wherever Teacher Zhang goes, trouble follows!”

“Why did Teacher Zhang go to Shanghai? Does he have a new job now? The People of Beijing send their congratulations. Teacher Zhang is not causing calamities on his Beijing counterparts now. But as a young pioneer, I need to alert the people in the media and literary scholars in Shanghai, please take care of yourselves! Teacher Zhang Ye has gone to your place!”

“Pfft! Godly reply from the one upstairs!”

“I’m dying from laughter! Hahaha!”

“Shanghai counterparts! You better take care!”

All of these comments were from old fans of Zhang Ye. They were saying some strange things that some people could not understand. There were some people who had heard of Zhang Ye’s name for the first time, like the citizens of Shanghai. They didn’t even know who he was.

“Who is Zhang Ye?”

“Why would you ask our media counterparts to take care?”

“A host can fly a plane? So cool!”

“Although I don’t know him, I will still give Zhang Ye a Like and pay attention to him from now on.”

“What an amazing person! Single handedly dealing with the criminals? Piloted the plane and turned the tide around? I need to do some research about him... ‘Lecture Room’? What kind of a program is this? I’ve never watched it before. I’ve read this person’s poems before! What the heck!? ‘Flying bird and fish’ was written by him! I’ve only just realized it now!”

Actually, many people were familiar with Zhang Ye’s works. But as most people did not have the habit of looking at the author’s name. Even if they saw it, they did not pay much attention to it. After all, he was still a rookie. In literature... it usually took a long time to become well-known. In Zhang Ye’s previous world, this theory has been proven multiple times. Like Van Gogh or Hans Christian Andersen. Even for a great writer like Lu Xun or Nobel Prize winner, Mo Yan, their early works did not garner much attention. It required time to build up.

A heated discussion exploded!

This incident was pretty scary and bizarre after all!

Naturally, Zhang Ye's past was dug out by numerous people!

Finally, a comment by someone made Zhang Ye be at a loss whether to laugh or cry.

That person posted on Weibo, "Are you all not familiar with Zhang Ye? Never mind. After my introduction, everyone will know. Regarding Teacher Zhang Ye, many of us Beijing fans know him as the Most Raffish Host in History'. When he first started out as a radio host, he was doing his job prim and properly, but then, he had to participate in some Mid-Autumn Festival Poetry Meet. He actually won first place there. Later on at the Silver Microphone Awards, if you win an award, then do it properly. But Teacher Zhang Ye did not conform to standards and he created a hooaha by using a poem to scold his leader and unit. Then after, he went on to work at the Beijing television station as a TV host. By right, he should have done his program properly, right? But no! Teacher Zhang created a public service advertisement and set off a new wave of creative advertising. Then, you would expect him to go back and do his job with TV programs properly right? You are wrong again! Teacher Zhang joined the Beijing Couplet Competition and took first place there as well. Moreover, there was no 2nd or 3rd place, not even a top 10 placing. Because all the questions had been answered fully by Zhang Ye alone. Then, when 'Lecture Room' was broadcasted on television, you think Teacher Zhang Ye would settle down properly once and for all, right? You guys think too straight! He then went on to write a song for a Heavenly Queen. And after the song writing? You people are too naive! Teacher Zhang Ye went on to publish a book and film a movie... And then today, we were still busy with bumping the Weibo 'Help Zhang Ye find a job!' post to the top and thinking of ways to help him with his future. He sure was fine because he went to f**king fly a plane!"

"Hahahaha!"

"Aiyo, my jaw is hurting from all this laughing!"

All the netizens had such a good laugh!

The person who posted said, "So tell me, if he isn't the most f**king raffish host in history, then who is?"

“I Agree!”

“100,000 likes!”

“Haha, Teacher Zhang is really not f**king doing his job!”

Chapter 221: The Airport Holds an Appreciation Ceremony!

Dawn.

7:15 A.M.

Zhang Ye slowly got up from bed and washed his face. After he looked at his watch, he wore a small jacket and went to his old schoolmate's door and knocked on it.

Ding dong.

No one opened it.

The cleaning lady was pushing a cart loaded with linen sheets and walked past Zhang Ye, "Who are you looking for?"

Zhang Ye turned around and gestured, pointing to the door, "The lady in this room is not in?"

"She left. She checked out around 6.30." The cleaning lady remembered clearly. She then left while pushing her cart.

Zhang Ye was helpless. The school belle was sure in a hurry. Was she in a hurry to discuss the contract with the company to be hired? She didn't even let him know. Hence, Zhang Ye went alone to the restaurant downstairs. Using his room card as a pass, he found a plate to begin his breakfast buffet.

"Teacher Zhang, you are up?"

"Let's go. Let's eat together."

It was the fat and thin air stewardesses. They had already chosen their food. One of them had two pizza slices and fried potatoes, and the other was having tea egg and soy milk.

The three sat at a table and had their meals.

“You came to Shanghai for work?” The thin air stewardess asked.

Zhang Ye nodded and did not lie, “That’s right. I think I’ll be living here for a while.”

The fat air stewardess chuckled, “You haven’t even begun working, and you are already famous in Shanghai. Previously, no one knew you, as you were a Beijing host after all. But now, there should be many people who know you. Your work will definitely be much smoother.” Although they said that, they did not know Zhang Ye at all. They only heard a few Beijingers on the plane say that he was a famous local host. This was why they addressed him as ‘Teacher Zhang’. After the celebration dinner party ended, they saw the news and they saw the many comments regarding Zhang Ye online. Only then did they understand. They believed that in Shanghai... maybe all around the country, there were people paying attention to him.

Zhang Ye said, “I’ll be counting on your blessings and hope everything will go smoothly.”

This fellow was already accustomed to scolding wherever he went. He no longer cared if things went smoothly, as long as he could become famous.

After the meal.

Zhang Ye had already decided to leave, however, a few policemen came. They looked different from the Shanghai police he met yesterday at the airport. It could be some other police department. They could be from the public security department or the anti-terrorist department. Anyway, they were looking for every passenger who was on the plane and they began to understand the circumstances. Zhang Ye was naturally questioned. He had brawled and interacted with the hijackers after all. He definitely knew more than the others. Zhang Ye recorded a statement, and this lasted all the way until noon.

After having his meal, people from China Airlines came again.

They drove Zhang Ye and the heroic plane crew to the airport. Accompanying them were also a few of the heroic passengers. For example, there was the man, who knew Karate, named Yan Hui. He was not seriously injured, so he had been

discharged from hospital and he could move freely.

In a conference room at the airport.

Several reporters had been waiting here for a long while.

Seeing the China Airlines Leader holding stuff like Certificates of Honor, Zhang Ye understood that this was to reward and thank them. There was not much reward. It could not match to similar incidents in his previous world in terms of monetary value, but it was also not much different. The elderly and thin air stewardesses and a few of the other cabin crew were gifted 200,000 Yuan each. A few passengers were gifted 100,000. Yan Hui was gifted 300,000. Zhang Ye was naturally gifted the most. The credit was mostly his, so not only was he awarded a million Yuan as a reward, he also received a Certificate of Honor from China Airlines. This honor was recorded in the China Airlines system. As long as Zhang Ye took any China Airlines flight, it would be free.

There was no ending to the applause.

There were many China Airlines employees present.

After the appreciation ceremony ended, Zhang Ye was surrounded by a lot of journalists. Some interviewed the other passengers, while others interviewed the cabin crew. However, there were even more journalists who were more interested in Zhang Ye. A former famous Beijing Arts Channel host together with the title of anti-hijacking hero added a mysterious halo to him.

“Teacher Zhang!”

“Please say a few words!”

“Did you consider the danger back then?”

“Why did you not hesitate to come forward under that kind of situation?”

The journalists rattled off like a string of bombs.

The elderly air stewardess smiled and helped Zhang Ye out, “Haven’t you seen Teacher Zhang’s past deeds? I also only knew about it last night on the web. Previously, when one of his fans contracted leukemia, Teacher Zhang Ye took out all his savings without a second word to the point of even borrowing money from his relatives and colleagues. He even sold the rights to his works cheaply. All this

just to bankrupt himself to pay for his fan. Is there a need to ask a why for such a person of high morals?”

Many of the journalists did not know of this matter. This included the people from China Airlines. When they heard this, they looked at Zhang Ye with greater respect.

.....

Afternoon.

It was already past 4 P.M. by the time he returned to the hotel.

After some thought, Zhang Ye decided not to leave today. After all, China Airlines had added another day of lodging for him. He might as well report to Weiwo tomorrow. There was no hurry.

He checked on the web.

His Tieba fan club numbers had soared once again!

The number of followers on Weibo had reached a stunning 310,000 today!

Everything was trending in a good direction. His current fame and achievements could be said to be the most glorious moments ever since he was born! However, this was not enough. Zhang Ye was far from satisfied with this little bit of achievement. He could do even better. He could climb even higher!

Right, since he was going to his new unit tomorrow, Zhang Ye was having some thoughts. He should prepare some hidden cards for himself. Now, his game ring's inventory only had a "Save" left. The other items had been used up by him sporadically. He needed to replenish it. It was what he relied on.

Zhang Ye opened the game interface and looked at his overall Reputation points. Although he was already mentally prepared, he was still so shocked by the string of numbers that he whistled!

11 million Reputation points!

After counting the digits a few times, there was no mistake!

Recalling back to when he was on the plane, he had spent all the Reputation points on the Lottery. There was nearly nothing left, but in just a day, a short

day, it had suddenly increased by 11 million. Back then, he had tirelessly produced “Lecture Room”. Such a popular program only gave him a few hundred thousand Reputation points an episode. There was no need to even mention the radio broadcast of “Ghost Blows Out the Light”. One episode only had tens of thousands of Reputation points, but now...

Just one day!

It had not even reached a full day yet!

Zhang Ye knew it clearly. This was the power of Central TV’s News Simulcast. Previously, when he appeared on television, it was just a local channel. The audience numbers were limited to the Beijing region. But this time, Central TV’s news had basically reached every district in the country. Even people overseas could see it. The coverage was too big, even if many people did not have the habit watching Central TV’s news, finding it too boring and meaningless. There were all sorts of news about the hijacking on the internet yesterday. It was bound to attract the attention of people. And from there, they would know of the name Zhang Ye. This time, not only did he get the attention of people from Beijing, he had received the attention of the entire country. This was why he had received so many Reputation points in a day. But after today, the Reputation points would also increasingly slow down. This was because those who wanted to know would have known, and those who didn’t care, still remained oblivious to it. However, even though the increase would slow down, it would still increase at a nontrivial rate.

Zhang Ye was pretty happy. The Reputation points and items he had spent on the plane had given him great returns. He got it all back in one go, and it was tenfold or even a hundredfold!

Time for the lottery!

No, let’s buy some skills first!

Zhang Ye’s expression changed as he opened the game interface’s Merchant Shop excitedly. He found the icon of the “Taiji Fist Skill Experience Book”. After fighting the hijackers, it made Zhang Ye realize his weakness. The Taiji Fist was not omnipotent. He still did not have enough experience in the skill. If not for so many passengers helping him, he would have died. If he encountered people

without kung fu or people with average kung fu, such as those young monks, Zhang Ye could easily fight them one against four or five. There was no stress fighting them and he would have absolute advantage over them. However, if he were to meet those with kung fu or people with fighting experience, he would find it tough fighting one on one, let alone one against two. His kung fu was still lacking, so he needed to eat more skill books!

Zhang Ye had a character that easily got into trouble. He was the kind of person who never knew how to compromise. Hence, he often encountered “special situations”, so he was not stingy at increasing his own martial powers!

Buy!

He ate another ten books!

With decisiveness, Zhang Ye spent 10 million Reputation points on buying ten Taiji Fist skill Experience Books, that cost a million apiece!

Flipping it open...

Flipping it open again...

He had ‘eaten’ Ten Experience Books!

After supplementing his lacking kung fu, Zhang Ye once again opened the Lottery interface. Without a thought, he started drawing. He still had a million Reputation points. It was enough.

For the first time, Zhang Ye bought an Additional Stake. He received two Consumption Category items:

[Red String of Fate] x2

Usage: By tying it on the ankle of the player and designated person, the Red String of Fate would immediately be in effect. It would tie a thousand mile romance together.

Duration: Decided according to the actual relationship between the two parties as well as the difficulty of the Marriage Affinity. Duration is not fixed and it can range from a second to a month.

Zhang Ye found it vague and he did not understand it fully. Red String of Fate? Creating Marriage Affinity? Did this mean that whenever he fancied any girl, he

could use the Red String of Fate to tie both his and that woman's leg, and their Marriage Affinity would be linked together? It could cause reliance on each other under the romance effects, causing something to happen? But it was not permanent? If the Marriage Affinity was too difficult to form between the two, that was if things like their looks, family background and age were too different, the Red String of Fate could only last a very short time. It could barely last a second? But if the gap was not too great, it could at most last up to a month? He had never tried it before. This was how Zhang Ye understood it. He could only make a blind analysis from the introduction. He needed to find the actual circumstances out.

However, it was definitely something good!

This gizmo did not feel much different from the 'Cupid Sachet' he had previously drawn. However, the actual effects were different. The 'Cupid Sachet' would randomly cause luck with the opposite sex, and it could only be maintained for five minutes. It had no room for change, but the Red String of Fate allowed him to specify the particular person. It just meant that the duration was not fixed!

Chapter 222: New House has been decided on

Red String of Fate?

Good stuff!

Zhang Ye was one never to reject. After owning the game ring for such a long period of time, he knew that those special items that did not catch his eye would usually come in handy. For example, that lock-picking skill. Back then, when he received it, he thought it was trash, but what was the outcome? It saved his life! Hence, Zhang Ye was no longer picky. He wanted anything. Naturally, having more items in his inventory was better!

Draw again!

This time he bought another Additional Stake!

The Consumption Category was the biggest region. The needle stopped and landed in this region. Immediately, two Treasure Chests (Small) appeared.

Flipping open the Treasure Chest, out came a die like object.

[Difficulty Adjustment Die] : After it is thrown, it will randomly change the player's difficulty. The period of its effects are random.

Seeing this item he drew, Zhang Ye, who said he did not reject anything, could not help but curse f**k. Why is it this crappy thing again? He had even bought an Additional Stake to get two of these “Difficulty Adjustment Dice”? Can you stop fooling around? Big Bro! Go back wherever you came from! Zhang Ye really felt like throwing the two dice away. He wanted to throw it as far as he could, but when he recalled that they became effective the moment they were thrown, he abandoned that thought, and was at a loss whether to laugh or cry. For these items, Zhang Ye felt great psychological pressure. If it had not created that perverse difficulty, he would not have encountered the hijacking. If not for the Lucky Bread and the Commercial Airline Piloting Skillbook, he would not have

come back alive!

This die was a double-edged sword. It had equal advantages and disadvantages!

Advantages were good, but once he obtained a disadvantage, there was a high chance of him dying!

He was still lucky on the plane. The increase in difficulty by ten times only lasted for about 50 minutes. If it f**king gave me a year of ten times difficulty... Will I f**king be still alive?

A car would smash into me when I'm out?

Just going out for a walk would result in a dog biting me?

When I walk downstairs, a flower pot will come crashing down at me?

Just those thoughts made Zhang Ye feel a chill. Are you guys trying to kill this bro?

Once bitten, twice shy. Zhang Ye no longer dared to repeat this again. Unless needed as a last resort, he would never use the die. Hence, he quickly and gently picked up the dice from the Treasure Chests and kept it in the inventory, afraid he would drop it, causing it to automatically change the difficulty.

Forget it, let's not draw anymore.

His luck today wasn't good.

.....

Past 6 P.M.

He had been having good meals the past two days. The airport and the people from China Airlines kept hosting feasts for him. Anyways, Zhang Ye was not hungry. So he excused himself to not eat with them, saying he was busy. He secretly left the hotel and wore a large pair of dark sunglasses to hide his face, afraid others would recognize him. Actually, this fellow had over-thought it. Although the hijacking incident had made Zhang Ye known around the country, only his fans in Beijing knew what he looked like. In Shanghai, they could not receive "Lecture Room", and there were only a few pictures of Zhang Ye on the web. Those who did not watch his programs wouldn't even recognize him even if

he walked past them. Few people in Shanghai could recognize him.

On the streets, the lights were bright.

Neon lights flicked in the distance. It was bustling with life.

Zhang Ye indeed had something to do. He did not take the subway and hailed a taxi, and went towards the city center. He already had Weiwo Video Company's address, as a middle-aged man had contacted him on the phone this afternoon. But of course, Zhang Ye did not plan on going to the office now. It was already late, and they were knocking off soon. He wanted to rent an apartment near to the office. After all, he had to live here for a few months, so he needed to settle his accommodation.

.....

The Bund.

The sound of water could be heard as the wind blew across the river.

Men and women were leaning on the railings. They were either flirting or watching the scenery. The atmosphere was very leisurely. There were also yachts and boats cruising down the river. There were many banks and insurance company advertisements pasted on the boats. It was a scene that affected the atmosphere, but it was overall quite a charming place.

There were quite a lot of people, but it was not chaotic. The scenery was very static.

In Beijing, there was no way one could find such a place.

Zhang Ye had deliberately let the taxi driver drop him off here so that he could also take in the scenery. After about a long twenty minutes walk, he finally found a residential property intermediary by an alley. There were not many intermediary companies here. It was not like the intermediary-filled Beijing. After taking a look, only this one in front of him was considered a bigger company. Zhang Ye went in since their lights were still on.

"Sir, how do you do." There was a young woman with average looks at the front desk. She was dressed in a shirt with a badge and trousers. However, she wore heavy make-up and looked quite bright.

“Hello, have you knocked off?”

“Not yet. We only close at 10.”

“I want to rent an apartment. It’s best if I can move in today or tomorrow.”

“Alright, let me check for you. Please take a seat. I will get you some water. What sort of apartment do you need? And roughly where? And at what price?”

Zhang Ye took off his sunglasses and sat in front of a computer with her. There were all sorts of information about apartments on the screen. As expected, the intermediary staff did not know him, “The price doesn’t really matter. The main thing is that it has to be near here. The apartment has to be a bit new and the renovations good. The size doesn’t matter. I will be living alone.”

The woman began to search for him. “This area is mostly a high-end residential district. If you are not price sensitive, there are many apartments available for you. For example, this one. Two bedroom apartment. 90 square meters. They had renovations last year. It is slightly far away. About two kilometers away. What say you?”

Zhang Ye looked at the map and indeed it was a bit far. His ideal residence was somewhere near to Weiwo company, so that he could reach there in ten minutes by taxi. “Let’s try another one.”

After looking at a few, he was unsatisfied with all of them.

Either the renovations did not match his taste or it was too far.

Zhang Ye did not want to waste his money, “Is there a one bedroom? It’s just me alone.”

The woman shook her head, “It’s basically a high-end small district. The smallest apartments are two bedrooms. Why don’t you look at this one. The location is good, the layout is good. Two bedrooms. The renovations are not bad too. It will definitely meet your requirements. However, the apartment is a sublet. The previous renter signed a one year contract with the tenant, but he has already moved out. There’s about three to four months left on the contract.”

Three to four months?

Hey, isn't that just nice!?

Zhang Ye was also very satisfied with the apartment layout, "I also won't be staying here for long. I think this will do. Three to four months isn't a problem too. Then let's look at the rooms?"

"Alright, I'll bring you there." The woman said happily.

"Can I move in today?" Zhang Ye asked.

"Yes, the person has already moved out. I can give him a call to ask him over. If it's alright, we can even sign the contract today. There won't be a problem at all." The woman answered.

This was a high-end residential area.

The room prices for The Bund were all placed there. Other than the old houses which were decades old, the surroundings were all high-end residential buildings. It was easy to see just from the decor and the greenery of the district. There were even artificial lakes and rockery with fountains. Of course, the rent was expensive. This two bedroom apartment was around 90 square meters. The monthly rent was about 11,500 Yuan (US\$1,700). The average price in The Bund was about 12,300 Yuan (US\$1,850). It really wasn't cheap.

However, after looking at the apartment, Zhang Ye was quite tempted. He had just received a reward of a million Yuan (US\$150,000) from China Airlines, so he was not lacking in cash. After all, he was now a celebrity, he couldn't live in somewhere too shabby, right? If he squeezed into a small rental house, others would even think he was not famous enough. So he had to use this bit of money. Even if he felt the pinch, and was f**king cheap, Zhang Ye had to be generous for once.

Acting awesome was one of the requirements of being a celebrity!

As a celebrity, if you didn't act awesome, you wouldn't even feel right greeting others outside!

"It's decided. This apartment would do. Please prepare the contract. I'll go collect my luggage from the hotel." Zhang Ye very quickly finalized it before taking a taxi back to the hotel to pack his things.

Chapter 223: This is the Legendary Zhang Ye?

New house.

New day.

New environment.

The sun shined its rays through the wide windows in the morning. The new house was very well lit; even with curtains closed, the room still did not appear dark. The place was fully furnished. After signing the contract last night, Zhang Ye had moved in. After covering the mattress with a bed sheet and used a blanket he bought, he slept till dawn.

It was time to wake up.

Zhang Ye enjoyed the sunlight with his eyes half-closed. He crawled up from his soft bed and brushed his teeth and woke up. After he came out of the bathroom in the living room, his cellphone rang.

“Hello, Teacher Zhang.”

“Hello, may I know who is this?”

“I’m from Weiwo company’s Human Resources department. Has the matters of the plane been settled?”

“It has been settled. Sorry for delaying for a day. Can I go over now?”

“Alright. Let’s schedule a time. How about an hour later? I will wait in our company’s lobby for you.”

“Alright. I will be there punctually in an hour. Let’s talk when we meet.”

After straightening his hair with a comb, Zhang Ye looked in the mirror with satisfaction. Then, he got his bag and left the house. He hailed a taxi and headed in the company’s direction. It was very close by. It would take him 20 minutes to

get there even if there was a jam.

.....

Weiwo Company.

It was not on a main street but behind a shopping center.

The building was not very tall. It was about four to five storeys tall, but it covered a large area.

After alighting from the taxi, he saw the company's headquarters. Zhang Ye had a rough idea of the company's strength. It was not bad, but it definitely could not compete with the mega internet giant companies. However, if it were to be compared with similar WebTV websites, it was definitely one of the best. It had strong financial backing.

Lobby.

Zhang Ye went in but did not see anyone. He then went to the front desk to inquire.

However, someone in the lounge recognized him and stretched out his arm with a smile. He was a youth and was in his twenties. He was about the same age as Zhang Ye. He looked pretty average. "You must be Teacher Zhang, right? Hur Hur, we have previously talked on the phone. Hello and welcome."

Zhang Ye shook hands with him, "Nice to meet you."

"Let's go upstairs. I'll bring you around first," the youth said.

"Sure, sorry for the trouble," Zhang Ye followed him.

On the way, the youth gave him a general introduction to the locations of the various departments in the company, as well as their overall situation. Finally, he brought Zhang Ye to an office of a Leader.

He knocked on the door.

A woman's voice from inside invited them in.

After the youth entered, he introduced, "President Feng, this is Teacher Zhang Ye. I've brought him here." After that he turned towards Zhang Ye and said, "This is our company's vice president. She is also Director-in-charge of our

WebTV department.”

Feng Guiqin stretched out her hand, “I’ve been waiting for you for the past few days. Nice to meet you Little Zhang.”

Zhang Ye quickly went forward and shook her hands with both hands, “Nice to meet you President Feng. I’m new here and this is the first time I’m interacting with WebTV. Please take care of me in the future.” He knew that this woman would be his direct superior. She was the head of the WebTV department, so she had the final say in everything.

Feng Guiqin looked to be in her forties. She did not look very pretty, but she was very friendly. She looked like any ordinary mother in the neighborhood. “Little Sun, go to the Legal department and get Little Zhang’s contract.”

The youth accepted the order and went out.

Feng Guiqin gestured, “Take a seat.”

Zhang Ye did not stand on ceremony and after sitting down, he took out his resume. “This is my resume.”

Feng Guiqin smiled. “There’s no need. Since our company invited you here, we already know very well about your qualifications and achievements. This time, we have hired a few internet hosts as well as people in program planning. They were decided on personally by President Wei as well as the company’s higher management. We have seen your programs too. I’m no stranger to your work. On the contrary, you do not know too much about our company. Then let me give you a brief introduction. Our company was in the earliest batch of companies that obtained the authorized certificate to be a WebTV company. The WebTV industry has been developing at a rapid pace these few years. There have been many WebTV websites who have obtained the certificate too. There are even some television stations who have set up websites as well as cable TV companies who are fighting for a slice of this pie. It is extremely competitive, and it could be said to reaching some extreme limits...”

Zhang Ye listened attentively.

“WebTV began late so this industry is still very young; however, it still has a lot of room for development. Although it may seem like we are merging several

disparate entertainment programs into one, it is actually not that simple. The independent and overall outcome are different conceptually. In terms of resources, it is not as simple as one plus one equals two. Sometimes, it might even equal to three. And there are even the special grants and tax rebates given to us by the country...” Feng Guiqin was a very good speaker. From the important points to the general introduction, she introduced the WebTV industry in a very clear manner.

Zhang Ye was still listening attentively. Of course, he was just trying to get some understanding over it. He was in no way responsible or qualified to care about the general trends and strategy. The industry was complicated and highly competitive, but Zhang Ye did not mind. His motivation was not the industry itself, nor did he really care if he could increase the overall click rate on the company’s WebTV site. What he wanted to do was to do his segment well, and make it popular. Zhang Ye was not a person of this world. His thoughts were still lingering on the model of his world’s web entertainment. That was the territory he was familiar with. Although Feng Guiqin said that WebTV was different from independent videos, to Zhang Ye, they were actually the same.

All he needed was a fixed time slot. Zhang Ye would do the program, publish it and attract an audience.

It was not that complicated and was actually very simple. Be it an internet video series or a television program broadcast, they shared the same basics.

The contract arrived.

“Take a look first.” Feng Guiqin said.

Zhang Ye flipped it and found no problems with it. It was a conventional contract.

Feng Guiqin smiled and said, “Our salary is decided on by our employees. That is for the basic salary. As for bonuses and other benefits, they are standardized.”

Zhang Ye blinked, “Really? I decide on it?”

Victoria had indeed mentioned this to him when she invited him on the phone.

However, Zhang Ye knew that this wasn’t something that was completely true. There had to be some restrictions. You couldn’t just say a monthly salary of

100,000 (US\$15,000), right? It would be weird if they didn't kick you out the windows, so Zhang Ye did not make unreasonable demands, "My ideal salary is approximately... 20,000 (US\$3,000) a month?"

Feng Guiqin gave it a thought and nodded, "Sure."

Zhang Ye was after all not very famous in the hosting industry. He was just a normal host of a star program of a local TV channel, so it was not right for him to ask for too much.

With everything agreed upon, Zhang Ye began signing the contract.

Feng Guiqin said, "Take these few days to familiarize yourself with the environment and to get to know your work. More preparation may quicken the speed in doing work. We only do the program after you are familiarized. Our WebTV segments are given relatively more freedom. You can plan it yourself or also discuss it with the department's professional program planners. Of course, even though there is freedom, your program will eventually be vetted by a few Leaders. Only when they approve it, will a time slot be allocated on WebTV. The quality must definitely pass."

Zhang Ye was done signing, "Sure."

"Alright, then let me welcome you here." Feng Guiqin said, "You can begin today. You can directly report to the WebTV department." She made a call and got someone to bring Zhang Ye there.

The person, who came, was Wang Xiong, a middle-aged man. He was one of the Deputy Directors of the WebTV department. He was also a Leader. He seemed to be very interested in Zhang Ye. The moment he came over, he sized him up. He must definitely have heard of the hijacking news, so he wanted to know what sort of person Zhang Ye was. However, be it his looks or build, Zhang Ye looked like any other ordinary person. Other than his eyes having some brilliance and his voice sounding somewhat magnetic and charming, he was too normal in every other aspect. It felt like anyone taken off the streets would be better than him.

"Director Wang," Zhang Ye said politely.

Wang Xiong patted him on the shoulder, "Alright, let's go." The two of them

went downstairs. He said, “The WebTV office is on one level itself. The recording studio is also at one level by itself. It is our company’s biggest department. All the program teams are relatively independent, but if there’s something, you can always look for the others. My office is also on the same level as yours.”

Around the corner at the staircase.

Along the narrow corridor were transparent glass partitions. The office desks were crammed inside. Just a look revealed about 140-150 people in the department. The exterior was filled with customer service. More than ten operators were busy picking up phone calls. There were more than ten regions with a sign suspended from the ceiling. The program names were written on it. Clearly, it was the region for each program team. Other than the leadership’s office and meeting rooms, there was no sealed off area in this office. All the office desks were linked to one another. Everything could be seen at a glance.

The environment was good!

The scale was not much worse than a television station!

Zhang Ye silently observed and followed Wang Xiong in.

Bba Bba. Wang Xiong clapped his hands, “Everyone, stop your work for half a minute. Let me introduce to you a new colleague.” He held Zhang Ye’s shoulders, “Zhang Ye, former famous host of the Beijing Arts Channel. From today onwards, he will be a member of our WebTV department. Let’s give him a welcoming applause?”

Everyone gave a round of applause, but it was not very loud.

“Famous host?”

“To dare call him famous? Is his ratings very high?”

“Hey, why is the name Zhang Ye so familiar?”

“Holy sh*t! I remember! Beijing Arts Channel host? Zhang Ye? Isn’t that the anti-hijacking hero on the news? The one who flew a plane!”

“Ah? It’s really him?”

“What the f**k! Why did he come to our place?”

“He doesn’t look like one. How can he be a host with such average looks?”

A few people spoke. Everyone knew who this person was and a flurry of discussion erupted!

These two days, they had heard this name more than once on the news and internet. In other units, people might not pay that much attention, but Zhang Ye was previously a television host. He was considered in the same line as them. For a counterpart of theirs to safely fly and land a large passenger plane, this naturally attracted a lot of discussion. As such, they were very curious about Zhang Ye.

However, many people were disappointed seeing him.

Wang Xiong ignored it and pointed to a spot inside. “Little Zhang, your desk will be over there. There are many empty spots, so choose whichever you prefer.”

“Alright.” Zhang Ye went over with his things.

Wang Xiong did not speak much. After he asked an old employee about the situation with the programs today, he left the office and returned to his office.

Everyone were still looking in Zhang Ye’s direction.

The legendary Zhang Ye?

The legendary man of God?

He looked way too ordinary!

Chapter 224: The School Belle is also in the Same Company?

Doubts.

Curiosity.

Strangeness.

Glances from his colleagues bore down on him from all directions. They were staring at him. Some were even pointing at him while discussing him. Only a few people did not pay him any attention and were working with their heads down.

If it were any other ordinary person, they would definitely not be able to handle the fact that so many complex gazes were bearing down on him. At least, the person would feel unpleasant. It was as if that person was a Giant Panda that was being stared at and whispered about. Who could stand that? However, Zhang Ye happened to not be an ordinary person. This fellow was in no way stressed. Thinking back at Daming Lake*...Ai, that's the wrong phrase. Thinking back at the radio station, he had been evaded by numerous colleagues like he was the plague. Thinking back to the television station, he was treated as the God of Death by many of his counterparts. He was used to it.

Besides, this was different from the past.

In the past, it was because he was notorious amongst his counterparts.

But now, he was an anti-hijacking hero. He had saved more than a hundred people's lives. What was there to be bothered about that? Watch and see if you like it.

After putting down his things, Zhang Ye switched on the company computer and began to familiarize himself with the environment.

It seemed like two people wanted to come over and chat with Zhang Ye, but

just as their buttocks left the chair, they sat back down after some hesitation.

The first person to interact with Zhang Ye was not from their department. He was an employee from the Human Resources department who came into the office from the outside. Zhang Ye had never seen this person before. He was not the youth that had received him at the lobby. He looked about 27 or 28. He was holding a document in his hand.

“Who is Zhang Ye?” The man asked.

A woman right in front pointed to the back and carried on busying herself.

Zhang Ye heard it, “I am.”

The man walked up and handed a form over, “Fill this in. Things like cellphone number and address. It’s for our records, so as to facilitate communication. As for insurance and other stuff, it’s a bit more complicated, so it will be done next week.”

“Alright.” Zhang Ye picked up a pen and began writing.

The man did not leave and chatted with people not far away happily, “Ah Qian, Little Yu, you guys didn’t bully that beauty that came yesterday right?”

Little Yu said, “Why would I?”

Ah Qian laughed, “We are more like dying to put her on a pedestal.”

The man laughed, “Both of you aren’t married. You can chase after her.”

Ah Qian rolled his eyes, “Come on, she’s so pretty. I’m not good enough.”

The man chuckled, “If you don’t chase after her, other colleagues might make their moves. I have all the records of our company’s employees on my side. I can tell you in a definite manner that there is no other lady more pretty than her in the company. For such a beauty to come to the WebTV department is your blessing. It’s not like the girls at HR. They have straight faces all day. Hai, let’s not talk about it.”

Zhang Ye put down his pen and looked up, “Bro, I’m done.”

“Alright, let me take a look.” The man scanned the form and frowned, “You need to fill in everything. Why is the column for your English name empty?”

Zhang Ye said, “I don’t have an English name.”

“Write something if you don’t.” The man said.

Zhang Ye looked at him, “How do I write something I don’t have?”

The man smacked his lips, “Can’t you just come up with one? Something like Peter or David.”

Zhang Ye remained calm, “I think it’s best we forget it. I really don’t want such a name, nor is it any important information. Filling up the rest would do.”

The man was somewhat irritated, “How can it not be important? Company regulation says that everyone has to write one.”

Generally, most foreign companies had such a regulation, however, this wasn’t a foreign company, right? You still want me to come up with an English name?

Zhang Ye gave it some thought and took over the form. On the blank, he wrote, “ZHANGYE”.

The man stopped him, “What are you doing? Hanyu Pinyin (romanization) is not English. Can’t you just come up with one? Everyone does that? If you can’t think of one, I’ll think of one for you.”

The commotion here attracted the askance glances of quite a number of people.

Zhang Ye could no longer stand for it. He slammed the form fiercely on the table and roared, “I said I don’t have an English name! Did you not hear that? If you wish to adore the foreigners, do it yourself! Don’t pull me along! I’m a perfectly good Chinese national! Why the f**k would I come up with an English name!? Do you think I’m sick!? And you want to give me a name? Who the f**k are you!? I only have one name! It was given to me by my parents!”

The man was dumbfounded!

Everyone in the office was also dumbfounded!

“You cursed at me?” The man’s face was already turning green!

Zhang Ye looked at him and said, “There’s no end from you even though I ignored you! This is the first time I heard of someone forcing someone to change

his name! I don't have an English name! What can you do?"

"You...You..." The man pointed at him as he trembled.

As a person born and bred from Beijing, which was a city that had suffered the wars of the eight countries, Zhang Ye had also inherited a fine tradition of Beijingers — ultra-nationalism. Actually, he was also not an irrational ultra-nationalist. He could accept parts of foreign culture as well as some of their ideologies. He also watched American dramas, anime and even liked to eat steak and pizza. But, he was never proud of this!

To come up with a foreign name?

This had already crossed Zhang Ye's bottom line!

As a newcomer, who had not even joined the company for an hour, Zhang Ye naturally did not want to create conflict with his colleagues. Although they were not from the same department, the repercussions were still not good. Hence, he was calm from the beginning and patiently explained to that person. He really did not want some strange foreign name. However, that person refused and even turned angry at Zhang Ye. How could a person like Zhang Ye endure this? Go f**k yourself!

Wang Xiong came out of his office. Clearly, he had heard the ruckus, "What's going on?"

The man from Human Resources seemed to find solace, and angrily said, "Director Wang, that newcomer, Zhang Ye doesn't want to write an English name. I got him to fill it out, and said it was company regulation, but he still cursed me!"

Wang Xiong said in a speechless manner, "Just over such a trivial thing?"

The man said exasperatedly, "He even cursed me!"

Zhang Ye leered at him, "I said I don't have an English name, but you wanted to give me one. Who the hell are you!? Is it up to you to give me a name? Yes, I'm cursing you!"

Wang Xiong straightened his face, "Little Zhang! What are you doing!?"

The man pointed and said, "Director Wang, look, take a look!"

Look? What am I looking at!? You even dare to point at me?

Wang Xiong knew this person and knew that he was not someone good with words. Indeed, the company did have a regulation about writing an English name. However, it was just an in passing. It was fine if it was not written. Besides, he had glanced at the form. There was “ZHANGYE” written on it. It was also written in English characters. It was passable, so why was there a need to come to such an argument? You even wanted to give him a name? You were indeed asking for the scolding. How bad are you with words? Was it up to you to come up with names for others?

Wang Xiong waved his hands, “Alright, I got it. Isn’t the form already filled up? There’s nothing blank. Just file it like that. Everything can be discussed, what’s the meaning of yelling here like that!?”

“But he...” The man was indignant. He had also lost face.

Wang Xiong said with a deep voice, “This is a work place! What ruckus are you causing!?”

The man knew that Deputy Director Wang was taking sides. He simmered in his anger but was helpless. He ended up taking Zhang Ye’s form and left in disgrace.

The moment he left, Wang Xiong said to Zhang Ye, “Little Zhang, this is a company. It is very common to have differences with colleagues on matters of work, but you shouldn’t have cursed.”

Zhang Ye’s attitude turned good, “Sorry Director Wang. I will take note.”

Wang Xiong did not blame him, and with a terse remark, he left.

Although the matter was settled, the minds of everyone in the office was completely not at rest!

Holy sh*t!

You really cursed?

What sort of temper do you have?

No one in the WebTV department expected that under such circumstances, a newcomer like Zhang Ye would dare curse at someone from Human Resources in his face! Anyone with a bit of work experience would not have done such a thing,

but Zhang Ye had still cursed. And look at what the aftermath was. He still calmly fiddled with the computer. That calmness and quiet composure was as if nothing had happened! From this, everyone knew that this was definitely not the first time Zhang Ye had done it! Or he would not have been so carefree!

F**k!

What sort of colleague has joined us!?

Previously, everyone was somewhat disappointed. They were wondering how such an ordinary young man could be so capable. They were wondering why he was given such great acclaim on television and on the internet. But from this, they finally understood. This was a f**king wolf in sheep's clothing. He was definitely someone difficult to work with!

Suddenly, a pleasant female voice could be heard.

"What's the situation? Why did I hear cursing voices just now? What happened?" A sexy woman came in while holding some documents. Be it her face or body, they were all amazing!

"Teacher Dong, you are back?"

"Hai, just now, someone from HR wanted a new colleague to write an English name, but was ended up being cursed at. Even Director Wang was activated because of it."

A few people explained to her in an enthusiastic manner.

The woman blinked, "Cursing can happen from such a matter?"

Zhang Ye, who had his head down while fiddling with his computer, suddenly found the voice familiar. It was too familiar. He looked up and could not help but be shocked, "Dong Shanshan?"

The woman was also stunned, as she said to him, "Zhang Ye?"

Zhang Ye was amused, "Hey, what are you doing here?"

Dong Shanshan also laughed, "I was about to ask you why...Oh I got it. Could it be that you came to Shanghai to work at Weiwo company?"

Zhang Ye exclaimed, "You also came here to be a internet host?"

Your sister, didn't you come here to film a movie or television drama? No one can believe a word you say!

However, many things could be understood at this very moment. Clearly, their meeting on the plane was not a coincidence. Weiwo company had not only invited Zhang Ye, they had also invited Dong Shanshan. It was even possible that Dong Shanshan had been invited before him, or the air tickets wouldn't have been booked in such a rush, with Zhang Ye having to take the plane the next day. Clearly, Weiwo had booked both their tickets to make it the staff's jobs easier. This resulted in them meeting on the plane.

Everyone was stunned when they saw this. The two knew each other?

Dong Shanshan laughed pleasantly, "You were the one cursing just now, right?"

Zhang Ye affirmed, "Yea, he kept forcing me to come up with an English name. It was already good that I didn't beat him up."

Upon recalling something, Dong Shanshan was tickled green. "Hur Hur, you are the same as when you were in college. You are still so ultra-nationalistic. Although it has been three to four years, but I still remember one of our English classes. The teacher got everyone in class to come up with an English name, so as to address us with it. Everyone came up with one, except you. You even debated with the English teacher for half a class on the matter on "Why should a Chinese national come up with an English name". In the end, the English teacher even wrapped up class out of anger! Hahaha, why are you still the same old you?"

Zhang Ye said in a matter of fact manner, "It's a matter of principle. There is no leeway."

Their dialogue between the two of them enlightened everyone. They realized that Zhang Ye and Beauty Dong were college classmates. They were both broadcasting major graduates of the Media College!

Chapter 225: The School Belle is also in the Same Company?

*This is a line from "[My Fair Princess](#)", about an Emperor's illegitimate daughter, Xia Ziwei's adventures. She was conceived by the Emperor during a

trip at Daming Lake, so this line, was a reference asking if the Emperor still remembered her mother, and also a way to prove their blood relationship.

Chapter 225: Using the Red String of Fate!

Everyone was listening in with curiosity. It was not surprising that the two of them were previously classmates since they were both broadcasting professionals. Most of them were schoolmates at least, so knowing each other was normal. What they were more concerned about were Zhang Ye's past deeds. Already angered a teacher in his freshman year? F**k, this person was different from the others. No wonder he had cursed the Human Resource staff away earlier. This was his temperament all along!

Was it really okay like this?

Such a person can be a broadcasting host?

Everyone had their doubts of the newly arrived Teacher Zhang Ye's temperament and nature. He was indeed a wonder of this industry!

"Luckily I didn't greet him just now."

"Yea, this Teacher Zhang Ye does not seem easy to talk to."

"Such a temper is really too much."

"His program has not been set yet, so his program team probably has no one yet? Damn, please don't transfer me over."

They were whispering about how their first impressions of Zhang Ye could only be described as a "wonder". A few people, who had wanted to greet Zhang Ye, had now dismissed the idea.

Dong Shanshan spoke with Zhang Ye for a while before walking over to the desk beside Zhang Ye. She put down her documents and pulled out the chair, pressed down her skirt and sat down. She was wearing a darker than royal blue mini skirt that felt quite matured. She had black stockings and black high heels of around 12cm high, paired with a black lady's suit and bundled hair. She was

dressed with the looks of a professional. If it were other pretty women who dressed the same, they could only be described as pretty, matured and able. But on Dong Shanshan, there was an additional description of “sexy”, because of her figure. She wore the suit very tightly, especially at the back of her hips and chest. As such, she was more enchanting than the others.

“You’re seated here?” Zhang Ye asked.

Dong Shanshan laughed, “Yes, all the rookies sit around here.”

Zhang Ye looked at the adjacent table, “You reported for work after leaving the hotel yesterday?”

Dong Shanshan nodded, “If I knew you were invited too, I would have come along with you. Things between us sure were good, we were chatting for so long on the plane yet none of us knew that we were going to report to the same unit.”

Zhang Ye was speechless, “Who asked that mouth of yours to always not speak the truth.”

Dong Shanshan gave him a glance, “You did not tell me you were coming to apply as a web host either.”

“You did not ask. Alright, I won’t keep you from your work.” He could see that the school belle had some work to do, so he did not carry on chatting but busied himself.

.....

Afternoon.

It was now lunchtime.

Zhang Ye had been looking at the computer screen the whole morning and felt a little dizzy. He rubbed his eyes and then looked sideways at Dong Shanshan, wanting to ask her to lunch together at the canteen. But before he could open his mouth, a few guys had already come up to her.

“Teacher Dong, let’s have lunch together?”

“Do we have the honor of inviting Teacher Dong for lunch?”

“Yea, we could also discuss about the program together.”

“The program planning for you is almost done, let’s chat while we eat?”

About five to six guys had come up to her at once. They were tall, short, fat and thin, each one more enthusiastic than the other.

Dong Shanshan smiled at them, “Discuss about the program? Hmm...Alright then, let’s go together.” So she headed to the canteen together with the few of them.

Zhang Ye thought to himself: Sure, this bro will have his own lunch.

When he got up, he realised that he did not know the way to the canteen. He wanted to find a colleague to go together and also to have a chat with in order find out more about the company and the people there. But when he tried looking for someone, everyone had already left. It was like they avoided Zhang Ye on purpose and it made him at a loss whether to laugh or cry. Your sister! From the television station to the WebTV station, is this bro so unpopular?

Heading out to look for the canteen himself, Zhang Ye applied for a meal card and then queued for a simple meal of rice and fried vegetables which he took back to the office to eat.

Just before 1 P.M.

Dong Shanshan and the others had returned.

“Teacher Dong, where did you stay last night?”

“I found an express hotel nearby. I had previously believed that our company had staff quarters.”

“There isn’t any. We all have to get our own rental apartments. Yea, you are still unfamiliar with this place, why don’t I bring you to a residential property intermediary after work tonight.”

“But won’t that trouble you, Ah Qian?”

“That’s not troublesome, no trouble at all. It’s along the way.”

“Sure, then thank you.”

“You are too polite, it’s just simple help.”

With the appointment to go apartment hunting decided, Ah Qian became very excited.

Little Yu who was seated beside him could only look on at him in envy. You were still saying that you weren't good enough for her this morning. And now you are already going after her in the afternoon? Deceitful!

Dong Shanshan mood was not affected as she went back to her work.

Zhang Ye saw this, and could only feel the exasperation one could feel if they competed against others. He could tell that there were at least ten people in the entire office who had their sights on Dong Shanshan. Some showed it on their faces, while others hid it in their hearts. They would glance at Dong Shanshan every now and then, but not make a move.

"You seem really popular." Zhang Ye said in a laughing voice that only the two of them could hear. There were only the two of them on this side of their work area, so as long as they spoke softly, no one else could hear them.

Dong Shanshan glanced, "Is that so?"

Zhang Ye shrugged, "At least more popular than me."

"Hur Hur Hur." Dong Shanshan was tickled, "Why did you curse at people when you just got the job? Composing poetry that scolds people and making trouble during a live broadcast. Everyone already knows that you are not easy to get along with, so who would bother to make conversation with you? At lunch just now, some of them asked me about you, do you know what's their impression of you? They said that you are a 'wonder' of the industry!"

They are the wonders!

Your whole damned family are wonders!

Zhang Ye was speechless for a long while.

With a sudden thought, Dong Shanshan asked, "Oh right, did you find an apartment yet? If not, why don't we go together tonight? I don't know about you, but I'm definitely going to stay here for the long term."

Zhang Ye replied, "I've already found one yesterday and moved in."

"So fast? Where is it at?" Dong Shanshan asked curiously.

Zhang Ye laughingly answered, "It's near the Bund. I forgot which road, but it's a normal two bedroom apartment."

Dong Shanshan said, "The rental over there is so expensive, looks like you've got quite some money. Oh right, the China Airlines reward was already a million. Alright, tomorrow or the day after, I must have a treat from you."

"No problem." Zhang Ye said without hesitating while waving his hands. But with this wave, he knocked a pen off from his desk. It landed right beside Dong Shanshan's leg.

Dong Shanshan lowered her head to pick it up for him.

But Zhang Ye said, "Let me do it, you are wearing a skirt. It's not convenient."

Dong Shanshan did not insist. They were already classmates of four years. With the added incident on the plane and as old friends meeting again at work, their relationship had already become a lot closer.

Zhang Ye bent over his waist towards the school belle's legs. With her legs that were covered by black silk stockings getting closer and closer to his face, it was getting too tempting. Zhang Ye's mind suddenly thought of something. He remembered the items that he drew from the Consumption Category earlier – Red String of Fate. The instructions were rather clear, but he wouldn't know what the effect really was if he did not use it.

Try?

He had to try!

Dong Shanshan did not pay attention to him as she was busy clearing the documents on her desk.

Zhang Ye opened his game ring's inventory and took out a Red String of Fate. As he was picking up the pen beside her leg, he took the Red String of Fate and rounded it around her ankle. Then, he pretended to not have picked up the pen the first time and with a quick flick of his finger, made the Red String of Fate into a knot. With a pull, the Red String of Fate was now tied to Dong Shanshan's ankle.

Zhang Ye could feel and see the Red String of Fate.

However, Dong Shanshan could not see it nor feel it. She did look at him with her peripheral vision, maybe annoyed at why he was taking so long.

Zhang Ye had by now already picked up the pen and got back up.

Dong Shanshan returned her gaze back onto her computer, as she typed and did work.

Zhang Ye heaved a sigh of relief that he wasn't discovered. He crossed his right leg up as he looked down at it and proceeded to tie the Red String of Fate around his own ankle too. The material of the Red String of Fate was very special as it could extend at will. When it was tied onto Dong Shanshan's ankle, it did not have much length, but as he pulled it, he discovered that it could be extended indefinitely and that was how he managed to tie it to his own ankle. The moment it was tied, Zhang Ye felt a numbness in his ankle. It felt like pins and needles though it disappeared very quickly. He looked to his side and saw Dong Shanshan's brows flinching and then curiously bending down to scratch her ankle.

"Red String of Fate is in effect!"

"Marriage Affinity is now linked!"

That's it? What kind of effect will it have?

Zhang Ye had familiarized himself with his work and had nothing else to do, so he started waiting to see the effect.

Ten minutes passed.

There was no changes of any sort.

Zhang Ye looked over to Dong Shanshan frequently but did not see how their Marriage Affinity had been linked.

At this moment, Dong Shanshan suddenly put down her mouse and stood up. She took her cellphone and a tissue pack with only two tissues in it, then walked out slowly. Judging by the direction, she was probably headed for the bathroom.

After a long while, Dong Shanshan still had not returned.

Zhang Ye looked at his watch hoping to leave work earlier. The Red String of Fate's effect was likely to be slower, unlike the Cupid Sachet which was almost

immediate. The effect experiment was probably not going to have any results today?

As he was thinking, his cellphone vibrated!

Zzi, zzi. It was a message from the school belle!

Dong Shanshan: Zhang Ye, are you busy?

Zhang Ye replied: No, what's the matter?

Chapter 226: Stuck in the Ladies'!

The school belle had encountered a problem!

She actually forgot to take her sanitary pad!

Zhang Ye sat there like a wax figure. He struggled for a long time before replying: Wait a little longer, I'll see if anyone comes along. I will help you look for someone here.

Dong Shanshan: OK.

Zhang Ye looked all over the place to ensure that no one was looking at him. Luckily, their desks were situated at a corner. Zhang Ye quietly shifted his body sideways and stretched his arm out into Dong Shanshan's bag to take out a sanitary pad. He also took a new pack of tissues before placing her bag back in its original spot. Then, he quickly stuffed the sanitary pad into his pocket.

Look for someone?

But how should he put it?

This issue was a little difficult to handle!

Through some consideration, Zhang Ye believed that this matter was to be kept a secret from the other male colleagues. After all, it didn't sound good. Dong Shanshan wanted her face after all. And if he become a loudmouth, it would cause adverse effects. Hence, he had to consider which of the female colleagues did not find Dong Shanshan a nuisance. She had to be tight-lipped too, and she would not go around spreading "Host Dong didn't bring sanitary pads to the bathroom". With this in mind, Zhang Ye began to size up each and every female colleague.

This woman? No, she looks a little mean. It's not easy to speak to her.

That woman? No too. Looks like a person who likes to gossip.

But somehow, just as Zhang Ye could not decide who to ask for help from, Deputy Director Wang walked in with a few people, “All our female comrades, please put your work aside. Because there are too many people, tomorrow’s medical examination has been brought forward. The vehicle taking us there has already arrived, so please proceed downstairs.”

“It’s today?”

“Yeah, but we’ve already had our lunch.”

The women muttered some words.

Wang Xiong said, “It doesn’t matter if you’ve had lunch. It’s mainly listening and vision tests. Old Chen, please get the ladies organized and let’s go.”

A middle aged woman stood up and signalled for everyone to head downstairs.

In the space of a few minutes, all of the women had cleared the office.

Zhang Ye was dumbfounded. F**k, it can’t be so coincidental, right? The school belle was still waiting for help!

Suddenly, he thought of something. Can this be the damn Red String of Fate taking effect? What was marriage affinity? Marriage Affinity basically meant that two people in the world who did not know each other could get to know each other by chance. Then, through a series of incidents, they would become attracted to each other. When people mention things like “the two of us are really fated”, that is basically what they mean. So the Red String of Fate’s effect was like this as well? It creates some tiny incidents to make two people become closer, this was what’s called affinity? Otherwise, how could the incidents happening right now be explained? Your sister, at least leave a female colleague behind for me! There’s not even 1!

Di Di.

A message came in again.

Dong Shanshan: There’s still no one.

Zhang Ye: There’s really no one, even the office is empty. All the women have gone for their medical examination.

Dong Shanshan: ... Then, I will thank you first? Please bring it over for me.

There's only me in the toilet, so you can come in without worries.

Zhang Ye: Why can't I leave it at the door for you?

Dong Shanshan: It's already dripping down my legs, I don't even dare to pull my skirt down. How do you expect me to go out to take it myself?

Dripping down her legs? This description left much to his imagination and Zhang Ye nearly had a nosebleed. He snorted a little before replying: Alright then.

Dong Shanshan: Remember not to be seen by others. Thanks, I will buy you a meal sometime.

Keeping his cellphone, Zhang Ye stood up to go to the toilet. He walked out and there was not a sight of a woman. The office staff was reduced by half and all the men were working. No one paid any attention to Zhang Ye.

At the toilet entrance.

Walk straight in, you'd see a mirror. The ladies' was on the left while the gents' on the right.

Zhang Ye being careful, he went into the gents' to take a look first. He was afraid that there was someone inside and if they saw him coming out from the ladies', he would be totally embarrassed. Okay, there was no one inside, so he came out and then, he hesitantly took a few steps back and forth towards the ladies'. He did not have the courage to go in, so he coughed loudly.

Di Di.

Message: Are you here? Was it you coughing?

Zhang Ye replied: I'm here.

Dong Shanshan: Come in. It's the 3rd door from the inside.

Zhang Ye clenched his jaws and looked back once more, making sure there was no one around before he stepping into the ladies'. He quickly walked towards the rows of cubicles.

The 3rd door?

But there are 2 rows! Which 3rd door was it?

“Where are you?” Zhang Ye whispered softly.

“In here...” Dong Shanshan’s voice came from behind one of the doors.

“Oh, coming, coming.” Zhang Ye quickly went over.

With a creaking sound, the cubicle door opened slightly. Through the gap of the ajar door, Zhang Ye could see one of Dong Shanshan’s leg. The lower half of her leg was swathed in black stocking. Her thigh was revealed, showing her milky white skin as the pantyhose was already half off, “Don’t look. Pass it to me.”

A hand reached out.

Zhang Ye couldn’t help but look, otherwise how was he going to put the thing in her hand? Besides, he couldn’t see Dong Shanshan’s eyes between the door opening. That meant that she could not see his face either and wouldn’t know if he was looking or not. Zhang Ye didn’t hold back and looked inside a few times. The view was extremely tempting, but he could not see clearly nor was there much to see. A leg, a half hanging pantyhose and a high heel. That was it. Zhang Ye took the sanitary pad and pack of tissues out of his pocket and placed them on her outreached hand.

“OK.” Zhang Ye said.

“Thanks.” Dong Shanshan said.

But at this moment, footsteps could be heard approaching from outside the door. It was the sound of high heels and the footsteps were hastily coming towards the ladies’!

Zhang Ye had goosebumps all over his body. F**k, don’t give me this sh*t! What kind of trouble do you want to get me into!? His face went pale. If he was seen by someone, he wonders what kind of rumours would start flying. Teacher Zhang Ye sneaked into the female toilet? Teacher Dong and Teacher Zhang’s secret meeting in the female toilet? Zhang Ye knew his reputation had not been too good anyway, but never for such a wretched deed. And this time, it would even affect Dong Shanshan’s reputation!

“Teacher Dong?”

“Teacher Dong, are you in the toilet?”

The woman called out twice, she almost came in by now!

In the nick of time, the 3rd cubicle door opened and a hand reached out to pull Zhang Ye in!

Zhang Ye stumbled not knowing what just happened and he ended up inside!

With a bang, the cubicle door closed and was locked from the inside!

Zhang Ye looked sideways and made eye contact with Dong Shanshan who was half sitting, half squatting. He took a deep breath as his face turned red. Dong Shanshan was probably embarrassed too, but she did not blush. With a swipe of her hair, she used it to cover her face.

Bathroom!

It was the bathroom again!

They were in the same situation as when they were on the plane. So it has happened again? What sort of Fengshui hotspot was a bathroom? Why do we always f**king end up in here!

But regardless of the resentment, Zhang Ye still had a feast for his eyes. He did not need to stare at the school belle deliberately. She was right smack in his field of vision. The toilet bowl was splattered with red liquid, quite a lot in fact. The trash bin was also littered with blood stained tissues. Looking back at Dong Shanshan, because she was in a squatting position, her thighs and hips were together. It squeezed her perky posterior into a fuller shape. A large white area was revealed. The dark blue short skirt was already lifted up to her waist. It did not have the ability to cover her. The black stockings on her legs had also been pulled down her thighs. They were like a wall preventing Zhang Ye from seeing inside.

The two of them were totally embarrassed.

Dong Shanshan coughed continuously to clear her throat.

Zhang Ye flurriedly reacted and turned his head to the side. It was not good to keep looking.

“Teacher Dong, is that you?” The woman had come in.

“It’s me. You are... Zhang Han?” Dong Shanshan replied to the outside.

The woman laughed, “You can even recognise me this way? No wonder you are in the hosting line, your memory towards sound is too good. Oh right, you should hurry up. The medical examination has been brought forward, everyone’s queuing up to board the vehicle. There’s still a few people left so the leader asked me to come look for you.”

Dong Shanshan said, “I have an upset stomach, maybe you shouldn’t wait for me.”

“Don’t say that, we all have to do the medical examination somehow. If you don’t go today, you will still have to go another time. It will be more difficult to submit your claims if that happens. Don’t worry, it’s not actually that urgent. I will wait for you here.” The woman stood outside waiting.

Dong Shanshan immediately replied, “Don’t wait for me, you go ahead. I will be right with you.”

“It’s fine, we are all colleagues, it’s not a big deal.” The woman said with a sense of loyalty.

Zhang Ye was on the verge of cursing. He thought to himself; why she did not arrive earlier or later? Why now at this critical time!? If she was here a minute earlier, this bro would not have needed to come into the ladies’ and could have just passed you the things! Thinking of this, Zhang Ye subconsciously turned around to give Dong Shanshan a signal. But he saw something he shouldn’t have seen, so he quickly turned around.

Zhang Han started chatting with her, “Is that Teacher Zhang Ye your classmate?”

“Yes, we were in the same class.” Dong Shanshan replied.

Zhang Han said, “Is he really that famous in Beijing? It don’t seem so. He doesn’t even have the looks of a host. It’s the first time I’ve seeing such a hooligan host.”

Holy sh*t!

She’s now even thrashing my front yard!

You are now even setting me up?

Zhang Ye endured it. There was no other way except enduring it. They were under the same roof, and it was a roof that had quite a stench. The smell in the loo could not be said to be fragrant, but Dong Shanshan's perfume was mixed in it.

Dong Shanshan said to her in a squatting position, "Teacher Zhang Ye has a honest disposition. He dares to say anything on his mind. He also dares to do anything. He was the same back in school. He never schemed, so the people who liked him liked him a lot, while those who hated him would hate him so much that they would ground their teeth whenever they saw him."

Zhang Ye looked up. So the school belle had such an evaluation of him? She sure knows me!

"Is that so? I couldn't tell." Zhang Han said and then pinched her nose. As the deed was a bit odd, she said, "I think I'll wait for you by the bathroom's entrance. Hurry up, would you?"

"Almost done."

"Alright."

The sound of footsteps trailed away and stopped by the bathroom's entrance.

Without her gone, Zhang Ye did not dare to leave. He whispered, "What do we do?"

"I'll go out first. You can leave once we're gone." Dong Shanshan whispered back. 'Si!' The sound of something tearing could be heard. She must have taken out the sanitary pad. "Have some conscience. Don't turn back."

"Okay." Zhang Ye answered.

There was non-stop sounds coming from behind him.

There was the sound of high heels moving around as well as the sounds of the sanitary pad rubbing across a surface.

About half a minute passed and then Dong Shanshan said from behind, "I'm done."

Zhang Ye turned back and saw Dong Shanshan adjusting her deep blue colored short skirt. With a press of the flush button, the water began gushing out.

The atmosphere was extremely ambiguous.

Zhang Ye looked at her and really wanted to hug her, but he didn't dare to.

Dong Shanshan stared at him with a charming look, "I'm leaving first. Be careful yourself."

"Alright." Watching Dong Shanshan open the stall's door, Zhang Ye took another deep breath. He was afraid that blood would gush out of his nose because he had seen too much today.

.....

"Sorry for the long wait, Zhang Han."

"It's alright. Let's go Teacher Dong."

"Alright. Eh, your clothes are quite pretty. Where did you buy them?"

"Hur Hur, is it so? My boyfriend gave it to me last week."

"You sure are blessed. I don't even know if my other half has been born."

.....

The sounds of their conversation and footsteps faded away.

Zhang Ye heaved a sigh of relief. Sticking his head out to look around, he quickly left the ladies', and returned to his desk to work.

Red String of Fate!

You nearly took away my life!

Chapter 227: The Pioneer of Talk Shows in this World!

Evening.

Outside the hospital specified by the office.

As time passed, male and female staff members of Weiwo company's gradually left the hospital. Thirty minutes after the female staff had departed, the male comrades were ushered onto a bus to be sent in for their medical checkup. Even Zhang Ye, who had only started work that day, was no exception. The medical examination for the female comrades was probably more complex and had a couple additional tests, so everyone exited around the same time.

Once outside, Zhang Ye ran into Dong Shanshan again. The Red String of Fate was still connected to their ankles; it had yet to break. However, when he recalled the incident in the restroom earlier that afternoon, Zhang Ye was too embarrassed to attempt to create conversation with her.

"Teacher Dong." A colleague walked out of the hospital. It was Ah Qian, the colleague who didn't sit too far from Zhang Ye.

Dong Shanshan turned around with a smile, "Ah Qian."

Ah Qian asked, "Have you completed your medical checkup?"

"Yes, I just finished." Dong Shanshan said.

"Then let's go. I will take you to search for an apartment." Ah Qian said.

"Sure, then I'll treat you to dinner." Dong Shanshan said.

Ah Qian anxiously replied, "Ah, but you arrived just yesterday, it should be my treat instead. You can treat me next time. Hur hur."

Dong Shanshan then walked off with Ah Qian, but the school belle saw Zhang

Han as Ah Qian hailed a taxi. She immediately greeted her and the three of them burst into conversation. Probably by Dong Shanshan's invitation, Zhang Han entered the taxi with them.

Shortly after, the taxi disappeared around a corner.

Seeing that none of his colleagues around him spoke to him, he too hailed a taxi and went home.

.....

Near the Bund.

In an upscale district.

As he walked past a fountain and some rock features, Zhang Ye was busy admiring the view. It felt as though the tiredness from his day had dissipated. Living in this sort of environment, Zhang Ye could only think that his status had changed to that of a high status hoolig ... high status person!

At home.

The temperature was a little chilly.

There was no central heating in Shanghai, so you could only turn the air-conditioner on manually. Zhang Ye turned on the heater and went to shower. He then went to the master bedroom and sat at the writing desk and went online. This was his usual routine each day, to check the internet for news each day. Now that he was a WebTV host, he would have to pay even more attention to the current events.

Weiwo Video.

On the 'WebTV Videos' page.

There was a banner ad, which had Zhang Ye photo on it. The words — "Congratulations Teacher Zhang Ye on joining WEBTV Channel" was emblazoned on it. This ad was most likely put up just today. Yesterday's was probably news of Dong Shanshan joining, probably lasting just for the day. If it was the publicity about anyone else's recruitment, it might not have attracted much attention. After all, those who became WebTV hosts were usually not very famous, as a television station would still be the choice destination for most hosts, but Zhang

Ye was different; he had been on Central TV news two days ago. That publicity still had not died down yet; therefore, this small banner was noticed by many people!

On discussion forums, Tieba and Weibo, every platform had people uploading the banner.

“The latest news has confirmed that Teacher Zhang Ye has gone to work at an online TV channel!” a Weibo account named “20 Years of Professional Newsleaks” posted.

“Wow, there’s finally some news of Teacher Zhang? Great, we can watch his programs again!”

“I’ve been waiting for such a long time, too. Now, I’m really looking forward to seeing what type of program Teacher Zhang will come up with this time. Will it be another historical program? A copy of ‘Lecture Room’?”

“That can’t be; this is online TV we’re talking about.”

“Right. Historical programs are not suitable here.”

“I was guessing that Zhang Ye went to work for Shanghai Television Station. How did it become online television? Even though such kinds of fixed broadcast methods on such a medium is very popular these days, does it suit Zhang Ye? Anyway, I don’t expect much from him. He’s someone who spoke about history and it’s even serious history. If he were to be an online broadcaster, isn’t that forcing himself to death? It’s all about youngsters in this medium. Even if you can present history very well and in an intriguing way, the other programs are all still entertainment programs. How can you fight on even ground with them? Sure, even if you were to host an entertainment program, too, your field of expertise would have changed; that’s even worse!”

“Right. I’m also a little worried.”

“Just what sort of program will he come up with?”

“We will know in a few days.”

A lot of the fans began to worry, as they could see the difficulties that Zhang Ye would soon face.

Of course, there were also those who discredited Zhang Ye.

“Zhang Ye can’t make it anymore. His talent has run out and he won’t be able to produce any good programs anymore!”

“Right. He was only okay speaking when he talked about the Three Kingdoms, but he can’t do well for other topics. Let’s wait for him to make a fool of himself. At present, Weiwo Video can be considered to be a big player in this industry, why would they bring Zhang Ye in? This move was really too lousy! Zhang Ye doesn’t have the looks and he can only depend on that mouth of his; what use is that? With just his mouth, how could he be suitable for the WebTV environment? The other newly joined host though is rather nice. She looks good and she has a sexy figure. This is what I’d call a good move. Any program hosted by her would gain attention, but what does that Zhang Ye have?”

“Why are you discrediting Teacher Zhang so badly?” a Zhang Ye fan asked.

Another fan from his Tieba said, “Since when has Teacher Zhang Ye been logically understood! You are too naive. I very much look forward to Teacher Zhang’s new program, I’m pretty sure I won’t be disappointed!”

Another female Tieba fan angrily said, “Can only depend on his mouth? Yes, Teacher Zhang Ye is not handsome, nor does he have a good body, but so what? Teacher Zhang Ye has depended on that mouth of his ever since his debut. In the past, it was like this. In the future, it will still be like this, too! All of you, just wait! Watch and see how Teacher Zhang Ye uses his mouth to become famous throughout the country! When that happens, which one of you will still dare let out a fart!”

The person who discredited Zhang Ye earlier said, “There’s a brainless fan upstairs!”

The girl replied, “Indeed, I am Teacher Zhang’s brainless fan! Bite me!”

.....

There were also some news reports of Zhang Ye’s career move. There was no lack of local Shanghai news reporting on this.

“Zhang Ye joins Weiwo Video. Will the ratings legend continue?” — The report was written this way: In Beijing, Zhang Ye had created a listenership legend at

the radio station. He had broken the midnight segment's historical ratings and then he jumped ship to work at Beijing Television Station, where his new historical segment broke local television ratings for similar historical segments. The ratings far exceeded the other historical segments. It was worth noting that they were not even worthy of competing with his results, as the disparity of the gap was just too much. This time, him moving to Weiwo Video would likely see him take up a role as a WebTV host. I can't help but ask... Will his legend continue?

Some felt it would.

But a majority of people did not feel so.

Several news posts were now intensely being discussed.

.....

After reading for over an hour, Zhang Ye lit a cigarette and started smoking. The fans' expectations and encouragement put him under a lot of pressure. For those who doubted and denied him, Zhang Ye could actually understand why they would act that way. He was after all inexperienced and didn't have outstanding results. "Late-night Ghost Stories" dazzled? "Lecture Room" was outstanding? It was not wrong, but when compared to those famous veteran hosts, he was not even close. Those famous hosts, at the very least, had already done 6 to 7 programs and their ratings were all improvements compared to the last. They also broadcast on satellite TV and reached the whole country. Zhang Ye's achievements could not even compare. His previous two programs even had a great deal of limitations. Whether it was ghost stories or historical lectures, they basically did not have big audiences.

What should he choose for his new program?

This was a problem that constantly vexed Zhang Ye.

The program had to meet the need of catering to the younger audience of WebTV, but also had to have substantial entertainment value. It had to cater to the masses even more. There had to be a guarantee that many episodes could be broadcast over a long period of time.

No matter how he thought about it, the only program that seemed to meet

these requirements was — a Talk Show!

This was an entertainment culture that came from foreign countries. Late night Talk Shows had more than six decades of history. Overseas, the format of Talk Shows typically had interviews and individual stand-up comedy segments. It discussed politics or sex, so it was not appropriate for the People's Republic of China. Hence, the Chinese Talk Shows in Zhang Ye's world had their own flavor. They formed a new format that matched the country's conditions and ideology. However, the core was not much different from Western style Talk Shows.

They were all Talk Shows.

A host with just his mouth!

However, Zhang Ye had never made the decision to do a Talk Show. It was not that he lacked the ability, but he believed that he was not as good as the Talk Show masters of this world. If he used the segments from his world, many of them had to deal with real-life current events or movies or novels. For example, if he used "Whatever you believe or not, I trust in it", how many people here would understand it? He definitely needed to delete and revise portions of it as this world did not have such works or origin stories. The segment would naturally not be funny. so it was a bit more trouble to produce it. Besides, this world also had its jokes and segments. He believed that he was unable to compete with those Talk Show hosts who had already honed their trade over time. After all, Zhang Ye was still unfamiliar with many things of this world.

Let's check it first.

He first wanted to see the programs of the Talk Show masters of this world.

Zhang Ye began searching the words "Talk Show" in Chinese with a learning attitude, and then... then he was stunned. There was no such word in the search results! He refused to have his beliefs shaken and searched in English, only to find a translation of the words. It was even translated individually, "talk" and "show"!

After more than ten minutes of searching, Zhang Ye was surprised to realize the reality. Be it foreign or domestic, this world didn't f**king have a program that was similar to Talk Shows. There was no such term on the internet, nor did anyone know what Talk Shows were!

Zhang Ye was overjoyed!

Great! He had picked a bargain!

Previously, he was afraid to compete with the many masters of Talk Shows , but now, from the looks of it, there was no need to worry about this anymore. If he pioneered a new art form, then he would be China's... No... The pioneer of Talk Shows in this world!

It's settled!

This shall be it!

*Talk Shows in the Chinese setting are somewhat similar to their foreign counterparts. One of the Talk Shows that will be mentioned in upcoming chapters can be watched here. It began airing in 2012. The earlier part of the series began with the host, Wang Zijian only doing comedy monologues or stand-up comedy throughout the whole show. It was only later did they begin inviting guests.

Chapter 228: Living with the School belle!

The program format was decided.

Then what program should it be?

A foreign one? One from domestic television? Or the ones on the internet?

There were too many Talk Show programs in Zhang Ye's world. A few years before the world was changed, this type of program was too popular. There were many choices, but from the popularity and particular content of the programs, there were very few choices. He was thinking of a broadcasting format that suited web video. Also considering that he would be the first person to suggest a Talk Show, he had to try his best to choose a traditional Talk Show format that suited the tastes of the locals. He could not choose those pseudo Talk Shows as the precedent. In that case, there was only one option that was the best.

When he thought of this, Zhang Ye had already opened the interface to the game ring. Looking at his overall Reputation points, he was counting his blessings that after obtaining the "Difficulty Adjustment Dice", he stopped using his Reputation points. They could finally be put to use. He used the remaining Reputation points, as well as the Reputation points he gained from the past two days, to buy a total of ten "Memory Search Capsules". He wanted to remember more at one go!

He threw the capsules into his mouth.

He began searching his memory.

Zhang Ye recalled the date and time when he watched those programs himself. His consciousness was naturally brought back to that period under the help of the capsule.

One episode...

Ten episodes...

Twenty episodes...

Why did he need to remember so many at a go?

The reason was that many of the segments that were specific to his world could not be used. He could only use segments that were universal. Hence, he could not just follow the order from his world. He had to delete some and add some, so there was definitely no harm in recalling more episodes. When there wasn't enough segments for one episode, the other segments could be used to supplement the gaps. As long as the connections were done properly, there would not be a jarring feeling.

.....

8:40.

It was nearly 9.

Zhang Ye also regained consciousness after he had finished using the Memory Search Capsules. With a probe of his mind, he could recall a total of more than twenty episodes. Not one word was missing, as they were clearly embedded in his mind. He could even recite it backwards ad verbatim.

Growl.

His stomach began to protest.

Zhang Ye rubbed his belly and felt his hunger. He had not eaten ever since he returned home. He had even had his blood drawn at the hospital. And with the program decided on, his body and mind had completely relaxed, hence his hunger was even more pronounced. There wasn't much at home. Did he have to go out to eat something? Eh, wait a moment. What's happening to the Red String of Fate? Zhang Ye had his head down while looking for shoes to go downstairs. However, he saw the Red String of Fate at his ankle slowly changing in direction. Previously, it was pointing West all along. Clearly, Dong Shanshan was looking for a rental apartment in that direction. But now, the Red String of Fate was pointing directly downwards. As the Red String of Fate could penetrate anything, he could see it embedded in the floor tiles of his house.

It was pointing downwards?

What was this supposed to mean?

Soon, the Red String of Fate changed again. It started pointing a bit East and then slowly raised upwards. Shortly after that, the Red String of Fate turned parallel to the floor and pointed towards the door.

Ding Dong.

Ding Dong.

The doorbell sounded.

Zhang Ye went over and opened the door with his head filled with questions, "Ah, Dong Shanshan?"

The school belle was standing outside the door with the clothes she was wearing during the day. However, she was holding onto two luggage bags that Zhang Ye had seen her use at the airport.

Dong Shanshan flicked her hair charmingly, "Why? We haven't seen each other for only two or three hours, right? Why are you staring so widely? Don't you even recognize your old classmate?"

Zhang Ye said, "That's not it; I'm wondering about the reason why you are here? You know my address?"

Dong Shanshan winked, "Weren't your address and telephone number recorded by the company? My memory is pretty good, so before it was shelved away, I had scanned and remembered it." Saying that, she patted her luggage, "So? Are you letting your old classmate stand at the door? You aren't inviting me in?"

"Please enter." Zhang Ye moved sideways to let her in.

Dong Shanshan walked in and looked around, "Oh, your house is pretty big?"

Zhang Ye helped her carry the luggage in, "It's not bad. It's just an ordinary two bedroom apartment."

"It's in such a good spot in downtown, and the apartment is pretty big. It must at least be more than 10,000 Yuan a month, right? Hur hur. You sure are rich."

Dong Shanshan praised him.

Zhang Ye was still puzzled, "Didn't you go apartment searching?"

"I didn't find a good one." Dong Shanshan sighed and said, "Those that are near to the company are too expensive, nor are there one bedroom apartments. The cheapest two bedroom is already around 8,000 to 9,000. Those that are 4,000-5,000 are co-rental with other people. I even went to look at apartments that were farther away. There were one bedroom apartments for 3,000-4,000, but they are too far away. There will be traffic jams just commuting to work. It would take more than an hour, and up to two hours commuting to and fro. And in this line of work, it is inevitable to work overtime. If I get off work late in the night, how am I to go home? Without a car, it's also unsafe. So it definitely wouldn't do."

Zhang Ye smiled. "To think you are lacking in cash?"

Dong Shanshan rolled her eyes at him, and pulled out a napkin to wipe her forehead of the fine fragrant sweat. She had been tired out dragging her luggage all the way here, "I'm really lacking in cash. The money I saved up working in the Xishan province has been given to my parents, so as to let them lead a better life. So I didn't bring a lot of money for my trip to Shanghai. How can I compare to a rich guy like you? You should know about my family conditions, right?"

Zhang Ye had heard about it back in school. He knew that her family's financial condition was average. She wasn't much different from him. They were not from rich families, but their situations had not been as bad as going hungry, "Do you want to get some money from me to tide you over?"

Dong Shanshan chuckled, "You know I never borrow money from others. I'll spend how much I have. That has been my guiding principle. However...I really need help from you."

"Say it, please." Zhang Ye immediately said.

Dong Shanshan smiled slightly and pointed to her luggage, "Yesterday, I lived in a motel, but the motels around here are quite expensive. It's more than 300 a night. When I went to work, I did not carry on my stay at the motel. My luggage was stored at the front desk. I wanted to stay another night after I finished looking at apartments, but there were no more rooms. They had all been taken.

After looking around all day, I didn't find any cheap hotels either. So, I came to disturb you." After saying all this, she stood up and sized up the luxuriously renovated apartment. "Actually, I wanted to disturb you for a night, but your house looks pretty good. The renovations and the floor area are excellent. Isn't it a waste to live alone in a two bedroom apartment?"

Zhang Ye was stunned, "Ah? Ah, yes, it's quite a waste."

Dong Shanshan sexily pursed her lips to reveal a smile, "Then let's be housemates. You don't mind your old classmate staying here, right? Of course, I would not be staying here for free. How much is your rent? We can split the rent."

Zhang Ye subconsciously said, "It's 12,000 a month."

"So expensive?" Dong Shanshan smacked her lips, "Let's do it this way. I'll pay 4,000, and then, you can throw your clothes at me; I'll wash them for you."

Zhang Ye immediately said, "How can I agree to that? If you agree to stay, feel free to stay. It's nothing. There's no need for you to wash my clothes or pay."

Dong Shanshan pouted, "Then I'm leaving?"

"Heh, look at you. Do you need to go this far?" Zhang Ye said helplessly.

Dong Shanshan insisted, "I know you mean well, but..."

Zhang Ye was also insistent, "We have been old classmates for so many years; why stand on ceremony with me? Anyway, I will definitely not want your money." Knowing that the school belle was a bit tight on money, he naturally wanted to help her. Besides, Zhang Ye was dying to live with Dong Shanshan together. He would be living with a beauty together!

Dong Shanshan frowned, "You are so unthoughtful."

"It's you who are unthoughtful." Zhang Ye moved her luggage to the second bedroom, "Let's go."

"This definitely will not do."

Zhang Ye smiled with his eyebrows ticking upwards, "Do you know how to cook?"

Dong Shanshan was amused, “You are looking down on me? Then I must let you try it.”

“That’s good then. I’m starving now. I haven’t eaten yet.” Zhang Ye somewhat agreed to her suggestion of doing laundry and cooking. However, he naturally did not plan on letting her do the laundry.

“Sure, what do you want to eat?”

“Just something to fill the stomach. I’m not picky with food.”

“Then help me move my luggage. I’ll go downstairs to the supermarket to buy some food.”

.....

9:30 A.M.

Dong Shanshan did not change after coming back with food. She grabbed and wore an apron from her luggage bags. She rushed into the kitchen and closed the door. When she came out, there were already two dishes in her hands. One of them was fried chicken wings, sprinkled with some spices. The other plate was oil-dipped shrimp. No water was used; it was stewed in oil. It was extremely fragrant and it looked very good.

“Have a taste.” Dong Shanshan said confidently.

Zhang Ye was starving so he quickly picked up a pair of chopsticks and began eating, “Wow! Yes, yes, it’s delicious!”

Ring, ring, ring. Dong Shanshan’s phone rang. She turned her head sideways to Zhang Ye, “Don’t talk.” Then she picked it up with a smile, “Hello, Mom.”

On the other side, Mother Dong said, “Are you asleep yet?”

Dong Shanshan said, “Not yet. How is dad?”

“He will be discharged from hospital tomorrow. It’s just pneumonia, so it’s nothing much.” Mother Dong said, “How’s your work over there? Did you find a place to stay?”

Dong Shanshan smiled. “I found it. It’s near the Bund and close to the company.”

Mother Dong exclaimed, "The houses there are expensive. How can you be so wasteful?"

Dong Shanshan pointed at the fried chicken wings, motioning for Zhang Ye to try that dish. She said into the phone, "No, I'm living at an old classmate's house. I don't have to pay."

Mother Dong said attentively, "A man or woman?"

"Of course it's a woman." Dong Shanshan could lie at a moment's notice.

Mother Dong acknowledged and said, "That's good. Remember to thank her."

Dong Shanshan leisurely said, "I've already thanked her. We are eating supper now. She has a morning shift tomorrow, so she has to sleep early today. So I won't be talking anymore. Bye, Mom."

Seeing her hang up the phone, Zhang Ye sweated. He was wondering why all the beauties he met had something with their words. The Heavenly Queen's mouth was filled with daggers. She was completely different to different people. The landlady's mouth was venomous. She could be as damaging as she wanted with her words. As for the school belle's mouth, nothing she spoke was the truth!

Chapter 229: What is a Talk Show?

Beep, beep, beep!

The alarm rang. The day had just begun.

Zhang Ye kicked away his fluffy down blanket and switched off the alarm. He was still sleepy, so he rolled over and carried on lazing in bed. He didn't care if he was late for work.

Shortly after, there was a knock on his bedroom's door.

"Zhang Ye."

"...Huh."

"It's time to wake up. Hurry and get up."

"Got it. Let me sleep in a bit longer."

The door was not locked, so Dong Shanshan walked right in. She was dressed in professional attire. Today, she dressed in the style of a white-collared office lady. Her thick lipstick and the makeup on her face made her look sexy, as well as accentuated her curvaceous figure, regardless of the clothes that she wore.

Dong Shanshan poked him, "Breakfast is ready."

A fragrance wafted through the gap in the door. It smelled like porridge.

Zhang Ye opened his eyes tiredly and sniffed, "It smells so delicious."

"If you don't wake up, I'm going to eat it all." Saying that, Dong Shanshan walked out the room and closed the door behind her.

Zhang Ye stretched his back and quickly dressed himself and got out of bed. Thinking of Dong Shanshan waking him up... This scene reminded him of a young wife waking her husband. It made Zhang Ye feel his heart itch. He decided not to set an alarm in the future. He just needed to wait for the school belle to wake up

him up daily.

In the hallway, Dong Shanshan was preparing the utensils.

“Good morning.” Zhang Ye greeted her as he entered to the bathroom. He saw another cup beside his brushing mug. A purplish-red toothbrush was placed in it. Looking sideways, there were three new bath towels, as well as several facial skincare products. Zhang Ye did not know a thing about these. There was even a pink sanitary pad placed beside the toilet paper roll. They obviously all belonged to Dong Shanshan.

We really are living together.

The situation seemed pretty good. In the future, he could feast his eyes on a beauty walking around his home. Furthermore, the beauty was in charge of cooking. Was there anything more blissful than this new lifestyle?

Living with the school belle?

Just thinking about this made Zhang Ye feel incredulous!

When he came out after washing up, Dong Shanshan had already begun eating without him.

Zhang Ye pulled up a chair and sat down. He recalled something and went to his bedroom to grab it. He came out with a key in his hand. “This is the key to the house. It’s the spare one.”

“Alright.” Dong Shanshan took it and put it away. “Hurry and eat.”

“Alright.” Zhang Ye drank a mouthful of porridge. He repeatedly praised it.

Dong Shanshan smiled very happily, “Do you need to act so dramatically? Although my food isn’t horrible, it also isn’t that good. I’m only good at making a few dishes.”

Zhang Ye encouraged her, “No way; it’s especially tasty.”

When Dong Shanshan had finished eating, she said, “I’ll go to work first. Let’s not go together.”

“I understand. Go ahead then.” Zhang Ye said. They definitely could not let their colleagues know that there were living together. It would lead to negative

effects and bad rumors.

Before leaving, Dong Shanshan waved, “I’ll see you in the office shortly. Oh, yes. Just leave the dishes in the sink when you’re done. I’ll wash them when I return home tonight.”

The door closed and she was gone.

Suddenly, Zhang Ye felt a tingle around his ankle. This feeling felt very familiar. It was the numb sensation he felt when the Red String of Fate was activated after he had first tied it. With him suddenly feeling the sensation, he could not help but lower his head and saw the transparent Red String of Fate tremble before snapping with a slight sound. The Red String of Fate disappeared into thin air and became red strands of light. In the blink of an eye, nothing was left other than the system message from the game ring: [Red String of Fate No Longer In Effect]

Great, it had lasted for about half a day.

Zhang Ye was pretty pleased with an item like the Red String of Fate. Although his Marriage Affinity with Dong Shanshan lasted nearly a day, the time spent was like being on the edge of a blade. Their Marriage Affinity had clearly been pulled together. The incident in the bathroom and the matter of staying in his house had all closed the distance between him and the school belle, both psychologically and physically. They were only separated by a hallway. Hence, the Red String of Fate’s effects were very clear. Zhang Ye believed that if he did not use the Red String of Fate to tie their Marriage Affinity together, Dong Shanshan would definitely not have come to his house last night, nor would she have chosen to stay here. She would probably have found an apartment to stay at since Shanghai was so large. It was definitely possible to find something suitable and cheap with so many apartments available. Even if she didn’t manage to find one on such short notice, the motel that Dong Shanshan used would not have been fully booked. This was probably all based on the effects of the Red String of Fate.

Also, there was another point. Even though the Red String of Fate had broken and became ineffective, the “victory” it created did not lose effect. Dong Shanshan would definitely still live here!

This is a good thing!

There was another one left that could be used in the future!

After he finished his meal, Zhang Ye closed the door and left for work.

.....

Weiwo Headquarters.

WebTV department's office.

When Zhang Ye swiped his card, it was 8:55. He had barely made it to work on time. When he walked towards his desk, he heard people speaking to Dong Shanshan.

Ah Qian said hospitably, "I'll look for an apartment with you again tonight."

"There's no need. Hur hur. I already found a place to stay. Thank you." Dong Shanshan pulled out some specialties from home and passed it to him, "This was brought from my home. Have some."

Ah Qian felt flattered and said, "You didn't have to."

"You accompanied me to house hunt all of yesterday, and even treated me to a meal. I'm the one who feels bad. Take it. It's not that expensive either." Dong Shanshan pushed it to him.

Ah Qian said happily, "Alright. By the way, where are you staying?"

"Me?" Dong Shanshan began lying, "Seeing that the rent around here was so expensive and it's inconvenient to stay so far from here, I went to live with a relative."

Little Yu, who was sitting nearby, joined in the conversation, "You have a relative living near here?"

Dong Shanshan nodded, "That's right. A paternal elder cousin of mine. She has been in Shanghai for a few years now."

The female colleague, Zhang Han, said, "Staying at a relative's place is good. You can take care of one another. Renting a place with someone is troublesome and also unsafe. Shanshan, maybe you can invite us to your place as guests when your cousin isn't home?" Yesterday, when she went to the bathroom to search

for Dong Shanshan, she referred to her as Teacher Dong, but today her salutation had changed. Clearly, they were a lot closer now. Yesterday, it was Zhang Han who accompanied her to go house hunting, too.

A guest?

Go home?

Zhang Ye, who was about to sit down, slipped and nearly fell to the ground.

Dong Shanshan smiled receptively, "Alright. We'll find a day, but it definitely won't be in the near future. My cousin seldom travels." This goalpost was moved far away.

It was time to work.

People began to busy themselves.

Zhang Ye was already pretty familiar with work, and with no one giving him any tasks to complete, he could sit in front of the computer and do nothing. However, he was not sitting by idly. He could do something, even without having tasks assigned to him. Hence, he created a new document on the computer and began preparing his program proposal.

What should he name it?

What program name would be the most suitable?

After tapping on the keyboard a few times in deep thought, Zhang Ye rejected a few talk show program shows from his world. Things like "Tonight 80's Talkshow", "Weekly something Show" would not do. Zhang Ye was wondering if he should respect the orthodox talk show program names from the West, such as "Zhang Ye's Show"? No, this was the world's first talk show program, after all. If words were omitted, there would be more people who could not tell what it meant. It needed to be the full name!

Let's call it "Zhang Ye's Talk Show"!

Right. This was easy to tell at a glance!

As Zhang Ye was a talk show fan of his world, he had watched it often. Along with him being a professional broadcasting major, he knew a lot about Talk Show programs. He spent about an hour completing his proposal. It included the stage

layout, live audience, equipment requirements, funding application, and various other aspects. He listed them all out in detail. He found it very well done.

Elsewhere, Ah Qian had returned from outside. He was in charge of professional program planning in the WebTV department. Little Yu also had a similar job description. They were responsible for any proposals for, and the production of, new programs.

Ah Qian first found Dong Shanshan, “Teacher Shanshan, I’ve showed your proposal that we discussed yesterday to the Director. He’s okay with it and asked us to begin preparing.”

Dong Shanshan blinked, “That proposal for ‘Online Talents’?”

“Yes, it’s that one. Didn’t we reject one of the other ideas we discussed?” Ah Qian said.

Dong Shanshan smiled. “It’s good that it has been approved. These kinds of programs are pretty popular these days. We can also get some tailwind from it, too. However, the exact implementation still requires more consideration. Those talents aren’t easy to find, right?”

Little Yu chuckled, “It’s easy to find them. We just need to collate them online. There can’t be too many people applying for it, and they don’t have to be talented in a certain aspect. Something humorous would do, too. For example, I know that someone who can consecutively fart more than ten times in a row can be considered talented. It can also attract a lot of attention. Anyway, our WebTV is given more free reign, and is more open to topics than television stations.”

Dong Shanshan nodded, “Alright, then I’ll begin the preparations.”

“Alright. Leave the planning and implementation to us. I have even thought of the team to help you out.” Ah Qian said, acting very professional.

“Then I’ll trouble all of you.” Dong Shanshan smiled. “When the program is produced, I’ll treat everyone to a meal.”

Talent show?

There was such a thing here already?

Zhang Ye was no stranger to it. Although he had not seen such programs in

this world, they were clearly more or less similar. His world also had such a program for a very long time. Zhang Ye was feeling a bit regretful. He was wondering if this world did not have all sorts of programs. If not, then after he finished his talk show, he could flex his muscles and use the programs from his world. But now, it seems like.. it had been just a dream. Some programs had already appeared in the entertainment environment of this world.

It was impossible to not have anything. After all, their society was very similar, so there couldn't be too great of a disparity. Zhang Ye did not have that many loopholes to fill. For there not to be a talk show in this society's history was already extremely lucky for him. He did not think further and planned to research on it in the future. Furthermore, this world also had programs that did not exist in Zhang Ye's world. Hence, both worlds had their own things which Zhang Ye needed to slowly explore.

Let's not think about it too much!

First, he had to make the format of a talk show popular!

Zhang Ye began typing and modified the proposal on his computer.

At this moment, Ah Qian hesitantly looked at Zhang Ye after he had finished speaking to Dong Shanshan. He finally walked over and smiled. "Teacher Zhang, hello. I'm a part of the second program planning team of our department. You can call me Ah Qian." Be it income or their social status, program planning employees like Ah Qian and Little Yu were definitely lower than a host. The level of their jobs were incomparable, so he had to speak politely to Zhang Ye.

Of course, the other reason was that Zhang Ye looked to be someone with an "unpleasant" temper. Ah Qian was a bit fearful when speaking to Zhang Ye. He was afraid that he would end up being cursed at if he wasn't careful with his words. He was in charge of planning and definitely could not compete with a host in a swear battle. A host was someone who made a living with their mouth!

As for Zhang Ye? He was excited!

There was finally someone amongst his colleagues who came to speak with him!

Zhang Ye was nearly overflowing with tears. Over the past two days in the

department, not a single colleague had spoken to him other than the school belle. It made this fellow feel like he was playing a single-player game! Hence, from the looks of Zhang Ye, one could understand that people could temporarily not need others or need any exchange. However, people were, after all, social creatures; they would find it torturous if social activities and exchanges were cut off for a long time.

Zhang Ye held his hand and said, "Hello, Ah Qian."

Ah Qian nearly jumped up with fright. Man, you are way too enthusiastic. "Uh, hello, hello." Seeing this scene, his attitude towards Zhang Ye also changed. He was no longer that afraid. "Just now, when I went to Deputy Director Wang's office to submit the application for Teacher Shanshan's program, the Leader asked me if you had any thoughts on where to begin for your program, and I didn't know how to answer. Later, the Leader told me to tell you to look for him at 11. He will return after a meeting."

Zhang Ye looked at his watch, "It's soon. Alright, I'll be there in a moment."

Ah Qian blinked his eyes, "You already have some ideas for your program? Actually, I wanted to discuss with you about the new program yesterday. However, I heard that the situation regarding you and Teacher Shanshan was different. The higher-ups delegated the program's planning, production, and hosting to you?"

Zhang Ye acknowledged it, "Yes, that's what the contract said."

Ah Qian gave a wry smile, "This makes other so envious. Typically, a new web host would not be allowed to plan his own program, even if he were quite popular. It is usually created through a discussion with everyone, or by selecting a suitable proposal from the planning archives for submission. For you to have such freedom, it is something that I'm hearing for the first time in this company."

After a pause, he said, "Actually, it's not odd, too. I have specially watched your 'Lecture Room', and it was really well done. It managed to consider both the historical knowledge and interesting aspects of it together. It also had great synergy. I heard that the program was planned by you? Also, back then, the creative advertisement for the conservation of electricity was also planned and

produced by you? You are an expert in planning and much better than us. However, maybe the Leaders are not at ease to fully leave the planning to you, so I didn't dare to venture too deep yesterday. In front of you, I don't dare to act the expert." He euphemized his words and one could tell that he was trying to build a good relationship with Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye remembered that the Human Resource person who had been cursed away by him knew Ah Qian and company. He had even chatted with them. But from the looks of Ah Qian's attitude, it was unlikely that they had very close ties. They could chat, but their relationship wasn't that great.

Zhang Ye felt good being flattered, "Don't say that. Being a broadcasting host is just my profession. As for planning, that's just fun and games for me. I can't compare to you in terms of experience."

Both of them flattered each other.

This was what chatting meant.

When Little Yu noticed that Ah Qian had managed to look so friendly with the industry wonder, he also felt some pressure. He took the opportunity and also went over, "Teacher Zhang, I've long heard about your fame. Everyone calls me 'Little Yu', or calls me by my English name, 'Ca...'" When he spoke up to here, he suddenly recalled that Zhang Ye was an ultra-nationalist, so he quickly ceased, "Just calling me Little Yu would do. I'm also part of the second program planning team."

"Hello." Zhang Ye shook hands with him.

The two of them were very young. The trio were similar in age.

After a short while of chatting amongst the trio, Dong Shanshan joined in after finishing up her work. They began laughing amidst their chatting. The atmosphere was good.

"Aiyah." Little Yu looked at the time, "It's 11."

Zhang Ye got up, "Then I'll look for the Leader. By the way, how do I print something? I want to show Deputy Director Wang the plan."

Ah Qian exclaimed, "You have done it already?"

Zhang Ye said, "Yes, I just finished it."

"Wow, so fast?" Ah Qian felt dizzy hearing that, but without any hesitation, he helped Zhang Ye print out a copy from the computer.

Dong Shanshan and Little Yu also curiously came to take a glance.

Other than the title, they did not see anything, for the other words were too small.

Zhang Ye's Talk Show? What was this? The trio was stunned and were slow to react. Talk what? What sort of program was this? A show and dance?

.....

The Deputy Director's office.

Zhang Ye knocked on the door, "Leader."

"Come in." It appeared that Wang Xiong had just returned from his meeting. He was entrusting a task to an employee. When he saw Zhang Ye, he smiled. "Little Zhang, have a seat." After he was done giving instructions, the employee left and closed the door behind him. Wang Xiong then said, "I was looking for you about your new program. Although I know a good program requires a long period of planning and preparation, the number of clicks our WebTV has been receiving doesn't look optimistic. It has been continuously declining over the past few months. We lost quite a lot of market share. You can feel it from looking at the views on our website. It is also the reason why we headhunted you and Dong Shanshan. We want to make two new programs to compete with other WebTV sites, so it is quite urgent."

Zhang Ye said confidently, "Leader, I understand. Hence, I have already taken the time to prepare a program plan. Please take a look and give me your opinion." He took out a few pieces of A4 paper.

Wang Xiong was very surprised, "Oh? You are already done? Good, very good." Previously, when he saw Zhang Ye's posture, he thought that Zhang Ye wasn't diligent at work and wanted to reprimand him. Who knew that he was so hardworking and had already come up with a plan. Wang Xiong liked such employees. Compared to those employees who sucked up to their Leaders, the kind of people who were prepared for a rainy day before the Leader spoke was

naturally well-liked.

“Let me take a look.” Wang Xiong took it over.

Zhang Ye sat there, with an unflinching expression.

After a few glances, Wang Xiong was dumbfounded.

“Talk show?”

“Yes.”

“What’s a talk show?”

“It’s talk-show in English.”

“What is talk-show?”

“It’s a talk show.”

Wang Xiong, “...”

Your sister! Are you having tongue twisters with me?

Chapter 230: No One is Optimistic!

Wang Xiong finished reading the program's proposal patiently.

Zhang Ye, who was sitting opposite him, said, "A Talk-Show is a transliteration of talk show. As for why it's called this, yeah, it's just a name I came up with randomly. It mainly uses current affairs and is presented as a segment to the audience. For example, songs, movies, or a hot topic in society... All these can be used as material and made into an interesting segment to tickle the audience's funny bones. Yes, simply speaking, that's how it is."

Wang Xiong looked at him, as if to confirm that this was not a joke. After being sure that Zhang Ye was serious, he was speechless. "Isn't that a lecture-type program then? At most, you're adding properties of a news report and presenting it to the audience with some current affairs?"

Zhang Ye waved his hands, knowing that he did not understand, "It's not a lecture or a new program. Actually, this program's core and selling point is about being funny. The main motive is to make everyone feel relaxed. As for the usage of current affairs and news in the talk show, their authenticity is not really that important. Any rumors or online gossip can also be used. Whether it is speculation or twisting of facts, it does not matter at all. What we care about is how funny it is."

"Then it's like a variety show? A few hosts will keep making funny pranks and tease the invited guests to achieve a funny effect?" Wang Xiong asked.

Zhang Ye shook his head, "It's not that either. It will be me alone hosting, different from the traditional variety shows that you are talking about. I don't even need any invited guests, nor any outside help. Just give me a few dozen audience members and it will be good. There will not be any pranks or games, just people purely listening to me speak."

“Just you alone speaking?”

“Yes.”

“Listening to you tell jokes?”

“Yes.”

“Then isn’t that just a mono crosstalk?”

“It’s not that either. A mono crosstalk has a single theme. A talk show basically doesn’t need a theme. Even if there were a theme, it’s mainly just a directional theme. It’s not clear cut. It does not even need an opening or an ending; the segments can be presented as is. That’s very different from a mono crosstalk.”

Zhang Ye’s previous world had a very famous talk show host who once said that when he first did a talk show program, he did not give up on crosstalking. As his familiarity with talk show hosting deepened, he went back to doing crosstalks. It had become a mess during a performance. Only after he adjusted to doing both and changed some techniques was he able to do both talk shows and crosstalking. From this, it could be said that these two performance arts had unique concepts that specifically catered to their own audiences.

Wang Xiong said, “Maybe I am inexperienced, but I’ve never heard of such a program before. Are there similar programs in foreign countries?”

Zhang Ye replied, “Not yet.”

“Do you mean that this an original type of program created by you?” Wang Xiong said as he touched his forehead.

Zhang Ye nodded, “Yes. I have the confidence that I can make this program good.”

Wang Xiong looked down at the program proposal again. After being silent for a long time, he said to him, “Little Zhang, it’s not that I don’t trust your standards, but this sort of program style is too different and new. Do you think the audience can accept it? In any case, after reading this proposal, I am unable to accept it completely. Having a lot of joke segments together, could this support the program as a whole? It’s impossible. How can it be so simple! There were cases of such programs in the past which told short stories and jokes. But it

has been tried and tested and these programs have too many limitations. They can not hold the audience; it just doesn't have that sort of attraction. Telling jokes is still okay and telling them occasionally like variety shows is rather good, but to tell them constantly with the whole episode spent telling jokes... How do you expect the audience to watch that? Just half an episode would annoy them."

Zhang Ye had a wry smile, "Leader, like I said, a talk show is not purely about telling jokes. It incorporates other artistic forms and artistic charms."

"I can't approve this program proposal." Wang Xiong rejected.

Zhang Ye immediately said, "I've really been preparing this for a long time and I have the confidence and ability to make it....."

Wang Xiong interrupted him. He was very sure of his own judgment, and he said, "If it were such a kind of program, you might as well continue your historical lectures. Even though there will be some limitations due to the audience demographics, at least that won't go wrong. This talk show that you are now talking about is really too obscure. It won't become popular."

Zhang Ye instead replied, "It will definitely become popular!"

Wang Xiong looked at him, "Why don't you change it to something else?"

"I insist on this program." Zhang Ye was determined, "Maybe you don't feel what I feel because you have never seen a talk show's style and audience, therefore you cannot accept it. But that's okay; I can try it for a few episodes. Let's see how the program works out. If it really can't be accepted and the audience does not approve of it, you can axe the program."

Wang Xiong frowned, "You are so confident?"

"Yes," Zhang Ye replied calmly, "I've never felt this confident before!"

Wang Xiong had seen many hosts or program producers having their proposals rejected before. The programs that they came up with were definitely what they liked best and felt would become popular. Every time Wang Xiong rejected them, they would most definitely argue with reasoning, their emotions in an upheaval. They would keep telling Wang Xiong why and what's good about their program, speaking agitatedly and anxiously. That showed that they were in denial, but Zhang Ye's reaction made Wang Xiong look at him another time. Because he was

not agitated, but instead rather calm. He only simply told Wang Xiong — His program would definitely make it.

Slapping his palm on the proposal, Wang Xiong said softly, “What about this? You are not a rookie in terms of program and advertising planning, and you have produced some dazzling results. This was why the company dared to let you develop your own program. If you are indignant about it, I can submit the proposal to the higher-ups. You can return and wait for the news.”

“Alright. Thank you, Director Wang.” Zhang Ye did not say anything more before opening the door and leaving.

The moment that he left, Wang Xiong brought the document to his superiors. The WebTV department’s core was its web programs. It was the most important aspect of their department, so for such a new program’s decision and approval, he and a few Leaders were personally responsible for it.

.....

Outside.

Zhang Ye did not return to his office immediately and instead went to the bathroom. After rinsing his mouth and washing his face, he looked at his reflection in the mirror. His heart felt somewhat tangled in knots.

What if they did not approve it?

What if they believed that a talk show would not make it?

Few people had the guts to do a completely new program as they would think that if such a program could become popular, why would other television stations not think of it? Their ideologies were very conservative, so they were instinctively reluctant about new things. The more they worked, the more conservative they became. However, in this world, only Zhang Ye himself knew that the artistic format known as talk shows would definitely become popular, and it would be so popular that it would sweep both foreign and domestic markets. Some people would not even be able to sleep if they did not watch a talk show on a weekend night!

But how could he tell them that?

How could he tell them that he was from another world, and in that world of his, talk shows were extremely popular? That this art form had already been affirmed by the market?

Who would believe that!?

And he could not say it either!

Ten minutes later, Zhang Ye returned to the office from the bathroom.

Ah Qian came towards him and said, "Teacher Zhang, I was just looking for you. Just now the Director's secretary told me to inform you that you should go up to her office. Maybe it's about your program proposal."

"Alright." Zhang Ye went over.

Outside the door, he knocked.

Feng Guiqin's voice called out from inside, "Come in."

Zhang Ye pushed the door open and saw five people on the guest sofa. They were huddled around a table, looking at Zhang Ye's proposal. There was Feng Guiqin, the Head Director, Wang Xiong and some others that Zhang Ye did not know. They were likely Departmental Leaders.

"Little Zhang, take a seat." Feng Guiqin pointed to a small couch by the side. She then whipped out the document, "Is this your new program?"

Zhang Ye sat still, "Yes."

Feng Guiqin observed the people by her sides, "What do you guys think?"

A middle-aged man said, "Honestly, I'm quite disappointed. I can't see any core selling points or attractive power for this so-called talk show. We paid a high salary to invite Zhang Ye here, mainly because of his program planning ability and eloquence. However, this proposal is too pointless. I don't see a need to develop it."

Wang Xiong instead helped speak up for Zhang Ye, "Old Gu, it's not as bad as you said. It's just not that spectacular."

Old Gu said, "But it is too far from what I was anticipating. Look at 'Lecture Room'; that was one of the best history lecturing programs I have ever seen."

Another male in his thirties nudged his glasses and threw down the proposal in his hands, “The higher the expectations, the greater the disappointment. I am also not optimistic about this talk show. What’s the point of a program that just tells jokes? A few people might think that it’s not bad after a cursory scan, but it would not be able to maintain their attention for the long-term. It could end up with many of the audience members not even paying attention. Isn’t this just plagiarizing online jokes? What technical content would there be? The copyright itself is a problem. If someone manages to accuse us of plagiarism, and we go to court, what do we do about the negative influence?”

Zhang Ye explained, “It’s not plagiarism. My segments are definitely new.”

Old Gu said, “How many new segments can you alone come up with? How many episodes can you do it for? Besides, let’s ignore the problem. Your program itself has a flaw.”

The male in his thirties said, “The crux of the issue is what is the key attraction of this program? There are no hunks, nor are you using babes. Just you alone telling jokes? Can’t the audience just go to a compilation of jokes on the internet? Why would they listen to your program? Am I right, Zhang Ye?”

You even asked me ‘am I right’?

Right, your great grandpa!

You guys just echo each other and disapprove of it completely!

Finally, the person said, “Are we right?”

Zhang Ye was irritated. He said a phrase embedded deep in his memory. It was Director Feng Xiaogang’s words who used it against his Leaders who kept criticizing him when they came to check on a gala’s programming. Zhang Ye said to the two, “The opinions of the Leaders, I definitely heard it and would definitely enforce it, but if you have to make me say that what you say is right, then that is impossible! You cannot deny the basic judgment I have as an artist!”

Old Gu frowned, “You’re feeling resentful?”

“Alright, cut it out.” Feng Guiqin said, “Although I’m not optimistic about such a program without any precedent, it is because I am unable to tell if this program is good or bad. As it is a first, the entire world does not have any experience with

such a program. In my opinion, we can let Little Zhang have a go at it. However, it is limited to one episode. Let's record one episode before we discuss this any further. If the viewership count does not hit 500,000, then sorry, the program will definitely be axed."

Old Gu said, "Director, there's no need to try it, right?"

The male said, "Besides, it is a waste of resources. Setting up the stage and the advertisements all cost money."

Feng Guiqin said, "That's why we are only trying out one episode. We must give youngsters who dare to experiment a chance after all. Let's settle on this. Little Zhang, we are awaiting your results?"

Zhang Ye was quite touched. He never expected the boss to agree to it, "Don't worry. I will not disappoint you!"

Great!

As long as he could produce the program, he would be able to open everyone's eyes, letting them know what a talk show really was!

Chapter 231: I am Zhang Ye, I speak for myself!

Afternoon.

At the unit's canteen.

During the meal, groups of two or three people from the WebTV department would eat together. During this lunch break, they would discuss Zhang Ye's new program.

"Hey, did you hear about it?"

"About what?"

"About Zhang Ye's new program!"

"Heh, I was just about to bring that up. I heard about it, too!"

"What's the situation? What's up with the newcomer, Teacher Zhang?"

"He submitted a new program proposal. All of you know that he's different from a typical host. The Leader has already granted him the right to plan his own program. But guess what program he came up with in the end? Don't even try to guess, for you would never get it because it doesn't exist in the country, no, the whole world.

Zhang Ye came up with something called a 'talk show', where he stands on stage and speaks to the audience. I was wondering, just anyone with some intelligence would know that such a program would not be interesting, right? Just like those interviewing programs, there would at least have to be a guest. It seems like he doesn't even plan on having guests and will be speaking by himself!"

"Come on, stop bullsh*tting."

“What do you mean, bullsh*tting? It’s true.”

“Zhang Ye was involved in the planning of ‘Lecture Room’, right? That program was good in quality. How can an experienced planner make such a low-level mistake?”

“You really don’t believe it?”

“Old Zhang, I can bear witness. It’s true.”

“That’s right. Many people now know of this so-called ‘talk show’, and what is unbelievable is that the Leader has approved it. It seems like they are letting Zhang Ye try out one episode. If the hits do not reach the required amount, it will be axed. I’m really wondering why the Leaders allowed him to create such a mess.”

“Just letting him try an episode already illustrates the Leaders’ attitude. They definitely aren’t optimistic about it, or they would at least let it broadcast for more than ten episodes. You can’t axe a program so quickly.”

“Hur hur. I really wonder what Zhang Ye is thinking.”

“He’s finished. Once the program is released, all the reputation that he had accumulated in the past will vanish.”

“That’s right. How is he going to maintain his viewership legend? After the program is broadcast, I even wonder if he can keep his job.”

“I could already tell that he was an imposter without any real abilities.”

There was no stop to these discussions. People used the term “talk show” as a topic of discussion during meals.

.....

Office area.

Zhang Ye returned from lunch.

Dong Shanshan was already seated at her desk. After seeing her old classmate, she looked up and said, “You are really planning on doing that talk show?”

Zhang Ye said, “Yes, of course.”

Ah Qian came over out of concern. He said, as if he was at a loss whether to

laugh or cry, “Teacher Zhang, what is that program of yours actually? It’s... It’s too innovative, isn’t it?” He tried to be tactful with his words.

Zhang Ye had already responded to this question too many times today. He did not explain and just smiled. “You will know when you see it.”

Dong Shanshan asked, “The program has been decided upon?”

Zhang Ye said, “It’s decided. It will be recorded and broadcast next week. The site requirements and related stuff have all been requested.”

Ah Qian and Little Yu looked at each other and did not speak another word. They too were not optimistic about Zhang Ye’s program. Talk show? What the heck was that!?

Dong Shanshan glanced at him, “Zhang Ye, look at the internet.”

“On the internet? What’s that supposed to mean?” Zhang Ye asked.

“You’ll know once you get online.” Dong Shanshan pointed to her computer screen.

Zhang Ye sat at his computer and moved the mouse. He understood the moment that he took a look. It seemed like there was a leak in the news. Several media entities had already reported on the matter on the internet.

“Zhang Ye—A person whose fame got to his head! ”

“Weiwo’s bad move, Zhang Ye’s utterly terrible move! ”

“What a pity. I have always been optimistic about Zhang Ye; however, according to insider sources, Zhang Ye’s new program is an original program—a talk show. As for what a talk show is, I’m not very sure. According to the informant, Zhang Ye’s program is for him to tell jokes on stage alone, while the audience listens. I can’t help but ask, what’s wrong with Zhang Ye? Have his past accomplishments gone to his head? Why would there be such a bizarre idea!? Would anyone watch such a program? It is actually being broadcast next week?”

A few news articles had been published, and immediately the people who were keeping Zhang Ye on their radar erupted into an uproar!

“It can’t be?”

“It must be fake news, right?”

“With so many people breaking the news, it has to be real.”

“F**k, history lecturing is fine, but why is Zhang Ye telling jokes?”

“I can finally tell that Zhang Ye became famous all because of luck. He doesn’t know a thing. He’s finished. His reputation is completely ruined.”

“He’s too young.”

“Not only is he young, he’s arrogant!”

“The entire world doesn’t have such programs, but you have to do it? Isn’t this a joke? Only you are smart, while others are fools? Why didn’t others do such a program if it was so good?”

They were full of criticism and doubts online!

Even Zhang Ye’s fan club was the same!

A newcomer who had just joined the fanclub said, “You guys have fun here. I’m leaving the fanclub. If I want to hear jokes, can’t I go to a joke website? Must I listen to you?”

Another newcomer said, “If this is what Z is going to do, then I’m dropping out, too.”

“What jokes are there to say? And it’s a program done by himself? Is there such a need? Teacher Zhang, I still support you, but can you change programs!?” a fan said.

A junior moderator said without much confidence, “Teacher Zhang definitely has something hidden up his sleeves.”

The person responded, “What something? This program is completely meaningless. I don’t even want to watch it. Talk show? I’m speechless!”

Everyone was full of doubts!

There were others who had always been against Zhang Ye that did not sit idle. They took the opportunity to curse and it was the kind of curse that flooded the screen!

.....

Closing the webpage, Zhang Ye laughed. Maybe he had not clearly demonstrated the true value of a talk show. Telling jokes? If it were that simple, talk shows would not have been so popular all over the world. How could it be so simple? However, Zhang Ye did not explain. It was too late to explain already. What he needed to do was produce good results to let everyone know the true charm of a talk show!

Dong Shanshan looked sideways, "Feeling the pressure?"

"Pressure?" Zhang Ye shrugged, "Not at all. They can keep cursing if they wish to. I don't plan on explaining. We'll exchange blows through my program."

Dong Shanshan blinked, "You're so confident?"

Zhang Ye smiled without speaking a word. The answer was a resounding "yes"!

Was "Lecture Room" good? Was the program excellent? When Central TV broadcast it throughout the country by satellite, the highest rating it got for an episode was 0.5% or so. As the coverage was wide, it was definitely completely different from a provincial station's 8-9% ratings. If one could get a national coverage with 0.5% ratings, then that was already an amazing rating. However, compared to the talk show programs of his world, "Lecture Room"'s ratings could not compare. Amongst the top two talk show programs in the country, the highest rated talk show's average ratings was already more than twice "Lecture Room"'s highest rating. As for the second-ranked talk show program, "Lecture Room"'s highest rating could only barely compete with the program's average ratings!

The difference was this great!

Since Lecture Room could become popular in this world, was there any reason talk shows would not be successful? For this, Zhang Ye never had a doubt!

Outside.

A woman walked over, "Teacher Zhang Ye, Teacher Dong Shanshan. Your programs have been confirmed. The Leaders have instructed that the both of you should record a promotional clip that lasts about twenty seconds today. Follow me."

Dong Shanshan said, "Alright."

Ah Qian said, "I'll go, too."

Little Yu volunteered, "I'll also come help."

Zhang Ye followed, "Promotional clip? The program isn't done yet. How are we to do a promotional clip?"

"You might not understand," Little Yu explained, "Our WebTV's promotional clips are mainly to introduce our main hosts. Then we will mention the program's name. It's to get people to know the main host and the time of the program's broadcast. It's not a detailed introduction to programs as on television stations. Typically, the promotional clip will be aired after one of our WebTV programs finishes its broadcast. According to past practices, they will invite a few web hosts from our department to record the promotional clip together. Then they will broadcast it after their programs. It's also a way of building up recognition. If one has good social ties, it's even possible to invite every web host from our company. In this industry, we call this process endorsement."

Zhang Ye was stunned, "One needs to have good social ties?"

Little Yu smiled wryly, "That's right. As it's a free promotional clip, it's basically a friendship endorsement. Hence, if someone has bad social abilities with others, there might be fewer people willing to help endorse their program."

Zhang Ye knew that he was unpopular, so he did not have much hope for it.

There were not many people who paid him a lot of attention in the company. Now, there was unanimous criticism and doubts both online and internally in the company. None of them were optimistic about his new program, so who would help endorse him?

Two youths walked over. They were both very handsome.

"Eh? Teacher Shanshan, what are you doing?" a youth asked with a smile.

Dong Shanshan revealed a sexy smile and said, "Teacher Han, Teacher Gong, did you just come back from lunch? I'm going to record a promotional clip. It seems that I need to finish it by today."

Teacher Gong was momentarily surprised before he smiled. "Heh, why didn't you tell me earlier. It's no problem. Since it's not too late, I'll help endorse you."

Dong Shanshan said, “Will it be too much trouble?”

Zhang Ye could tell at a glance that these two people were web hosts from the company.

Teacher Han waved his hand, “No trouble at all. It’s easy. We will definitely help you. Don’t worry about it. I’ll get a few other hosting friends. They will definitely support you!”

Dong Shanshan said with appreciation, “Then I’ll thank you. I was just worrying about this matter.”

Teacher Gong also laughed, “No worries. It’s rare for new hosts to join our department. And what more, a beautiful host. Everyone will definitely be glad to endorse you.”

Beauties were popular.

.....

Basement 1.

Recording Studio.

In order to have better sound isolation, the recording studios were built underground.

The moment they entered Recording Studio 3, Zhang Ye realized the facilities here were no different from a television station’s. It was very luxurious, grand and professional. There was no lack to the equipment.

The middle-aged woman was likely in charge of promotional clips in the department. She invited everyone in and gave Dong Shanshan a script, “You’ll record first?”

“Sure. I just need to read from this, right?” Dong Shanshan asked.

The middle-aged woman laughed, “Yes, just those promotional phrases.”

Teacher Gong and Teacher Han came in after a while. They might have made a few phone calls. After that, three or four web hosts came over in droves. There were three men and a woman. They were in the same office, but seated at different spots, so Zhang Ye had met them before. They were not unfamiliar.

Dong Shanshan quickly thanked them.

“You’re welcome. It’s nothing.”

“Right, we must definitely help Teacher Dong.”

“We are all colleagues. It’s only right to help take care of each other. When I first came, everyone also helped me promote. We are a family after all.”

The three web hosts spoke very nicely.

There were seven to eight other employees in the room. Some of them were handling the lighting, while others were fiddling with the cameras.

Seeing that all the staff was here, the middle-aged woman said, “Let’s begin then.”

A woman went over to touch up Dong Shanshan’s makeup. Then the recording of her promotional clip began. After the lines were read and her program was introduced, the few web hosts went forward in an experienced manner. Some introduced Dong Shanshan, some praised her and some expressed appreciation for her program’s effects. Actually, the program had just been decided upon and had not been recorded, so how could the effects of the program be seen? However, it was just a promotional endorsement. Everything said had to be good.

It was finally over after an hour.

Dong Shanshan was covered in sweat as the lighting was very warm. “Thank you, everyone. Zhang Ye and I will treat you to dinner tonight. Everyone must show me face.”

Zhang Ye?

You are treating us together with him?

Then Dong Shanshan tried to take the opportunity, “Teacher Zhang Ye is a college classmate of mine. We were in the same class, so our relationship is particularly good. Zhang Ye is also here to record a promotional clip. Can everyone endorse him, too?”

Zhang Ye finally understood that the school belle knew that he wasn’t popular and would fail at inviting others to help him. She wanted to help him and this

touched him.

The others realized why Dong Shanshan had said she and Zhang Ye would treat them. However, they really did not want to help Zhang Ye. No, it should be said that they could not help! They had also heard about the matter regarding the talk show. If not for that matter, giving Dong Shanshan and Zhang Ye some face was no big deal. After all, they were colleagues in the same unit. What harm was there in helping him?

However, the talk show had already been criticized to be a junk program by others. Now everyone in the unit, as well as netizens, was cursing it. Who would dare to help endorse Zhang Ye at this moment? Praise him? Praise his program? Wasn't this digging one's own grave!? They were certainly afraid that they would end up being buried instead. Once "Zhang Ye's Talk Show" was aired, or there might be no need to wait for it to be aired, the condemnation would spread to them as well, so who would dare to endorse him!

Teacher Gong said with some hesitation, "This... I have some work to do. I've been here for an hour, so I need to go back. I'm still rushing a new episode today."

"Me, too."

"There's no need for a treat. It's nothing. I'm leaving first."

"Teacher Zhang, sorry about that. I have some work to do."

A few people politely turned down the request.

The middle-aged woman who was in charge of this looked at them with worry, "Teachers, can't you help a bit? How are we to record if there are no endorsements?"

The few people remained speechless.

Dong Shanshan helplessly glanced at Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye smiled at her and then said to the woman, "Big Sis, I don't need others to endorse me." Then he strode up to the lights. He did not need makeup and immediately said, "Let's begin recording."

The woman was stunned, "You are recording it yourself?"

Zhang Ye nodded, "That's right. I don't need any endorsing."

At this moment, Wang Xiong came in from outside. Maybe he was here to inspect. When he heard Zhang Ye's words, he pushed the door open with interest.

"Leader."

"Director Wang."

"Director Wang."

8-9 people greeted him.

Wang Xiong smiled. "Busy yourselves. I'm just looking."

The woman looked towards Zhang Ye and her questioning gaze was filled with wryness. Only when she confirmed it from Zhang Ye's eyes did she say to the camera man, "Then let's begin."

Dong Shanshan was also worried.

The other web hosts did not leave either. They wanted to see how he recorded a promotional clip that usually had others to endorse the program. Since he was so heavily criticized, and with no one endorsing or giving him publicity, how were you to do a program?

Zhang Ye was not angry and in fact appeared very calm. His colleagues were shunning him? They felt that his program was so terrible that they did not want to involve themselves with it? The netizens were cursing him? They were saying how he was young, how he was ruined and how he knew nothing? They felt that he would end up in a terrible state due to the talk show? Against all the doubts and criticism, Zhang Ye had not responded to any of them. Clearly, not responding was not his style!

"Three...two...one... Action!" the woman said.

As for the endorsement?

Do I need your endorsements?

Do I need you!?

Zhang Ye scanned his hosting peers and then looked at the camera and

narrowed his eyes and said softly, “You only smell my cologne, but don’t see my sweat. You have your rules, I have my choices. You deny my existence, I decide my future. You mock at me having nothing, I pity how you always keep yearning. You show contempt for my young age, I will prove whose era this is. Dreams are paths destined to be forged alone, filled with doubts and mockery, but so what? Even if I’m all black and blue all over, I will also want to live beautifully!”

Everyone was stunned!

Dong Shanshan was stunned. Wang Xiong was stunned. That woman and the other web hosts felt a their goosebumps rise up when they heard his words!

Zhang Ye adjusted his necktie.

“I am Zhang Ye!”

“I’ll speak for myself!”

Chapter 232: “I’ll Speak for Myself” Released on the Web!

In the Recording Studio.

Zhang Ye had finished his introduction.

The cameraman looked at the calm Zhang Ye through the camera lens, dazed. All he heard were echos that reverberated in his ears. He had even forgotten to stop the recording!

“F**k!”

“This...”

“This endorsement...”

One second, ten seconds!

Suddenly, Wang Xiong from behind took the lead to clap. Then, very quickly, there was more and more applause, “Nice! Well said!”

With the Leader clapping, the rest snapped out of their daze. The middle-aged woman, who was in charge of this, began applauding. Dong Shanshan also began applauding. Even the filming crew also began applauding. The way they looked at Teacher Zhang Ye, who was being illuminated by the lighting, changed!

What a great Zhang Ye!

What a great “I’ll speak for myself”!

Be it Wang Xiong or the other web hosts, they were sure that a newcomer like Zhang Ye, who had just come, did not know anything about endorsement promotion. He was pulled here and placed in the limelight immediately. He would never have expected that no one wanted to help endorse him. Hence, without a doubt, Zhang Ye’s passage just now was clearly improvised on the

spot! This amount of eloquence shocked everyone there! They suddenly recalled the comments made by people familiar with Zhang Ye on the web! He was not only a broadcasting host! He was also someone who did literature! This endorsement that caused the blood of people to boil..! Probably only Zhang Ye, amongst all the broadcasting hosts in the country, was able to say such a thing! Ignoring the hosts, even those literary professionals or those professional in planning would not be able to come up with that!

Zhang Ye nodded at the people who applauded him, "Thank you."

The middle-aged woman was full of admiration as she gave him a big thumbs up, "Teacher Zhang, I have filmed so many years of endorsement promotions, but the promotional passage you just said is the best I've ever heard! There have never been any that I've seen like it!" She was the one in charge of finalizing and producing the promotional passages. She also did not take into account the opinions of the web hosts. She always believed that in this aspect, she and her team were the most professional producers. However, when she heard Zhang Ye's "I'll speak for myself", she was completely convinced. He indeed lived up to his name. Zhang Ye was indeed as talented as the rumors said he was. Just that promotional passage alone was something that she would not be able to match her entire life!

Compared to the promotions she did in the past?

No way of comparing! That was the difference between heaven and earth!

The middle-aged woman looked towards Wang Xiong, "Director Wang, then it's decided?"

"Wait," Wang Xiong surprisingly did not agree. "Put it on hold. Wait for me for a while." After saying that, he turned and left. It appeared that he went outside.

Oh?

Such a good promotional passage wasn't good enough?

Everyone had puzzled looks on their faces. Only about more ten minutes later when Wang Xiong returned were they enlightened. It was because accompanying him was the WebTV department's head, Feng Guiqin!

The moment Feng Guiqin came in, she said, "Where's Little Zhang's recording?"

Let me see.”

“Over here.” The middle-aged woman quickly rewound the footage to show the Leader.

Feng Guiqin and Wang Xiong went over and watched the entire footage.

After it finished playing, Wang Xiong chuckled, “Director, it’s okay, right?”

Feng Guiqin remained silent for a few seconds before revealing a satisfied smile. She looked amiably at Zhang Ye, “It is far more than okay? It’s extremely good!” Then she looked towards the middle-aged woman, “You must do this promotional clip of Zhang Ye’s well. It cannot be so simple. Some change of clothes and background is needed. Increasing the budget for it is fine. Anyway, you must ensure the quality. It’s best if it can be finished by today.”

The middle-aged woman was stunned, “You mean...”

Feng Guiqin smiled. “We plan on promoting Little Zhang’s ‘I’ll speak for myself’ not only on our WebTV’s website, we also plan to have it on other video website partners we have. It will be a form of advertising, so as to promote Zhang Ye’s new program. It is also a form of promoting our WebTV!”

The other web hosts exclaimed upon hearing this.

Ignoring the site-wide promotion, they were even planning on spending money to advertise for Zhang Ye on various sites on the internet?

Weiwo Video was definitely not isolated. It would frequently advertise elsewhere. Most of the video advertisements were usually about the entire website; seldom were they focused on an individual host. Furthermore, it was given to Zhang Ye? Wasn’t his program badly regarded by everyone? Even our staff and the Leaders lacked the confidence? Why were such good resources given to Zhang Ye?

However, upon careful thought, everyone figured it out. It was not that the Leaders suddenly had confidence in Zhang Ye’s baffling talk show, but it was because Zhang Ye was particularly topical. Be it the plane hijacking or the criticism he faced on the web this time, he was a person of controversy. Criticism also meant exposure. Be it good or bad, it could increase attention and attract people. Hence, the Leaders came up with this decision. Furthermore, Zhang Ye’s

promotional passage, “I’ll speak for myself”, was extremely hot-blooded. It was even a strong response to the people who criticized and doubted him. If it was advertised on several websites, the effects would likely be good. It was likely that many people, who were focusing on Zhang Ye and his “I’ll speak for myself”, would end up focusing on their Weiwo WebTV. In that case, then the maximum value of this advertisements could be seen!

It was a very good strategic move!

Even if Zhang Ye’s Talk Show was a complete disaster, it was no problem at all. The focus was on them and the talk show would be axed. However, the other programs would benefit from it.

The middle-aged woman immediately said, “I got it!”

Feng Guiqin said, “Alright, work on it,” before she left.

Wang Xiong also exhorted a few words and chased after Feng Guiqin. He said with some regret, “Little Zhang’s talent is really not bad. It’s such a pity regarding that new program. Why did he want to make such a program?”

Feng Guiqin smiled. “I’m actually somewhat looking forward to it now. I really want to see the outcome of that talk show.”

Wang Xiong blinked, “You think that it will succeed?”

“I don’t think so.” Feng Guiqin’s footsteps were slow as she looked sideways to Wang Xiong, “But I think Little Zhang is quite interesting. His character and style are completely not a match for this industry, yet he can reach this stage today. His popularity is increasing by the day. Hur hur. This is a host with a lot of personal charm. So some of the things he does cannot be understood through common sense. At least, it cannot be understood by the common sense of our standards!”

.....

Zhang Ye spent the entire afternoon recording the promotional clip.

This promotional passage was actually from Jumei.com’s commercial from Zhang Ye’s world. The last line, “I am Zhang Ye”, was originally “I am Chen Ou”, the founder of Jumei.com. Back then, this commercial had caused a sensation in

the advertising world. It was even more sensational online. Numerous people forwarded and revised it, with various versions of “I am XX, I’ll speak for myself”.

The effect of the publicity was surprisingly an astounding success. It could be said to be a miracle in the advertising industry and was extremely famous. With such a milestone in advertising, it was also the reason why Zhang Ye thought of the promotional passage of “I’ll speak for myself” when he heard no one was going to endorse for him. He never expected that the company would sponsor such a large-scale promotion as a result of it. It was a pleasant surprise!

Actually, Zhang Ye was planning to experiment with one episode of the talk show. Although he was confident, it was still a format that had never been seen in this world before. Hence, he did not know if the first episode’s artistic form of a talk show would be accepted by everyone. However, with the company fully supporting it through large-scale promotions, the first episode would definitely receive a lot of attention. It was basically giving Zhang Ye a form of insurance!

It took nearly four hours before it was done.

The director-in-charge was the middle-aged woman, but the promotional clip’s production was delegated to Zhang Ye. This was because everyone looked up to Zhang Ye’s ability in this field. So no one in the team treated him as an ordinary host, but treated him as an internal planner who was more experienced and capable than them. They sought his views regarding most of the shooting.

Zhang Ye had seen the original Jumei.com’s commercial, so he knew that the advertising used to promote a product was not suitable for this setting. However, he could receive pointers from that and with his own opinions, he could execute it. The quality of the clip was very high. After the final cut was vetted by Feng Guiqin, Wang Xiong and the other Leaders, they were all very satisfied. There was even a Leader who made the decision to begin promoting it widely from today!

Why?

This was because they wanted to borrow the momentum of netizens’ criticism of Zhang Ye!

If the criticism turned cold, with people forgetting about this matter, releasing “I’ll speak for myself” would no longer have any meaning!

.....

Office area.

It was almost time to knock off.

Zhang Ye released his necktie as he walked in from outside. The moment he walked in, many envious and jealous gazes darted at him. Probably everyone knew that the company was going to enter wide-scale promotions using Zhang Ye's promotional clip. This was a treatment only the especially famous web hosts could receive. Zhang Ye was not a famous web host, so this naturally gave rise to a lot of criticism!

"Is he the Leader's relative?"

"I think so. Why is the company supporting him this much?"

"What do you mean, 'support'? If they really support him, would they only run his program for one episode? And they demand at least 500,000 hits for the first episode? There are less than seven programs in our company's entire WebTV platform that can have an average hit of 500,000 in a single episode. It would be a wonder if he can achieve that. That talk show will definitely be axed."

"Then why are they promoting it throughout the web?"

A female host who had seen the entire recording process said, "Hai, you will understand when you see that promotional clip. If others can make a clip of that standard, the company would definitely widely promote it, too!"

"Ah?"

"So awesome?"

"What sort of clip is it? That can't be necessary, right?"

"It should be aired tonight. We'll see. I really don't believe it!"

Chapter 233: Promotional Advertisement Published!

After working hours.

People packed up their things and left the office.

Dong Shanshan picked up her bag and stood up. She smiled at Zhang Ye and whispered, "I'll go buy some groceries first. You can work late, so that you can return to a ready meal. What do you want to eat?"

The moment food was mentioned, Zhang Ye became hungry, "Aren't you eating with the other hosts?"

"They aren't free today. We've decided on me treating them tomorrow." Dong Shanshan smiled.

Zhang Ye gave it some thought and said, "Anything is fine. Just cook whatever you are good at..."

Just as they were chatting, Ah Qian came over, "Teacher Shanshan, I drove today. Do you need a lift?"

Dong Shanshan did not reject him and stopped talking about dinner with Zhang Ye, "Oh, then thanks a lot. You just need to send me to the supermarket's entrance. I'm cooking for my maternal elder cousin today."

Ah Qian exclaimed, "I thought you previously said she was your paternal elder cousin?"

Dong Shanshan blinked her sexy eyelashes, "Did I?"

Ah Qian said in wonder, "Yeah, I was under the impression you said paternal elder cousin?"

"You must have remembered wrong. Alright, let's go." Dong Shanshan said.

“Hai, I’ve recently been busy with work. My mind is in a mess.” Ah Qian really believed that he had mixed up things in his memories. He didn’t say anything further and went downstairs with Dong Shanshan.

Zhang Ye also wanted to go home, but the moment that he lifted his butt, the female host he had met today came over. Zhang Ye had an inkling that her name was Wang Bei. She was a young host that was about his age. She looked pretty good, but her figure was far worse than Dong Shanshan’s.

“Teacher Zhang,” Wang Bei smiled as she approached.

“Teacher Wang, what’s the matter?” Zhang Ye looked at her.

Previously, they had met when Wang Bei helped endorse Dong Shanshan in the recording studio. However, they had not spoken. This was the first time that they were having a direct exchange.

Wang Bei invited him, “Are you free tonight? Let’s have a meal?”

Zhang Ye exclaimed, “Sorry about that. I already have an appointment.”

“It’s alright. We can have it another day, since there’s plenty of opportunity.” After they exchanged a few words, she went to the point, “Teacher Zhang, your planning and artistic skills have broadened my horizons. I really admire you. Next time, when it’s my turn to promote the company, can you write a promotional tagline for me?”

Zhang Ye vaguely exclaimed, “Ah? Alright, alright. We’ll talk when the time comes.”

Although Wang Bei noticed that he did not give her a direct promise, she was still very pleased. After all, when Dong Shanshan had sought their help to endorse Zhang Ye, she had hesitated and did not rise up to the request. Instead, her request was somewhat abrupt. However, she was a woman, so she had the qualification to be a bit more abrupt than males. They could slowly develop their relationship as they got familiar over a few meals.

There were many colleagues who had not left at this moment. After hearing what Teacher Wang Bei said, everyone looked at each other. Although Teacher Wang Bei wasn’t very old, she had been a web host for quite a few years. She actually sought a newcomer, Teacher Zhang Ye, for a promotional phrase?

“It can’t be?”

“Teacher Wang Bei looks up to him that much?”

“Could Zhang Ye’s promotional phrase be so good?”

“I’m getting more puzzled about this. No way, I must watch it tonight. It’s just a promotional phrase. I heard no one helped Zhang Ye in his endorsement. What can he come up with alone? How good can such a promotion be? Teacher Wang Bei is being way too dramatic, right?”

“We’ll know tonight!”

“Right, I sure want to see what it is!”

.....

At home.

It was almost 7 P.M.

It was not easy to get a taxi, so Zhang Ye took public transport home. Upon opening the door, the fragrance of a hot pot came surging at him. The smell resembled his world’s “Kawasaki hot sauce”.

“You are back?” Dong Shanshan had already changed into silk pajamas with long sleeves and pants. She was busying herself in the living room, peeling apart a cabbage.

Zhang Ye rubbed his hands, “Yo, we are having hot pot?”

“That’s right. It’s easy. Wash your hands.” Dong Shanshan switched on the induction cooker.

“Alright.” Zhang Ye washed his hands and did not even bother changing his footwear and walked up to have a bite. He first scorched a piece of mutton and placed it in the seasoning sauce before putting it into his mouth. His face was full of pleasure. “Hu, nice. It’s been awhile since I’ve eaten Shabu-shabu!”

Instead, Dong Shanshan asked him something else, “Hur hur. How did you think of the tagline today?”

Zhang Ye waved it off, “It just popped up in my mind.”

“Back in college, you weren’t that good.” Dong Shanshan’s glanced at him

charmingly. “That tagline made a woman like me feel my blood rush. You even received the sponsorship of the company to have wide-scale promotions for it. It will at least be on seven or eight video websites. The starting point is already higher than mine!”

Zhang Ye said, “It’s not that different. It’s about the same.”

Dong Shanshan ate a mouthful of Shabu-shabu, “What a pity. Your program is too dangerous.”

“You aren’t optimistic about it, too?” Zhang Ye did not turn upset but laughed instead.

Dong Shanshan said frankly, “I think it’s average. The selling point isn’t clear. There has been no precedent, so I can’t see what’s good about it, no matter what aspect it is. If we were just ordinary colleagues, I would definitely support and cheer you on, but we are old classmates for so many years, so I will definitely suggest that you change programs. But with your personality, you will definitely not heed my advice. Pretend I didn’t say it.”

Zhang Ye laughed, “I’ll not change it even if you killed me. I’m even hoping for the talk show format to go overseas.” The overseas market for talk shows was even bigger than the domestic market. If after his program was released, foreign countries wanted to emulate his program to produce a talk show, they would have to give Zhang Ye royalties. When that happened, he would be truly the founder of talk shows in this world, as well as a pioneer!

How could he not want such a big slice of the pie? Was he an idiot!?

Dong Shanshan curled her lips, “You are even talking about overseas? Keep bragging then.”

Zhang Ye smirked, “You don’t believe? Then let’s have a bet. What happens if my first episode exceeds 500,000 hits? If you lose, what do I get?”

Dong Shanshan leered at him, “You won a bet against me once, and you still want to patronize my business? Hur hur. I won’t fall for it, unless your first episode exceeds a million hits.”

Zhang Ye said without hesitation, “Sure, let’s make it a million.”

Dong Shanshan gazed at him with her watery eyes, “If you can’t exceed it, what happens?”

Zhang Ye blinked, “If I can’t exceed a million, the next time when you need a promotional phrase, I’ll write you one. I’ll ensure that it is of high quality.”

Dong Shanshan ran her fingers through her smooth, wavy hair, “Alright, then if you exceed it, eh... I’ll give you another kiss. Is that fair?”

“Sure. Let’s settle on it.” Zhang Ye agreed to it.

Dong Shanshan laughed, “I didn’t notice it in the first place. When were you so perverted?”

Zhang Ye was speechless, “You were the one who suggested it! You were the first to say it on the plane, too!”

Dong Shanshan was confused, “I was the one who first suggested it?”

“Can that be false?” Zhang Ye said.

“You must have remembered wrongly. Come, let’s tuck in!” Dong Shanshan began scooping the food.

Zhang Ye, “...” Look at your mouth, lying every day with your eyes wide open. When this bro’s talk show succeeds, see how I’ll kiss you so strongly. Right, this time, I must send my tongue in. The last time, your kiss was too damn fast. This bro didn’t even have the time to react. This time I have the experience, alright!?

After the meal.

Dong Shanshan began clearing the dishes.

Zhang Ye knew his place and volunteered, “You’ve been busy all day. Let me do the washing.”

“We’ve agreed on this previously.” Dong Shanshan was adamant on this matter. “I’ll buy the groceries, wash the dishes and do the laundry. It’s in replacement of the rent.”

Zhang Ye said, “Aiyah, it’s fine if I wash every now and then.”

“That won’t do. If not, I can’t stay here with my mind at ease.” Dong Shanshan held the utensils and used her perky hips to push Zhang Ye away, “Leave me

alone.”

When Dong Shanshan was wearing slippers, she was shorter than Zhang Ye by a tiny bit. When her hips slammed into Zhang Ye’s thigh, he felt a huge amount of squishy pressure pressing on him. It intoxicated Zhang Ye.

“Alright then.”

“Go online and take a look. See if the promotions have been released.”

“Sure, but it shouldn’t be that fast, right?”

Zhang Ye took out a notebook computer from his room. Flipping it open, he used an internet browser to check every video website. It still wasn’t up, so he constantly had to refresh it.

After washing the dishes, Dong Shanshan dried her hands and walked over, “Is it out?”

“Not yet.” Zhang Ye said.

With a glance, Dong Shanshan said, “It’s useless to refresh the main site. Open any random video. The first ten or so seconds are the commercials. Let me do it.” She took over the mouse and clicked on an updated anime’s video. Then she waited for the commercial.

The first commercial was a shampoo commercial.

The second one was 15-second car commercial.

When the first scene of the third commercial appeared, Zhang Ye suddenly said, “It’s this. Heh, it’s really out. Watch the effect!”

Dong Shanshan was also pretty looking forward to it.

.....

At the same time.

After many people, who had their attention on Zhang Ye, saw the commercial that appeared on various video websites, they began to criticize!

“What? He is even being promoted?”

“Isn’t this Qi Yu Video? Why is there Zhang Ye’s commercial here?”

“Does he not feel enough shame already? This idiot! The company even dares to help promote him?”

“That whatever talk show really makes people speechless. How much hatred does Weiwo company hate Zhang Ye for them to give him such large-scale promotions? Are they afraid people are not cursing him enough!?”

“A youngster is indeed young!”

“Zhang Ye, I think it’s best you keep to your poems. Don’t make programs. You aren’t cut out for it!”

The criticism remained!

Then, Zhang Ye appeared onscreen!

There were many people in the background, as if they were pointing at Zhang Ye. They seemed to be cursing and swearing with their mouths. It looked like a replica of what was happening on the internet!

A man’s voice, “Have you ever worked hard? All you have relied on is luck!”

Another youth’s voice, “Rules are meant to be followed! They’re not meant to be broken!”

Following that, a middle-aged woman’s voice, “You are nothing! You are nothing at all! Give up! You will never succeed!”

The focus changed as Zhang Ye appeared clearly in the foreground who was facing the dozens of people. He looked calmly at the crowd and softly said, “You only smelled my cologne, but didn’t see my sweat...” The scenes kept changing, to Zhang Ye working hard at work throughout the night, to a scene of him standing in the rain while looking towards the sky!

“You have your rules, I have my choices!”

“You deny my existence, I decide my future!”

“You mock at me having nothing, I pity how you always keep yearning!”

“You show contempt for my young age, I will prove whose era this is!”

“Dreams are paths destined to be forged alone, filled with doubts and mockery, but so what?” Even if I’m all black and blue all over, I will also want to

live beautifully!”

At this very moment, all the criticism stopped!

The netizens watching the commercial stared blankly at the onscreen Zhang Ye!

.....

Many colleagues of the Weiwo WebTV department were in front of their computers. They all saw it the moment the promotional clip was released.

“Hehe, it’s here!”

“There was really no one who endorsed him?”

“Just him alone? What a joke! Then...”

Immediately, Zhang Ye’s advertisement appeared!

He adjusted his necktie.

“I am Zhang Ye!”

“I’ll speak for myself!”

When his colleagues at Weiwo company heard his last line, they were all completely dumbfounded. They felt like a mouthful of warm blood was about to spew out from their mouths as the blood shot straight to their heads!

Once upon a time, they were young, too!

Once upon a time, they were also hot-blooded!

Dreams? They had mostly forgotten them, nor did they know when they had lost their drive to forge for their dreams. When Zhang Ye’s passage was spoken, everyone suddenly seemed to see themselves, their young selves!

Endorsement?

I’ll speak for myself?

Many people subconsciously began clenching their fists!

Chapter 234: National Buzz!

The moment the promotional clip, “I’ll speak for myself”, was launched, the criticism and curses aimed at Zhang Ye momentarily stopped. Many people watched the commercial in alarm until the end, while many professionals watched it with a surprised gaze! Different from when Zhang Ye only had activities in Beijing, this time it was promoted on several large video websites. It could be accessed across the whole world. Even Chinese overseas could see the promotional clip on a browser. The effects were naturally wider!

In every video where the commercial played, there were numerous comments!

“It feels so good!”

“Teacher Zhang, you are the best!”

“A commercial actually makes me want to roar out!”

“F**k, that’s too awesome. Who did the commercial’s planning?”

“I don’t know. Right, there’s a sole version of this commercial on Weiwo Video. Let me see...Ah, look at the end! Producer: Zhang Ye! Planning: Zhang Ye! It was a commercial made by Teacher Zhang himself!”

“What are you saying? Where? Why can’t I see this commercial?”

“Just go to any video website and click on any video. How can you not see it? There would at least be one by just opening two, right? The promotion is pretty large-scale!”

“Your sister, I’m f**king a member in a few video websites, and it was automatically logged in. It’s void of commercials! Forget it, I’ll go to Weiwo Video and watch the sole version!”

“This is Teacher Zhang Ye’s response! Hahahaha! The response was done too well! What a good ‘even if I’m all blue and black all over, I will also want to live

beautifully’!”

“I’ll speak for myself? How f**king domineering is this!?”

“Teacher Zhang is impressive! He leaks out his dominance once again! There’s no way of looking at him straight!”

“The facts have proven that anyone who cursed at Teacher Zhang in the past would be smacked in the face by Teacher Zhang one by one! I believe there will be no exceptions this time! Talk show? I’m looking forward to your new program!’

“Just from this commercial, I will definitely support that talk show or whatever!”

“Teacher Zhang is really a man of God. Back then when he produced and directed that electricity conservation public service advertisement, he had created a stir in Beijing and the advertising world. This time, he has come out with another one?”

“It’s nice!”

“Why do I feel like crying after hearing it?”

“Me, too. I have no idea why tears are rolling down my cheeks!”

“In the past, I’ve never watched commercials, but this commercial tagline has moved me! I’ll give Teacher Zhang 10,000 Likes! You are the most special celebrity I’ve ever seen! You are different from all the other celebrities!”

“That’s right, the commercial is too hot-blooded. This is Teacher Zhang Ye! He is forever so different! He would never bow to anyone! He is forever so indomitable! If it were any other celebrity who was faced such doubts, they would definitely respond on Weibo or explain it to reporters as they try their best to reverse the situation, telling people that their program isn’t worthless and how good it is. However, Teacher Zhang Ye doesn’t do that. He doesn’t even make any response in a public setting, but does it through a f**king commercial! This was a response? No, I don’t think so. Teacher Zhang Ye is not responding, but challenging others! ‘So what if I’m doing such a program, if you aren’t happy, try biting me’. Haha. When I was watching the commercial, this scene of Teacher Zhang Ye saying these words kept appearing in my brain a countless number of

times! Such true disposition! How many people in the entertainment industry can be like Zhang Ye with his words and actions?”

“Hehe, Zhang Ye has always had such a personality!”

“It’s because of this that I like him! He dares to speak and act it out! He dares to curse and fight! So fun!”

“That’s right. We don’t have the guts, nor the nerve. We can’t be like Teacher Zhang Ye, which is why we like him!”

“Zhang Ye, I love you! I’ll forever support you! Ignore what others say! Do your program well! Let those people see whose era this is!”

“I’ll speak for you!”

“Zhang Ye, we’ll speak for you!”

Many of Zhang Ye’s fans managed to turn the tide. Previously, they had been overwhelmed by the criticism, but now they shouted their battle cries like they were on stimulants!

Those who specifically defamed Zhang Ye immediately shut up. Even if some of them carried on defaming him mindlessly, they were quickly drowned. Amidst this, a figure amongst those who returned the curses would always appear. A professional warrior for five decades, Big Saber Bro had arrived!

“You retard! I was busy the past two days and couldn’t come online! I’ve finally caught you! My large saber is again again again again again again again again again again again again again again unable to endure the thirst!”

This passage was sent out 37 times by Big Saber Bro!

Anyone who criticized Zhang Ye was met with a copy-paste of the text by Big Saber Bro!

Some people felt the pressure from the war and reported it to Weibo’s management. However, this only resulted in Weibo deleting or hiding the words Big Saber Bro used to curse. He was not banned or muted. On the other hand, those who criticized Zhang Ye ended up being banned for their harsh criticism!

Big Saber Bro carried on duplicating the posts. He alone was like a ten

thousand-man army as he cursed back at them!

Zhang Ye's fans welcomed it greatly!

"Haha! Big Saber Bro is so fierce!"

"Why is the gender listed on Big Saber Bro's profile 'Female'?" Is this real or not?"

"It has to be fake. When has there been such a fierce female comrade!?"

"He wasn't banned, despite so much cursing? It looks like Big Saber Bro has connections high above!"

"Maybe it's because it's too chaotic, so the Weibo administrators can't keep up with it?"

The war of words reached a crescendo once again. However, this time, it was the complete victory of Zhang Ye's supporters!

As the commotion carried on, finally a Weibo-verified professional posted a statement. His verified information wrote that he was Xuanyu Company's famous commercial planner. He posted on Weibo, "I just saw the promotional clip, 'I'll speak for myself'. I could not calm my mood for a very long time. Hence, I decided to write something. This commercial goes against a lot of common sense and makes many professional commercial errors. If I were to list them all and criticize them one by one, the flaws many trash or poor quality commercials had could be found in it. For example, making a lengthy presentation. It is taboo for a commercial to do so. And this commercial is purely the kind that has a lengthy presentation. It is all talk from beginning to the end. And for example, the focus of a commercial's main purpose is to highlight the core thing that will be advertised. What are you advertising? What are you trying to tell everyone? From this commercial, clearly, the core thing being advertised is the program, a talk show program. However, 'I'll speak for myself' did not do so. It only wrote what time 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' would be aired at during the ending scene. It was shown for 1.5 seconds. Not a single word was said about it!"

Weibo limited the number of words, so the post was cut off here.

Many of Zhang Ye's fans saw this and were about to reply when that person carried on his message.

The commercial creative carried on, “For something full of flaws and completely baffling, with its poor manner of speech that any professional will find fault with, yet, in the end, the commercial is so good! Without a doubt! This is the best commercial clip I have seen this year!”

“Haha!”

“That was a godly reversal!”

“I thought you wanted to criticize Teacher Zhang!”

“Bro, I was just about to curse you. Thanks to the later Weibo post appearing before I posted mine. I nearly caused a misunderstanding!”

The advertising creative posted, “Why would I criticize Zhang Ye? Teacher Zhang Ye is a genius... No, maybe describing him as a prodigy is more accurate! I never concerned myself with his other matters. I do not like to watch television or read poetry, but I have seen Zhang Ye’s public service advertisement. Back then, I was shocked just like today. Sometimes I wonder and am curious... Why would a bunch of professional advertising creatives like us be inferior to a layman who is a broadcasting host? Later on, I came up with a conclusion. Some whizzes cannot be measured using common sense. Maybe it is because Zhang Ye is not in the advertising industry that allows him to see things more clearly. He is not limited by the existing lines of thought, which results in him being able to produce outstanding commercials one after another. For example, ‘I’ll speak for myself’, if we don’t look at the product but just the advertisement’s proposal plan, I believe that any professional will think lowly about such a baffling commercial. It is completely contrary to our textbooks and what our teachers teach; however, Zhang Ye managed to do it! He broke the conceptions and understanding many of us advertising creatives have towards advertisements! Maybe it is time for us to reflect on ourselves. Will a commercial be good if we keep repeating what the textbooks teach us?”

At this moment, Zhang Ye, who was at home, replied, “Bro, you’ve flattered me. I’m not as good as professionals like you. I was just haphazardly doing it based on feel.”

It was as if the advertising creative did not expect Zhang Ye to reply him as he hurriedly answered, “Is this really Teacher Zhang Ye? Hur hur. You are being too

modest. You may not know. The public service advertisement of yours from back then has often been used for discussion and practice. It has been treated as teaching material in our advertising world. Also, this commercial of yours today will probably not need to wait till tomorrow; it will definitely be spread throughout the advertising circles by today. It will definitely be analyzed and studied by countless numbers of advertising creatives!”

Below, several advertising creatives and administrator level staff of advertising companies responded. Some praised him, while others tried to recruit him into the advertising industry for development.

Previously for the electricity conservation advertisement, there were already people throwing out an olive branch at him. However, Zhang Ye did not plan on going. His dream was to become a superstar, and not in the advertising industry, so he rejected them nicely once again.

There was buzz on the internet!

A solo commercial clip of “I’ll speak for myself” was posted on Weiwo Video. The hits also increased, surging upward at an incredible speed!

100,000 hits!

1,000,000 hits!

2,000,000 hits!

And this was just the statistics of the video alone. There were many others who watched the commercial on other video websites. Those were not counted in this statistic!

Even a large number of official programs of Weiwo WebTV would not get two million hits in a day, whatmore that this was just a commercial clip! Who would have expected that a commercial, a short commercial clip which did not have any specific content of the program, had detonated the entire internet? It had attracted such a massive number of hits and a shocking amount of attention?

“I am Zhang Ye!”

“I’ll speak for myself!”

That night, this phrase made many people in the country know of Zhang Ye’s

name!

Chapter 235: Zhang Ye's Fashionable Body!

That night.

In the living room.

Dong Shanshan looked away from the computer and smiled. "This time, you're famous."

"I won't be that famous." Zhang Ye replied matter-of-factly, saying, "In the end, we still have to see how my program does."

Dong Shanshan made a no with her finger. Her crystal nails were swaying left and right in front of him. The reflected light was flashing into his eyes, "A yard is a yard. What I'm talking about is your commercial. Hur hur. Will you believe it if I say that today's 'I'll speak for myself' will bring you more fame than three or four episodes of 'Lecture Room'? Although 'Lecture Room' was broadcast on TV and there are even video clips of it online, the people who watched it were mainly 80-90% residents around Beijing. Even if there were people from other regions who watched it online, the numbers are still in the minority. But this time, it's different. Weiwo helped you to advertise this on other online television stations. If it were any other ordinary production, then it would surely not be able to compare with advertising on regular television networks. Even a local television station has more reach than online television stations. But the problem now is that you are a hot topic for discussion; everyone is talking about you. Under such circumstances, advertising will get you noticed more than on traditional television networks. The advertised subject is even you. As of now, a number of people in the country who did not used to know you will already know your name!"

Zhang Ye was very satisfied with the promotions. Other celebrities might not place much importance on such things, but Zhang Ye was different. He did not have the good looks of other people, so he could only depend on other ways to

make up for it. For example, this promotional advertisement. Zhang Ye did not want to give up on any chances at becoming famous!

Commercial?

Even a commercial was so well done by him!

“Hey, it’s already 9?” Zhang Ye looked at his watch.

Dong Shanshan patted her mouth as she yawned, “Alright, I’m sleeping first.”

Zhang Ye acknowledged, “Go wash up first. After you are done, I will take a shower and then prepare to sleep. I need to wake up earlier tomorrow, to prepare for the new program.”

“Me, too. It’s time to busy myself tomorrow.” Dong Shanshan did not close the door after walking into the bathroom. She stood there, brushing her teeth, when she suddenly recalled a matter. She said with her mouth full, “Oh, right.” After spitting out the toothpaste and rinsing her mouth, she washed her face and removed her makeup, “My program’s name has been decided. It’s called ‘Online Talents’. However, we haven’t thought of a slogan. Tomorrow, my program will be promoted within our website. Think of one for me?”

After some thought, Zhang Ye said, “Why not ‘believe in your dreams, believe in miracles’?”

Dong Shanshan thought about it for a while, “Okay, this is good. Then it’s decided it will be that. Hur hur. Your brain is still better at this when your mouth is already not bad!”

This promotional slogan was actually from Zhang Ye’s previous world’s “China’s Got Talent”. He did not change a single word and gave it to Dong Shanshan directly.

After showering, Dong Shanshan wrote down the promotional slogan that Zhang Ye gave to her and then went back into her room to sleep.

Zhang Ye went to have a hot shower instead. When he came out, he took the laptop back into his room and laid down comfortably in bed while he continued browsing on his laptop.

“@ZhangYe.”

“Summoning Teacher Zhang!”

“Has Teacher Zhang slept?”

This was the headquarters of Zhang Ye’s Tieba group. The number of fans now was now more than ever. There were already 16,000+ fans in all. It was different from those millions or 10 millions that you see on Weibo; those were just follower numbers and were not as indicative as they looked. Here in Zhang Ye’s fan club, a majority of them were hardcore fans. Simply saying, they were the types who would do things for their idols, and were not those who looked on just for the entertainment. His fan club had a sense of cohesion. From the time when he was taken away by the police, he had experienced it already; everyone was very united!

Zhang Ye could disregard replying to those undedicated fans on Weibo and just enjoy reading the posts. But in his own fan club, he definitely had to be more concerned.

“I’m here. Almost about to sleep,” Zhang Ye replied.

A junior moderator said excitedly, “Haha, we have bombed Teacher Zhang out of hiding!”

The next person to follow the thread had an avatar of a little girl hugging a doll. She shouted, “Wow, this is the first time seeing him live! I’m so excited! Teacher Zhang, I love you, I love you!”

“Heavens, I’m actually so close to Teacher Zhang Ye!”

“There’s no more first! Touching Teacher Zhang through cyber space!”

“Is Zhang Ye someone for you to touch? I was inspired by his commercial today!”

The Tieba moderator said, “You guys are such spoilers. Maybe because you all have just joined, so you all don’t know. But Teacher Zhang comes here very often, so you all will see him very often in the future. Let me say what I want to say first, Teacher Zhang. ‘I’ll speak for myself’ is too great. Didn’t you used to always mocked your own works after you have released them? You didn’t have any works recently, so we couldn’t join in the fun. Our enthusiasm has taken a blow!”

Thinking back, under Zhang Ye's lead, his few poems had literally all been adapted by everyone. They had a lot of fun without getting tired of it for a long time, so now did they get addicted?

Zhang Ye was amused, "Alright."

"Is that true?"

"Haha! Waiting!"

"What's self-mockery? What are you talking about?"

"Upstairs must be new at a glance. Hehehe, Teacher Zhang's self-mockery and everyone modifying his works is a traditional affair of our fan club. You can only see such things happening with Teacher Zhang!"

"Amazing!"

"Me, too. What is it?"

"Watch and see!"

Seeing his fans clustering around, Zhang Ye did not remain perfunctory. He directly posted a thread in Tieba, "You only see my weight, but didn't see my efforts. You have your muscles, I have my belly. You mock at me having unfit and fat arms, I pity how you lack the joy of dieting. You show contempt for my body, we will prove whose era this is. Dieting is a path destined to be painful, filled with rebounds and figures going bad, but so what? Even if I faint from hunger, I will also faint beautifully! I am a fatty, I'll speak for myself!"

Chen Ou's commercial?

No! It should be called Zhang Ye's commercial now!

After everyone saw Zhang Ye's new version of "I'll speak for myself", everyone burst out laughing!

"Pfft!"

"I burst out!"

"Hahahaha!"

"Teacher Zhang, you're too funny!"

“You have your muscles, I have my belly.” Haha! Do you need to be so humorous! I’m dying from laughter! This is what all of you mean by self-mockery?”

Suddenly, the fans continuously posted!

“Let me try one.... You only see my grades, but didn’t see my hard work. You have your test papers, I have my answers. You mock at me for not have good grades.....I am a student, I’ll speak for myself!”

“Haha!”

“Upstairs, you’re awesome!”

“So well-written!”

“Let me try too!”

Everyone began posting modified versions and were very happy!

Finally, someone reposted Zhang Ye’s fatty version onto Weibo. At once, over 10 thousands of people came to view it. From Weibo to Tieba, everyone started doing their adaptations. With Zhang Ye’s lead and the increasing momentum of adaptations, Zhang Ye and his advertising promotion had a further increase in popularity!

“You guys are humorous!”

“Teacher Zhang has self-mocked himself again? Then you must count me in!”

“I am flat-chested, I’ll speak for myself!”

“I’m a bitter idiot, I’ll speak for myself!”

Similar formats were now being posted all over the fan club Tieba. Some even visited in curiosity, but stayed on and joined his fan club!

Everyone played together!

They all joined in the fun and pranking!

Zhang Ye was very satisfied. Looking at his fans and some others who had scolded him before having fun together made Zhang Ye very happy. The entertainment industry might look very treacherous like deep waters to others. The people in it were unscrupulous and the inner workings were complex. But in

Zhang Ye's eyes, the entertainment industry was in fact very simple. We entertain you, you entertain us; that was all there was to it.

Hey, hey, hey!

You see!

Look how philosophical this bro is!

Chapter 236: Program Title Introduction, “I’ll Feed a Bag of Salt to Myself”!

The next day at work.

At the office, almost everyone had come to work already.

“Hey, Zhang Ye’s here.”

“Did you all see it yesterday?”

“Of course! It was really awesome like they said.”

“No wonder the company spent so much money to advertise for him. Did you hear? Our web portal had an 8% increase in traffic yesterday night!”

“Only now do I believe that he is really, really, capable!”

“He’s so good at program planning, like with ‘Lecture Room’ or those public service advertisements and even ‘I’ll speak for myself’. But why is that new program that he is preparing so obscure? If you don’t seek death, you won’t die. Can’t he plan up a proper program nicely? Why must he attempt this baffling talk show thing? Even if his promotion was so successful, I am still not convinced of his new program.”

“Yeah. Sigh. Such a good promotion has gone to waste!”

“In my opinion, they should have just done the promotion for other hosts instead!”

“Sigh. Zhang Ye is here. Hush, let’s not talk about it anymore.”

.....

Zhang Ye walked into the office.

“Teacher Zhang, good morning.” greeted Wang Bei who was seating in the

center of the office.

Ah Qian and Little Yu also said good morning to Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye greeted back everyone. He then nodded to Dong Shanshan, who had left the apartment a little earlier than him, before taking his seat at his desk.

Outside, Wang Xiong came inside to look for two people. After delegating some work to them and sharply criticizing a host who did poorly in recording yesterday, he finally came over to Zhang Ye's side, "Little Zhang Ah."

Zhang Ye stood up, "Leader."

Wang Xiong patted him on the shoulders and said with a warm expression, "Well done! Yesterday's advertisement had a really desirable effect. You should follow up on your program tightly; there aren't many days left." Saying that, he handed him a list, "This is our staff listing. You will be in charge of assembling the program team. Choose your team so that we can start work the day after. You will need to prepare the stage, script and the program introduction amongst others. Pay close attention to it."

Zhang Ye nodded, "I will."

Wang Xiong walked off as Zhang Ye looked through the list.

It was filled with the names of many members of the staff. They included details of their positions like copywriting, planning, directing, *etc.*

Zhang Ye also saw Ah Qian and Little Yu's name. He only knew the two of them, so he looked over to them, "I need to assemble a team for my program. You guys?"

Ah Qian replied, "I'm already in Teacher Shanshan's team."

"Me, too. Sorry about that, Teacher Zhang." Little Yu said apologetically, "'Online Talents' will be starting preparations today, so....."

Zhang Ye smiled. "It's okay. I will ask around."

As he said that, he looked at a name and asked, "Is Xu Neng around?" This was a program director's name.

A youth heard his name and stood up to walk over, "That's me."

Zhang Ye said, “My program is starting preparations soon. If it’s convenient for you....”

Xu Neng made a sound and said, “Teacher Zhang, sorry, but I have already been appointed as deputy director on two programs. The workload is very heavy. I can’t take on another role.”

“Well, that’s fine then.” Zhang Ye looked at the name list again. This time, he found a 50-something-year-old comrade. He hoped an experienced comrade could lead the team.

When he found him finally, the experienced producer did not seem interested. He replied to him without enthusiasm, saying, “I still have work on my hands. You should find someone else.”

After asking several people, all of them said that they were busy!

Zhang Ye was initially patient, but in the end, he ended up becoming frustrated!

Busy? A good program did not require pushing for hires. Everyone would rush to join instead. Because when a program ended, their names would be credited. The experience and credentials gained could help bolster up their resumes when they wanted to job-hop to other companies. But right now, these people were all dodging him! It was simply because they were not confident of his talk show segment and did not want a share of it because of what could happen if it failed!

Dong Shanshan suggested an idea to him, “You don’t need to ask them for their opinion. Just put down their names and give it to the Leader. They would have no choice then.”

Ah Qian also agreed, saying, “Correct. You are the program team’s highest decision maker.”

Dong Shanshan’s new program was headed by an Executive Producer who was in his forties. The members of the program team had been decided by that Head Producer. Dong Shanshan only gave suggestions, but she did not have the authority to decide on it. However, Zhang Ye was different. To headhunt him, who was both great as a host and a program planner, the company had given him preferential treatment. For example, he had the freedom and absolute

authority with regards to the program. This was not treatment any typical newcomer would receive. In WebTV, only the hosts who had been famous for a long period of time could be given the title of Executive Producer.

However, Zhang Ye said, "There's no need."

"Then how are..." Little Yu asked.

Zhang Ye finally put down his words, "If no one wants to, I will do it on my own!"

Ah Qian said in shock, "On your own? How can the team's work breakdown be...."

Then, they could only stare in a dumbfounded manner as Zhang Ye filled in his name in all of the team list's columns. Executive Producer – Zhang Ye. Director – Zhang Ye. Overall Planner – Zhang Ye. Technical Advisor – Zhang Ye. Costume Design – Zhang Ye. Stage Setup – Zhang Ye. He wrote his name closely in all the columns, ignoring the dumbfounded stares of his colleagues. Zhang Ye then directly brought the list to Wang Xiong's office and submitted it.

Wang Xiong took a glance and nearly fainted, "Little Zhang, what do you mean by this? I know you are multi-talented, but do you need to go this far? Is this because they don't want to join your program team?" Saying this, Wang Xiong's face also scrunched up, "Don't worry. Just fill in their names. I dare them not to come!"

Zhang Ye heart warmed up as he said slowly, "Leader, a forcefully ripened fruit does not taste sweet. I will be fine alone. Just give me a few cameramen and lighting assistants and I will do the program well!"

Wang Xiong said in worry, "Besides them, I will find a few more people for you."

"It's really alright, Leader. Thank you. My program will be handled better by myself. If there are too many people, it will be counter-productive instead," Zhang Ye insisted.

Wang Xiong hesitated for a moment, then smiled bitterly, "Alright then. If you say so. Then it is set. The cameramen and other crew will be arranged for you. The other departments will also coordinate with you at your convenience. The

costumes and program intro filming will be prioritized for you and Dong Shanshan's programs!" After saying all that, he gave Zhang Ye a document, "Go to Studio 7. From today until the first day of your program's recording, it will fully belong to your production team. No one will be sharing it with you, so as to let you get the place up and running. If your program really gets the approval, only then will we arrange for the studio to be shared with others. The set's layout will be adapted to whatever program is being recorded. After all, our recording studios are not abundant, so it gets a little tense."

Zhang Ye said, "I understand."

"Give this document to Supervisor Wang. He will arrange the rest for you." Wang Xiong said.

.....

Before noon.

Soon, all of the department's staff heard of the shocking news. As many people did not wish to be in Zhang Ye's production team, Zhang Ye filled in almost all of the team's positions with his own name in a fit of anger. Eventually, even the Leader had approved of it. This made everyone at a loss of whether to laugh or to cry. They thought that with such a tantrum, if it were left to Wang Xiong to arrange, who would dare not turn up? They could not possibly turn it down either. A new program would definitely need a proper team. But who would have thought that Zhang Ye was so indifferent — They don't want to come? Then I don't even f**king want them! With Zhang Ye's move, it had left many in the office feeling awkward and feeling bad.

Wang Bei was speechless, "Teacher Zhang, you can't handle it all by yourself!"

Ah Qian also said, "Yeah, you only have a pair of hands and legs. How can you handle so much work? This.... There's even a lot of specialized positions in the team. You..."

Zhang Ye knew they meant well, but he had already decided. Understaffed? Then he will just work overtime for a few more days. Specialized jobs? Well, he had spent some time working at the television station, so it wouldn't be difficult for him. Zhang Ye felt that he could handle it well, "I will be fine by myself."

Dong Shanshan looked at him, “You know how to pick the costumes?”

Zhang Ye replied, “It will be a suit and tie for every episode. Every episode will have different colors.”

Little Yu was also sweating when he said, “How about the set layout?”

Zhang Ye, “It’s in the proposal. I’ve already written out the setup I want.”

Dong Shanshan rolled her eyes, “You can’t possibly do the post-production, too, can you?”

Zhang Ye said matter-of-factly, “My program will not require any post-production. As long as the audience shots and my shots are planned out properly, there won’t be any shots to edit.”

The surrounding colleagues had all heard this.

Bullshit! You really know how to bullshit!

Of course, they didn’t believe it. But those who had ever worked with Zhang Ye before, like Hu Fei, like Xiao Lu, Dafei and gang, would definitely know Zhang Ye’s claims were true. His recorded programs really did not need any post-production. All of the shots and sequences were all controlled by Zhang Ye’s pacing. Not even a second of additional footage would be recorded. It was because Zhang Ye’s broadcast program was already a finished product from his previous world. It had already been edited by the professionals from that world and all that was left was the essence. Zhang Ye had used the finished product, so, of course, there won’t be any mistakes!

Everyone continued to advise him.

But Zhang Ye was stubborn. He did not listen. Actually, in his heart, he just wanted to prove them wrong. Hur hur. You guys don’t have much hope for this bro? Sure, then I will show all of you! Even if this bro is alone, he will be able to make this program great! At that time, let’s see who still dares to talk trash!

Before afternoon, Zhang Ye had found Supervisor Wang. He then went over to Studio 7, which temporarily belonged to him. The audience’s seats were all in place. The lights were also already set up. All he needed to do was to decorate the stage a little and it will be ready for recording. Zhang Ye had decided by now

that for the next few days, this would be his office.

After lunch, Zhang Ye did not idle. All of the work to be done rested on him. He did not have any time to waste, so he began his first task, a task that was supposed to be handled by the Director or Deputy Director and the Marketing Planner — the making of the program's title introduction.

Zhang Ye found the middle-age woman who had previously handled his promotional advertisement. He had known by now that this woman was called 'Sister Four'. As her husband was also working in Weiwo company as the Deputy Supervisor of Logistics, his popularity was rather good. Everyone liked to call her husband as 'Brother Four', so 'Sister Four' naturally became her title, too.

Staff room.

Zhang Ye navigated left and right through the mess, "Sister Four? Is Sister Four here?"

In the small office, Sister Four looked up with a pair of disposable chopsticks in her mouth, "Oh, it's Teacher Little Zhang?" She was just having some soup dumplings.

Zhang Ye smiled. "I need to record a title introduction for my program."

Sister Four acknowledged, "Sure. Give me a few seconds." She took her dumplings and stuffed them whole into her mouth. She probably got scalded by the hot soup since she gasped with her tongue out of her mouth. Then she stood up and called for a few people, "Li, Wang, time to work." They brought along their equipment and followed Zhang Ye.

When they passed the costume department, Zhang Ye made a quick detour inside. He greeted the person in charge and choose a few suits of different colors quickly. He also took a few neckties and bowties of different colors. Then, he put them on a rolling clothes rack and rolled it out along towards Studio 7.

Inside, the few of them were stunned.

Sister Four asked, surprised, "Hey, why is there only you?"

Zhang Ye laughed, "It's just me."

"What about your production team? The Deputy Director? Who is in charge of

the introduction title planning? Without it, how can we film?” Sister Four and her team were from the filming department; they did not need to do any planning.

Zhang Ye replied, “The Overall Director and Planner is me.”

After explaining a little, Sister Four did not know whether to laugh or to cry, “You’re really fantastic. Your guys from the WebTV department are really great, too. They are too snobbish. Who says that your program won’t make the cut? They are even dodging their responsibilities out of fear? Little Zhang, Sister Four supports you. Make a program with an average rating of 500,000 views to show them. I will take care of the camera filming. Your program will broadcast on Monday? Filming will be done on Sunday? I will pick a few cameramen with the best skills and report to you on Sunday!”

Zhang Ye was in a good mood, “Then I will say my thanks first?”

“Don’t be so polite. Just tell us how you want to film the title introduction.” Sister Four asked.

Zhang Ye had already planned it, “We will just do a few simple shots. I will be changing my costume for every shot, then we will put them together in post-production.”

Sister Four asked, “What about the title words?”

A cameraman interjected saying, “That ‘I’ll speak for myself’ advertisement slogan was too good. If you don’t use it in the introduction title, won’t it be a pity?”

“Yea, that slogan is too awesome!” another female cameraman said.

Sister Four professionally gave a wave of her hands, “That’s not suitable. It’s too full of passion. I might not fully understand Teacher Little Zhang’s new program, something called a talk show. But the overall theme is one of humor and jokes, right? With such a formal introduction, it will clash with the theme. That’s a definite no-no.”

But Zhang Ye laughed, “It won’t. Let’s use that then.”

Sister Four was stunned, “Don’t fool around, Teacher Little Zhang. That’s really

not suitable!”

“It will be okay. Listen to me and when we are done recording, you will all understand.” Zhang Ye was confident, “Can all of you help me to set up the background? I will go get changed and then prepare a prop.”

Prop?

There’s even a prop?

Sister Four did not expect it to be promising, but she didn’t say anything. She called for everyone to start decorating the set.

Zhang Ye went backstage to a room without anyone and got changed into his suit and tie. He looked much more spirited as he looked in the mirror, fully satisfied. Then, he looked everywhere for a “prop”, found something, nodded and prepared to make his own prop.

.....

It was still lunch time.

When Zhang Ye came outside, he saw that there were still many people outside.

Dong Shanshan, Wang Bei, Ah Qian, Little Yu and a few familiar looking faces that he did not know too well. They probably wanted to take a look.

Dong Shanshan smiled and said, “Zhang Ye, do you need any help?”

“No, take a seat.” Zhang Ye attended to them for a little while.

They went over to the audience seats and sat there, waiting to see how Zhang Ye would handle everything by himself.

At this moment, Wang Xiong and a Leader that Zhang Ye had never seen before arrived. They did not say anything, but went directly to the seats in front of the stage. It was obvious that Wang Xiong was worried about him. Being the Producer, Director, Costume Planner and Set Layout Planner made him worried that Zhang Ye would mess things up, so he came over to see if Zhang Ye could really handle it all. If there were any problems, he, as the Overall Leader, would have to answer for it, too.

There were many people in the audience.

The set layout was decorated simply.

Sister Four shouted, "Okay, ready."

Zhang Ye adjusted his suit and then walked to the background wall, "Then let's begin."

"Cameras ready, 3....2....1, action!" Sister Four commanded.

The recording indicator on the cameras lit up. Zhang Ye looked towards the camera with a straight face and said, "You only smell my cologne, but didn't see my sweat. You have your rules, I have my choices. You deny my existence, I decide my future....."

Everyone off-stage was frowning.

Eh?

Isn't this still the advertisement?

Still using this as the title introduction?

To be honest, the advertisement was really good. But isn't your program meant to be humorous? Isn't it a program where you say jokes? Using such an advertisement as the title introduction is too formal! It's not suitable at all! As expected, Zhang Ye had his limitations just working alone. How could he handle so many jobs by himself?

Wang Bei, Ah Qian and the others were all expressionless.

Wang Xiong was already shaking his head in self blame. The company's Leader beside him also whispered to him several words. It looked like he was unsatisfied with the performance.

Sister Four sighed, thinking to call for a cut, but she didn't and continued the filming.

Zhang Ye seemingly disregarded everyone's expressions and became even more serious and formal. He poured his emotions in saying, "You mock at me having nothing, I pity how you always keep yearning. You show contempt for my young age, I will prove whose era this is. Dreams are paths destined to be forged

alone, filled with doubts and mockery, but so what? Even if I'm all blue and black all over, I will also want to live beautifully!"

Up until here, Zhang Ye suddenly made a move that left everyone bewildered. He picked up a bag of his self-made prop. It was a bag used to hold condiments, the logo had been hidden by a sticker which was labeled — Salt.

What?

What did this mean?

"I am Zhang Ye!"

"I'll feed a bag of salt to myself!"

Only to see Zhang Ye tilting his head backwards and pouring the prop into his mouth. Then his facial expression became rich with emotions. He held his throat and coughed and spit out a few times!

"Pfft!"

"Hahahaha!"

Everyone off stage suddenly burst into laughter!

"I'll speak for myself" (Wǒ wèi zìjǐ dài yán) sounded the same as "I'll feed a bag of salt to myself" (Wǒ wèi zìjǐ dài yán)?

What were you even thinking! What a godly twist! That was some f**king godly twist!

Dong Shanshan was cramping up from laughing. She held her stomach as she kept on laughing!

The others like Wang Bei, Ah Qian and Sister Four were also unable to sit straight from all the laughing! Zhang Ye's serious expression had all led up to this twist! This contrast seriously made it so that everyone couldn't help but laugh!

Zhang Ye put down the prop in his hand, "The cameras can stop rolling!"

Sister Four finally stopped laughing and gave him a thumbs up in admiration, "This title introduction..... is really paramount! Teacher Little Zhang, I am totally in awe of you!"

The few cameramen were also left in awe. They all wondered how this guy's

brain worked! Able to write serious advertisement slogans! But when it came to the title introduction, the words were unchanged, but when repeated, it achieved two very different results! One was full of passion, the other was totally hilarious! This.... So a title introduction could actually be presented this way! It's too wonderful!

Wang Xiong's face broke into a smile.

Meanwhile, the other Leader was a little dazed!

He finally believed that Zhang Ye could really handle multiple roles by himself. This short segment was enabled through his directorial work and production, planning, costumes, prop, etc!

When work resumed in the afternoon, the few "audiences" began leaving.

When Dong Shanshan and Wang Bei left, they were still laughing and discussing about the title introduction.

But Zhang Ye was still not satisfied, thinking it was a little monotonous. So he changed into a few more costumes and recorded a few more shots before calling it a day! To others, it was needless to say that for a program, especially a new program's, its title introduction was especially important. Some people racked their brains over this and might film it over and over for a week or even a month. Because it would be aired constantly on every episode, from a certain perspective, it was even more important than the contents of the program. But Zhang Ye only needed an hour to complete the title introduction. Even with that, no one said that it wasn't good!

"I'll feed a bag of salt to myself"!

The title introduction has been decided!

Chapter 237: Fusing all Talk Show programs!

At night.

After 10 P.M.

Most of the office lights were already switched off.

Only now did Zhang Ye emerge from the office of the film crew. The title introduction had finished filming in the afternoon, but the post-production was done only at night. A lot of it was not as ideal as he had expected. Seeing the finished product's humor, he felt it was not as funny. So after some discussion, everyone stayed behind and worked overtime with him. For example, the punchline "I'll speak for myself" was still better off using the original words' subtitles. But it would only change when Zhang Ye really fed himself salt. The post-production took care of the subtitling effect where the original words shattered and were replaced in the next second by the words "I'll feed a bag of salt to myself". Many of his facial expressions were also carefully selected before they settled on the final version, which amplified its humor.

Sister Four said tiredly, "Treat's on you!"

Zhang Ye did not refuse saying, "No problem. When the program is out, I will treat everyone to a meal. Thank you for your hard work today, everyone! Sister Four, go home early and rest up."

Sister Four waved her hand, "You, too."

"Teacher Zhang, see you tomorrow." The camera crew also said goodbye to him.

They walked together toward the corridor where Zhang Ye sent them off before he headed back to Studio 7. He went straight to the makeup room and switched on the lights. He did not leave, but was making another round of serious considerations of the program's set layout, making detailed changes to

the decorations, colors, lighting effects, *etc.* In the past, the proposal stated it in a simpler form, with just a general description. Now that he had become the person in charge of the whole program, he would have to do everything step by step. This could be considered as an on-the-job training process to gain more experience and improve himself.

After finishing the set layout plan, Zhang Ye immediately gave a call to the set layout department's staff. He added some requirements to the original plan and told them how it should be decorated. Then he expressed his hope that they would complete the job by tomorrow.

That person had probably already been asleep at home, "Sure, I understand."

Zhang Ye could hear that he was distracted, so he said, "Bro, my program only has two or three days of preparation time left. Please do me a favor. I will give everyone a treat when the time comes."

That person did not say much, "Sure, Teacher Zhang. Please do not be worried. We will go over earlier tomorrow and complete the task by tomorrow night."

"Then thank you." Zhang Ye hung up.

After that, Zhang Ye went out from the makeup room to the recording studio to survey the place. He made some gestures to confirm his thoughts before preparing to take a rest. Looking at his watch, good God, it was already after 11. There were probably no more public buses at this time and it was too far from the apartment to walk. So Zhang Ye looked over at the audience seats and decided to stay the night.

Di, di.

Dong Shanshan's message: Are you coming back?

Zhang Ye immediately replied: It's too late; I will sleep over at the office.

Dong Shanshan: I had some food left for you. Alright then, rest early.

Zhang Ye was extremely touched: Thank you, classmate Dong. You sleep early, too.

Dong Shanshan: OK, classmate Zhang.

Zhang Ye smiled a little and put his cellphone away. Hugging his own head, he

stared up at the ceiling. He was overly tired, but he couldn't sleep. It was such a busy day that there was nothing better to mention. However, the benefits he had reaped were tremendous. He understood the roles and functions of the team much more in-depth now, as his experience and knowledge of the television industry had taken another step in growth. It had been a good learning experience. If ever he had to make another new program, he was sure that he could do it easily.

And with a talk show that he had shaped with his own mind and body, Zhang Ye believed that the result would be a lot better than him instructing other people to arrange and set up the show for him. After all, this was done according to his own thoughts and considerations. There would be no chance of forgetting something or careless mistakes as he sought to reproduce his previous world's matured form of talk shows. With this experience, he could see clearer than anyone and knew how best to execute the plan. So tiring himself a little bit more was something that Zhang Ye would take on voluntarily. Such sacrifice would definitely bring rewards. Leaving it to others to do the work for him would have made him worried because these people didn't even know what a talk show was. The people of this world had never even heard of it!

New program.....

Thinking of this, Zhang Ye fell silent once more.

Would the people of this world be able to accept a form of entertainment arts like a talk show?

The talk show would definitely be very popular. Zhang Ye never doubted this, nor questioned it. But in his previous world, a talk show's popularity took time to build up. Whether it was the earliest foreign talk shows or China's gradual importation of talk shows, the results were the same. The masses needed some time to slowly accept it. But today, Zhang Ye couldn't wait for such a build up. The Leader had requested for the first trial episode to have a guaranteed 500,000 views!

No way!

He needed to ensure it!

F**k! Then this bro will strengthen the content of the program!

Zhang Ye sat up and decided to redo his plans for the program he had previously decided on. It was to greatly maximize the reach to his audience! It was not that he lacked confidence, but he wanted to do the very best that he could. He wanted to be sure of the quality, as such an opportunity did not come often. He had already been alienated by several provincial television stations, as well as city-level television stations. It was not easy for him to obtain the chance to work in the WebTV industry, so if there were any mistakes, he would no longer be able to work in this line anymore. He had to shock the people who looked down on him or those who were pessimistic about him!

Looking at the game ring's total Reputation points, "I'll speak for myself" had given Zhang Ye a total of 1.2 million Reputation points. This was an unexpected joy, hence Zhang Ye did not hesitate to use the 1.2 million Reputation points to buy a total of 12 Memory Search Capsules!

In the past, Zhang Ye had already decided on Wang Zijian's "Tonight 80's Talk Show", and had used the Memory Search Capsules to store many episodes in his brain. Why did he choose it? One of the reasons was because it was one of the most "talk show-like" programs, at least in terms of format. As the pioneer of talk shows, Zhang Ye naturally wanted to choose a relatively authentic talk show program. He could not choose a "talk show variant" program like "Bao Zou Big News Events" as the first one to put forth to the audience. If he did, it would suffer even greater limitations.

Secondly, the joke segments used in "Tonight 80's Talk Show" were relatively "independent". It was more "all-purpose", which usually described some rough social phenomenon, but the specifics were not mentioned. Even if he said it, no one would understand it. This was something that Zhang Ye valued the most. If he used something like Zhou Libo's "Mr. Zhou Live Show", many of the matters discussed pinpointed to the time, place and person, and was a result of a certain factual incident, then Zhang Ye would not be able to perform. After all, the things that happened in his world might not happen in this one. Even if they had, it was useless to talk about outdated stuff.

As such, "Tonight 80's Talk Show" was put forth as his agenda.

But now, Zhang Ye had changed his mind again. He wanted to make the program even better. After all, "Tonight 80's Talk Show" was also limited in its

audience. The people who liked it, loved it. Those who did not like it would find it dispensable. There were certain joke segments that were indeed not as humorous. It could at most curve a person's mouth. This was something that Zhang Ye needed to improve on.

How was he to improve?

Of course by taking the merits of the respective shows!

Zhang Ye had a bold idea. In his world, due to a host's style and the source of the joke segments, coupled with the involvement of copyright, many things were set in stone. There was no way to take merits from various sources, but Zhang Ye could. Zhang Ye had the opportunity to do so. If he took one of the many excellent talk show programs from his world to be its foundation, then blended all the classic joke segments from other programs to form a program, what sort of result would he obtain by concentrating all the essence of talk show programs?

Ha, just thinking of it made him excited!

For example, in "Bao Zou Big News Events", much of the sharp ridicule and funny mockery were unrivaled amongst all the similar talk shows! And for example, "Mr. Zhou Live Show", it would occasionally include some segments that had funny connotations. It was interesting, but not vulgar. It was thought-provoking and was also a major feature. It was something that no one could imitate! And then there was "Dapeng Talk Show". Although its results could not compared with the three aforementioned programs, it had a very unique style! Then there was the Beijing provincial station's "Talk Show". It was considered one of the worst talk show programs, but there were also remarkable joke segments that could be used. This was all the wisdom of people crystallized into one. Besides, Zhang Ye did not need to worry about copyright problems. He could use all the joke segments. As for his hosting style, Zhang Ye still had not created a hosting persona for himself yet, so he did not need to worry about it. He could speak as he wished. He just needed the joke segments to be properly fused together without conflicts!

What are you saying?

Why isn't one of the talk shows, "Good Show", mentioned?

Stop joking! “Good Show” was like a man-sized child program!

Anyway, the more Zhang Ye thought of it, the more excited he became. He could not longer suppress it. He impatiently ate the first Memory Search Capsule and began to recall the “Mr. Zhou Live Show” he had watched in college!

Then it was “Bao Zou Big News Events”...

Then “Dapeng Talk Show”...

Every capsule only lasted five minutes, so very quickly, an hour had passed.

He had finished the 12 capsules. Zhang Ye had only reinforced his memory of about 4-5% of all the outstanding talk show programs of his world. As there was too much information, and it was even video and audio information, it was a lot more complicated than pure text. Hence, the consumption rate of the Memory Search Capsules was relatively higher. However, this was enough. Zhang Ye relied on these memories to mix and edit them together. It was enough to make eight or nine episodes. And after the program was broadcast, he would gain a constant amount of Reputation points, which would allow him to carry on buying Memory Search Capsules until “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” perfectly ended!

It’s done!

Time to arrange his memories!

Zhang Ye did not need to use pen and paper. He only closed his eyes as the images from his memory search appeared one after the other. Even the number of times the talk show’s host blinked was remembered by him clearly. He then arranged all the segments in the talk show programs that he found suitable. Sorting, merging, denying it or not, then he repeated this job.

“Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”!

The first talk show program of this world!

Zhang Ye wanted to draw on the strong points of some to make up for the weak points of others. He wanted to push this program that had his name on it to the extreme!

Chapter 238: Talk Show's Recording Begins!

Two days later.

Sunday morning.

Zhang Ye was not woken by an alarm, but woke up naturally. He comfortably stretched his back and got up from bed. The door to Dong Shanshan's room was open. She had been busying herself with her new program for the past few days. She must have went to work, but there was a slightly warm breakfast placed on the table.

There was soybean milk.

There was fried dough sticks.

Clearly, they were specially brought back by Dong Shanshan for him.

Zhang Ye felt warmth in his heart. After washing up and eating breakfast, he enjoyed a hot bath. Only after coming out did he lay on a couch to watch the news on TV. Zhang Ye had been so busy for the past two days that he did not even know himself. Describing everything in disorder was not even enough. The props required his attention. The costumes needed to be reserved by him. The proposals needed to be written by him. He also had to take on the role of Director. The good thing was that he had managed to finish the final stages of the work required. Today was the first day's recording of "Zhang Ye's Talk Show". Yesterday night, Zhang Ye had come home very early and slept soundly for once. There was no way around it. He needed to ensure that he was in a good mental state when he recorded. If he was sloppy, how was he to record the program?

The morning news aired.

"Shanghai and Shenzhen stock markets have plunged once again!"

“This month, there have already been three cases of people committing suicide due to stock speculation!”

“From the analysis of industry experts, it is only a matter of time before the market index drops below 1,500 points.”

“The entire country has launched a green campaign. No driving, only taking public transport, so as to emulate foreign countries.”

“People in first-tier northern cities are experiencing an acceleration in their pace of life. Many people cannot endure this pace and are choosing to leave the northern cities.”

Zhang Ye watched this without blinking. He paid great attention to this as he was looking for some news elements to decide on the joke segments he was to use today. After all, a talk show kept pace with the ongoings in society. He needed to resonate with actual events, so as to tickle the funny bones of people. Hence, Zhang Ye naturally could not just casually use the talk show joke segments from his world. He had to find similar events in this world. Well, if his unit's Leaders knew that this fellow, Zhang Ye, had not determined his program's content until the day of the f**king recording, they would probably sit on him and crush him to his death! However, this was Zhang Ye's style. He had always done his work in such a manner. He had many things on his mind, but they could not be used haphazardly. It had to match the situation and time. It had to be just right in order to maximally expound his knowledge!

The news ended. Zhang Ye had a rough plan of the program's content. He did not take notes and already knew how he was going to do the first episode.

Checking on the web, the live tickets to “Zhang Ye's Talk Show” had already finished balloting. Other than the staff that were in the live audience, the rest were lucky members of the audience who were allocated tickets through an online application. The people just needed to provide identification on entry. It was very fair. It was also a way to interact with the netizens. This way, it could increase the program's cohesion and attractiveness.

A total of 60 lucky winners were chosen.

“Haha, I got it. I'm too lucky!”

“What did you get? A lottery ticket?”

“The live tickets to ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’!”

“Heh, what’s there to celebrate about? It would be a wonder if that talk show thing is any good. I wouldn’t want to go even if you gave me the tickets. Am I to go there and sleep?”

“Upstairs, I may admit that the ‘I’ll speak for myself’ commercial was done pretty well, and the buzz it stirred up was pretty big, but a new program still depends on its content. What’s the value to watching a program that just takes joke segments from the internet? Aren’t they taking the audience as fools!? Hur hur. It’s not that you are luckily getting the tickets, it’s because too few people applied. Whoever applied would get it!”

“Don’t say it that way. I actually would love to go there and see how how terrible that talk show is, so that I can trample on it when I get back!”

“Upstairs, you are hero. You are risking your life to scan for landmines!”

“Haha. I’m also looking forward to Zhang Ye’s new program. I actually want to see how many people will curse at him. That Zhang Ye, he sure is one of a kind. He has pretty good qualifications, so why doesn’t he carry on lecturing on history? Why must he do some program that the world has never seen? He’s just seeking death! I actually liked Zhang Ye quite a bit in the past. But now, I have turned from fan to anti-fan. This program has disappointed me too greatly. In the future, my daily mission is to curse at Zhang Ye while eating and sleeping! Hell hath no fury like a lover scorned . Zhang Ye has really made a huge mistake this time!”

“Hai, what a pity.”

“He is being irresponsible!”

“Right, making a program just by using a few jokes on the internet? This is really treating the audience as fools! Only an idiot would watch that talk or whatever show!”

With the buzz of “I’ll speak for myself” gone, many antis of Zhang Ye appeared once again. The criticism and doubts of his new program appeared once again!

Zhang Ye was already used to it and did not mind.

But suddenly, a verified account on Weibo posted a message!

It was Deputy Station Head Jia from Beijing Radio Station back when he worked there. He was a person who suppressed Zhang Ye in every possible way. The reason why Zhang Ye left the radio station was directly attributed to him, as they had tore all decorum. Deputy Station Head Jia said, “It looks like it was a very good decision for our radio station not to keep Zhang Ye back then. Some people become blindly arrogant after obtaining a bit of results, thinking that they are the smartest person in the world. They believe that they can kickstart a program that has never appeared in this world. I find it all very funny now. Weiwo is also quite a large WebTV company in the industry. I really do not understand... Why would you allow such a trash program to be broadcast? Do you not have the most basic level of judgment and appreciation towards the arts? Anyone who has eyes would know that that talk show will not succeed!”

Following that, Beijing Radio Station’s radio announcer, Jia Yan, added onto the thread. He was Deputy Station Head Jia’s relative. “A program like this can be called a talk show? I think calling it joke show would be more appropriate. Is this a new program format? Although they have not released a lot of official information about the program, I can in no way see any new format that lies in it. Linking all the jokes together is considered skill? Even an elementary school student can do it!”

Then, Beijing Radio Station’s child of the Station Leader’s friend, Zhāng Yě, appeared. He was the person whose Silver Microphone Award was stolen by Zhang Ye due to the Lucky Bread. His tone was bad, too. “All smokes and tricks, playing to the gallery. To insist on being the number one in this world, I advise everyone not to watch ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’. This sort of program wastes both your time and energy. It’s not worth watching!”

“Propping!”

“Supporting Teacher Little Yě!”

“Well said. This sort of program is trash!”

Many Weibo fans of those people replied to the thread.

Zhang Ye laughed instead of turning mad. Seeing these familiar names, he would have forgotten them if they did not stand forward again. Zhang Ye had turned extremely popular after he job-hopped to the television station, and this bunch of people had remained silent. Now, with Zhang Ye job hopping again to make another new program, this bunch of people tried to kick him while he was down when the tide of comments were against his “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”?

It was just a few trivial people!

Zhang Ye did not even bother replying to them. They were still the same words that he had said back when he left Beijing Radio Station. Don’t be ready to shout, just wait and see!

Ring, ring, ring. A phone call came in.

Zhang Ye was slightly surprised. The caller was Beijing Television Station’s Hu Fei, who was also his old Leader. “Hello, Brother Hu. Why did you call me?”

Hu Fei asked, “Are you really planning on doing that talk show?”

Zhang Ye chuckled, “That’s right. You don’t think much of it, too?”

“Kid, you sure are too bold.” Hu Fei did not say that he was pessimistic of it, but it was clear from his tone. He was just being euphemistic.

Zhang Ye said in amusement, “I’m not good at anything. I am just a bit more bold.”

Hu Fei was tickled by him, “All the best then. I’ll watch it on time tomorrow. Xiao Lu, Dafei and company have been supporting you all along. Don’t let us down.”

Zhang Ye said indifferently, “I won’t.”

After hanging up, Zhang Ye left upon looking at the time.

.....

9:30 A.M.

Weiwo company’s Studio 7.

In the makeup room backstage, Zhang Ye sat in front of the mirror, allowing a female makeup artist to apply his makeup. This was actually the first time that

Zhang Ye was putting on makeup. In the past, he would at most have his hair styled. Back in the Radio Station, it was not required, as his face was not seen. When he was in the television station, Zhang Ye was lecturing on a historical program, and since he did not have a dark face, it did not matter. But this time, it was different. It was an entertainment program. There was a lot more to a host's image. Since this was his first recording, he naturally needed to dress up.

The female makeup artist asked, "How do you want it done?"

Zhang Ye casually said, "Just make me into something like Takeshi Kaneshiro."

"...Who is Takeshi Kaneshiro?" The makeup artist asked with bewilderment.

"Uh, then do it such that I look like a Korean idol." Zhang Ye smiled after noticing that the makeup artist was at a loss of whether to laugh or to cry, "Just joking. Relax."

She said, "Then I'll do it simple?"

"Alright, I'll leave it to you." Zhang Ye trusted a professional's perspective.

As he was doing his makeup, a person rushed over, "Teacher Zhang, what color should your clothes be? Or should it be a western suit? Should I bring them all here?"

Zhang Ye said, "Since it's the first episode, get me something more bright-colored. Red or green would do, to make it seem more festive."

"Alright, I'll bring it over." The staff member hurried away.

The voice of a Field Director that had been newly transferred over echoed in his headset. "All teams, we are 30 minutes away from the audience's entry. Make haste!"

Even if Zhang Ye was all-powerful, he was also unable to take on every role. For example, about seven makeup artists, a Field Director and miscellaneous staff were arranged by Director Wang over the past two days to take up their roles. The person with absolute authority over the program team was Zhang Ye. He was also the only person in the the senior and middle roles. He had seven people under him, but the gap between their responsibilities was very huge.

"It's done," the female make-up artist snapped her fingers.

Zhang Ye looked into the mirror, but on first glance, he did not seem to have transformed. However, the transformation could be seen on camera due to the lighting. “Alright, I’m going!”

Chapter 239: Talk Show's Recording...Really Begins!

9:30 A.M.

The main stage of the recording studio.

Zhang Ye started busying himself the moment that he came from backstage to coordinate all the tasks, "Do a lighting test again; make sure everything is working well. Stage Choreographer, please do a test for the sound again. Hey, hey, hey. This side of my ear piece seems like there's a problem with the volume. Help me adjust it. Cameras, do a few seconds of trial recording. The three cameras must not have any problems. I usually follow my flow when it comes to recording; the quality will be affected if I need to re-record it. Let's aim for a single recording, okay?"

"Teacher Zhang, the seats are not enough!"

"Why did you only notice that now? How many are we short of?"

"Because the internal tickets were a little over-subscribed, we are still short by ten seats!"

"Go to logistics and get a few more. If the colors are different, place them at the back row, so we don't affect the picture quality. Everyone, check again for any problems. The audience will be arriving soon!"

The show had not even started yet, but Zhang Ye's voice was already hoarse!

The other programs had teams that had their work divided up properly; every job had a specialist and leader commanding the role. But Zhang Ye's team was different. The leadership role was all solely his, so anyone who had any problems would come to him for answers. This caused him to be very busy as he had to give instructions out, one after another. Zhang Ye was preparing to use "Tonight

80's Talkshow" as his talk show foundation. But because of budget and other constraints, he had to cancel the DJ segment and the celebrity guest interviews.

Firstly, it was because he did not have the budget to invite some famous celebrity. Secondly, interviews and game segments had their supporters and detractors. Some liked it a lot, yet there were also many who disliked it a lot, so Zhang Ye decided against using those segments. Interviews, for what they're worth, were usually platforms for a celebrity to do promotional activities only. Zhang Ye did not want his program to have a mixture of these useless segments, at least not initially. So he prepared a full half hour of solo talk show performance. This also saved a lot of effort on other things. Otherwise, he would be even more busy today!

Outside, the doors opened.

It was not the audience, but the Leaders and other colleagues who came in. They were all holding internal tickets to attend the recording.

Zhang Ye saw them. Not only had Director Wang Xiong attended, even his Leader from the WebTV department, Feng Guiqin, also came. There were two other company Leaders and other seniors from his department. It wasn't strange, as usually for a new program's first recording, a group of leaders would attend to do their assessments. This was to ensure the program's quality. In the group were also Ah Qian, Little Yu and Wang Bei. Dong Shanshan might have been too busy with her work to attend, but the other hosts from the department were also taking part in this recording, like Teacher Gong and Teacher Han. He did not know if they had come to see Zhang Ye make a joke of himself or something else.

The Leaders had arrived, but Zhang Ye did not go to greet them because he did not have the time to deal with those things. He was already struggling to deal with his roles.

"Teacher Zhang!"

"Come over for a moment!"

"This light's damaged!"

"The earpiece volume can't be adjusted; will need to get it changed!"

When they arrived in the studio, all they saw was an extremely busy Zhang Ye. Only then did they understand how it would look like if there was only one person handling all of the team's work.

They sat at the front row.

Feng Guiqin frowned, "Is Little Zhang able to handle all of this by himself?"

Wang Xiong turned his head to her, "It should be okay. He handled everything well the past few days. From the title introduction and props to the planning, all of these were done by him."

Feng Guiqin nodded, "Have you seen the program's content yet?"

"Not yet. I did not receive anything, not even the program's script. Seeing how busy Little Zhang was, I did not ask him for it." Wang Xiong threw up his hands.

Onstage, Zhang Ye suddenly noticed the center of the stage. There was a rack in front of his position, so he pulled it up and asked, "What's this for?"

That person blinked, "To hold the script."

Zhang Ye immediately waved his hands, "Get rid of it!"

"Ah? Remove it?" That person replied in ridicule, "How can we get rid of that?"

When Sister Four who personally came over to help out heard the commotion, she asked, "What's the matter, Wang?"

Wang said nervously, "Sister Four, Teacher Zhang said to remove the rack for the script. This...."

Sister Four was also stunned. She looked at Zhang Ye and said, "If we take it away, where will you put the manuscript? Where will you place the script at? Your program's at least 30 minutes long. If you consider the parts that need to be edited out, then you need to record at least 40-50 minutes. That's nearly an hour! How will you be able to record? Off script?"

But no one expected Zhang Ye to reply matter-of-factly, "Of course, it will be off script. I am a host. Do you expect me to read off a script? What a disgrace! If I am going to be a host like that, you might as well find any random person to come do it!"

Zhang Ye set very high standards for himself and his job. In his previous world, if a talk show artist were to host by reading from a script, then it would be too disgraceful. Even if they couldn't remember their lines, they would use a teleprompter that was not filmed by the camera. Like when Zhou Libo first started doing talk shows, he had also used a rack to place his script on. Every line he said, he would refer to it. Finally, only after he was criticized and mocked by people did he slowly go off script. But Zhang Ye did not need such a process.

Sister Four and the staff around were in disbelief, "You can go totally off script?"

"This is a basic quality as a host, right?" Zhang Ye did not make much of a fuss about it. In his world, there were many outrageous people like that.

Sister Four said, "But you have to be prepared just in case."

Another youth said, "Yeah, Teacher Zhang. If you really forget a line, at least there's backup."

Zhang Ye said without explaining further, "There won't be any in the case of me. Nor will I forget. If I say to remove it, then quickly remove it. We need to hurry!"

Two miscellaneous staff could only obey and they removed the rack.

Sister Four had a bad feeling about it, so she asked, "Comrade Little Zhang, don't tell me that it is because you don't have a script?"

Zhang Ye replied, "I've never needed a script for my recordings, never ever."

Sister Four, "....."

Staff, "....."

All of the Leaders and colleagues also heard this from below the stage!

No script? Not even the content for the program was written? Everyone nearly fainted. D*mn! Just how confident are you! Do you need to be so relaxed? Not even having a script prepared? Most of the masses were not optimistic about his new program to begin with, but with this, everyone would never believe that a program could be good if there wasn't even a script! If it turned out to be a mess, the Leaders might not even approve the release of the first episode of the

program!

Teacher Han was speechless, “What the hell is he doing?”

Wang Bei smiled. “This could precisely be the legend that says a skilled man is a daredevil?”

“So what if his skills are good? He’d better not mess things up. If he does, let’s see how he clears the sh*t up!” Teacher Gong had lost the last shred of confidence that he had for Zhang Ye’s program.

Even for people like them who had been in the business longer than Zhang Ye, they could not do without a script for a long program like this. It was not that they had never seen a person like that, but those were the craziest people of the hosting world. Only a few talented people were able to achieve that level of hosting. Of course, they didn’t believe that Zhang Ye could do it!

Chapter 240: The Live Scene Filled with a Volley of Laughter!

9:45.

The exterior door to the recording studio finally opened.

Here, the doors that led from the office corridors straight into the recording studio were called interior doors. This was the entrance for employees. The door that blocked the passageway that led from the hall to the recording studio was called an exterior door. The audience was led by the staff into Studio 7.

“Wow!”

“The decorations are pretty good!”

“This stage is quite cool!”

“Is that Zhang Ye?”

“It’s him, it’s him! I’ve seen him in person!”

The moment the crowd entered, a few girls began praising.

The stage design was naturally Zhang Ye’s work. He had referenced the stages from his world’s “Tonight 80’s Talkshow” and “Mr. Zhou Live Show”.

The audience was seated, and the nearly hundred seats were quickly filled up.

At this moment, from the employee passage, Dong Shanshan came in, late. When she entered, she glanced at Zhang Ye and gave him a sexy smile of encouragement.

“Shanshan, here.” Zhang Han, who had a good relationship with her, waved.

Dong Shanshan sat in the second row. Zhang Han had already reserved a seat for her.

Zhang Ye took a deep breath and said into the microphone, “All are stations ready?”

“Lighting is good.”

“Cameras are okay!”

“The audience is here. Close the doors!”

Everyone responded as they were ready to go.

Zhang Ye nodded, “Alright, then we’ll begin in a minute. Make your preparations!”

Sister Four had recorded quite a few programs, so she was quite professional. She reminded Zhang Ye, “Teacher Little Zhang, let’s record the smiles and applause of the audience first. Take the lead.”

However, Zhang Ye smiled. “There’s no need, Sister Four. That would be too fake.”

Sister Four exclaimed, “Fake? But, everyone does that.”

Zhang Ye was particularly concerned with professional conduct, “If everyone wants to laugh, they will naturally laugh. If they don’t want to, there’s no point in forcing it.”

Sister Four said helplessly, “Alright then. You are the person in charge. We’ll follow your lead.”

The time had already begun counting down. The audience was still chatting, seemingly listless. They were not that interested in the program.

“What are you looking at?”

“Hai, the stocks have fallen again!”

“You are speculating, too? Me, too. The crash during these past few days has been terrible. It’s green* all day! My heart has already turned cold watching it! How can it drop so much?”

“Hey, isn’t this Old Zhang? You also got a ticket? What a coincidence. Did you drive here? Give me a lift later?”

“I didn’t drive. Isn’t there some green campaign now? The news said that the

foreigners don't drive and only take public transport. I also want to emulate it."

"Are you sure?"

"Damn, actually it was because there was a jam!"

"Hahaha! That's true. If you drove, you wouldn't even be here by 11!"

"Let's keep it quiet; the program is beginning soon."

"So what if it begins? I'm already regretting coming here. Didn't you hear? This program has been cursed terribly on the internet. Everyone says it's bad!"

"Yeah, I don't think it will work either."

"I've heard so many jokes. What can be new!?"

"That's right. Will he be able to sprout flowers from his jokes? I really don't believe he can!"

"The chatter on the internet is right. What talk show? All I see is a joke show. What does it mean to talk? I really can't tell!"

The audience muttered. It was unknown what agenda some people had. The moment that they came, they leaned back in their seats and slept. They did not look like they had any expectations.

Seeing the audience's reaction, Zhang Ye laughed without a word.

The company's Leaders and Dong Shanshan, Ah Qian and Little Yu were all somewhat worried. If a few people did not think highly of it, it was still fine, but for nearly all the audience to hardly look forward to it? This was abnormal. Did it indicate that the program itself had a major design flaw from the onset? They were sighing deeply in their hearts. The other rival web hosts did not care how bad Zhang Ye's program was, but as Zhang Ye's old classmate, Dong Shanshan was naturally more worried and concerned than others.

Three...

Two...

One...

The countdown came to an end!

The program officially started!

Shua! The screen behind Zhang Ye started broadcasting a video clip!

“You only smell my cologne, but didn’t see my sweat. You have your rules, I have my choices. You deny my existence, I decide my future.....”

This had been seen a countless number of times by the audience. These days, anyone who watched a video would see the commercial, “I’ll speak for myself” at the beginning. It gave a rush the first time one watched it, but anyone would turn numb towards it by the tenth view. Hence, when they saw this, those members of the audience who were already dozing off became even sleepier!

But at the end, a reversal happened!

“I am Zhang Ye, I’ll speak for myself!”

Zhang Ye poured a bag of salt into his mouth. The caption was shattered and replaced by—“I’ll feed a bag of salt to myself”!

A girl burst out into laughter seeing this. A few members of the audience lit up too. This was quite a modest surprise for them. Some felt it was very funny, but there were people who didn’t find it especially funny. But it was humorous. It made people unable to help but curve their lips!

A good clip!

This clip was amazing!

The next moment, those people who were dozing sat up with a start. This new program seemed to interest them a little!

With the clip ending, the scene was cut to the studio.

There was no one onstage. Zhang Ye had already gone backstage.

Then a voice was heard. It was clearly Zhang Ye’s voice, “Alright, let us welcome our famous host... Zhang Ye!”

“Hahaha!”

“Pfft!”

“Why is he welcoming himself!?”

Many people were tickled. Even Wang Bei and Ah Qian began to crack up!

The curtains were drawn apart. Zhang Ye walked forward from backstage and waved to everyone, “Hello, everyone. I am Zhang Ye. Thank you, thank you. This is live from ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’. Welcome, everyone!” Then he added on, “Parentheses, there should be a thunderous round of applause here!”

“Yi!”

“Yi!”

The audience humored him and began responding. “Yi” was a universal language. It was often heard from the audience in cross-talk.

Wang Xiong lost his composure and laughed, “This Little Zhang!”

The audience gave him face as they really applauded!

Seeing the audience and the brilliant stage, Zhang Ye was feeling very excited. This was his new territory and his new program. He wanted to do it well, and he also had to do it well. Seeing the atmosphere liven up, Zhang Ye cut to the chase. He struck while the iron was still hot and began his monologue performance. He held a few cards in his hand. They were of all sized and this was a setting and joke segment from “Bao Zou Big News Events”. Zhang Ye felt it was not bad, so he brought it here.

“After I left the television station, many friends were worried about the future. They even ran a ‘Help Zhang Ye find a job’ campaign. Thank you, everyone. Now, you can see that this is my new job and program. Just now, a few members of the stage staff passed me a few letters from my fans. I’ll read them out and let’s see what sort of sincere interest and concern my passionate fans have sent me!”

Letters from fans?

When did that happen? Who sent you letters? And even the concern from passionate fans? Wang Xiong and Zhang Ye’s colleagues were filled with wonder!

Zhang Ye took out the first card and read it with his head lowered, “Let’s look at the first fan. The tenderness when you bend your head low. He said this, ‘Zhang Ye! Your sister! Why haven’t you freaking come out with a new program!? Do you not freaking believe I will smash your glass, asshole!?’” Zhang

Ye stopped and threw the card away. He dryly smiled. “The concern and passion the fans have for me really touches me! Thank you, thank you!”

Everyone burst out into laughter!

Concern, your sister!

He was clearly cursing you!

Zhang Ye read the next one, “The second letter is a self-proclaimed die-hard fan. He said this, ‘Zhang Ye! If you are not producing a new program this weekend, I’ll die!’”. Zhang Ye wiped his sweat off his brow and then stared into the camera in a daze, “This letter was sent a month ago! We just received it yesterday. Then... Sorry, my die-hard brother. After prolonged consideration, I really do not have the courage to get back to you.”

“Hahaha!”

The audience erupted into laughter again!

Dong Shanshan slapped her thigh and was overjoyed!

Zhang Ye carried on reading, “The third letter. Wow, this was sent by a female fan...” Zhang Ye then appeared to read excitedly with his head lowered, “I! Really! Want! To! Have! A! Baby! With! You! Zhang Ye!”

The audience exclaimed!

“Wow!”

Saying that, Zhang Ye’s expression turned blank and then carried on reading with a weak tone, “...Please pass these words...to Teacher Dong Shanshan!”

Audience: “Hahahaha!”

The camera immediately focused on Dong Shanshan!

Dong Shanshan was stunned and then burst into laughter. Why was I even included in this?

Wang Bei, who was beside her, began to slapping the armrest while laughing, “Aiyah! I’m so amused!”

Zhang Ye looked with a speechless manner at the letter. He made a move. He began tearing the card in front of the camera with his teeth, ripping off the

words “Please pass these words to Teacher Dong Shanshan” bit by bit. This was something that did not exist in “Bao Zou Big News Events”. It was an improv that Zhang Ye added himself. He then gave a wretched smile and cleared his throat. He looked up again and read it again, “...I really want to have a baby with you! Zhang Ye!” Then he threw up his hands and sighed, “Hai, the fans nowadays are way too passionate! Too passionate!”

“Yi!”

“Yi!”

The audience burst into laughter!

He was too shameless! Haha!

Where’s your bottom line!? Exactly where is your bottom line!?

Zhang Ye ignored the response of the audience and then carried on flipping to a new card in a calm manner, “Oh, there’s another fan who says this. Teacher Zhang Ye, I really like your hosting style. Well, can you help me pass this message to Teacher Dong Shanshan...” Upon reading this, Zhang Ye immediately tore up the card and threw it away, pretending like he had never read it before. “Hur hur hur hur. Alright, let’s cut all this useless stuff and focus on our main topic!”

Dong Shanshan looked at Zhang Ye at a loss as whether to laugh or to cry.

“Aiyah!”

“I can’t take it anymore!”

“Hilarious!”

“It’s so freaking hilarious!”

The audience reaction was intense!

*In China, stocks prices are indicated by green and red, but the colors are inverted from the West. Red, which is an auspicious color in Chinese culture, represents the stock price rising. Green represents the stock price decreasing.

Chapter 241: The First Episode of a Talk Show Comes to a Successful Ending!

Live.

The atmosphere had livened up!

The guys who were dozing off seemed like they had been injected with stimulants. They were staring widely and were in high spirits!

Wang Xiong's mouth was already aching from laughing, "This Little Zhang!"

Feng Guiqin looked at the talking Zhang Ye as she nodded slightly.

"Let's see how it goes." Another company Leader was also very excited.

The other colleagues had similar reactions. Just from the opening scene and the enlivened atmosphere, it had drawn the attention of everyone!

It was even more so for the audience. It was obvious from the cheers and applause!

Zhang Ye pressed his hand down and said, "Alright, thank you, everyone." The applause came to a stop. He then said seriously, "Everyone should know that for me to reach here step by step, I have my fans, I have my program and can be considered a success." He adjusted his tie, "A person like me, a superstar like me..."

The audience began to respond!

"Yi!"

"Oh!"

"Haha!"

Zhang Ye blinked with a questioning look at the audience, "...But this isn't the

punchline?”

“Pfft!” The moment they heard this, the audience tumbled around laughing!

“Alright, it is.” Zhang Ye touched his forehead, “Today, I have succeeded. Whenever I think of the humiliation I suffered when I was a child, as that boy who would be bullied in school in the day, and at night.. rejected by girls.” After saying this, Zhang Ye coughed and sobbed, “The people of that era who alienated me because of my excellence would probably never have expected that this day would come.” Zhang Ye looked towards the camera and pointed at it, saying seriously, “So today, I want to speak to the camera. All those watching this program, all those who previously bullied me, listen up! Your name will constantly appear in here as jokes!” Saying that, he fiercely pointed at the camera twice!

“Hahaha!”

Everyone laughed and clapped.

Of course, there were a few exceptions.

It was now during the trading hours of the stock market, so clearly there were a few people looking down at their cellphones. They seemed to be watching their stocks and were looking worried.

Zhang Ye smiled. “Some people might not know me or are not familiar with me. Let me introduce myself. I’m Zhang Ye, a proper Beijinger. I’ve come all this way to Shanghai for a few days now. I often miss my hometown. For example, I still have a few colleagues who are Shanghainese locals. Every time we are homesick, for example, when I miss Beijing, I will go get a roast duck for myself. For example, when two of my northeastern colleagues miss home, they would eat dumplings, so as to relieve their homesickness. I also have another colleague, who is also my college classmate. Her name is Dong Shanshan.”

Dong Shanshan, “...”

Here it comes! Here it comes again!

The moment the audience heard Dong Shanshan’s name, they felt like laughing.

Wang Bei, Zhang Han and company also looked at Dong Shanshan, smiling. They used their legs to hit her.

Zhang Ye said, “Dong Shanshan is from Inner Mongolia. Whenever she misses home, it’s a bit tricky...” He paused and suddenly made a reversal, “So whenever she’s yearning for Inner Mongolia in Shanghai, she would go to the stock exchange.” Zhang Ye then waved his hand in an affectionate gesture, “Look at that endless expanse of green!”

A few people, who were cursing in their hearts about why the stocks were plunging every day, looked up and burst out into laughter when they heard this.

“Ahahahaha!”

“Aiyah, that’s too funny!”

“Do you think that’s the [grasslands](#) !?”

Even those who were not speculating in stocks were tickled!

Now the entire stock market was green*. Everything was plunging daily. This joke segment of Zhang Ye’s was able to match the current affairs, which made the effect even better!

It was unknown what expression was on Dong Shanshan’s face. She was furious and tickled. The camera was focused on her once again, capturing every facial expression of hers.

Wang Bei joked, “Shanshan, you must beat him up later!”

Zhang Han was also feeling the strain from laughing, “Teacher Zhang Ye is too humorous! Aiyah, I can’t laugh any further! My jaw is already stiff!”

Zhang Ye’s joke segments came fast and furious. It was all very well-connected together. It did not seem stiff. “The stocks have been plunging all this while, but the prices of goods keep rising. The only thing that doesn’t increase is wages. Some people say that the pace of life in first-tier cities like Beijing and Shanghai is too fast. There’s such a statement, right?”

This was him interacting with the audience. It was also a particular feature of talk shows.

“That’s right.”

“Yes.”

“That’s correct.”

The audience responded.

Zhang Ye looked at them, “You guys also agree to it?” No one understood what Zhang Ye was getting at. They blinked quietly at him. Following that, Zhang Ye said, “I don’t agree with it. Furthermore, I think this statement is extremely ridiculous and childish! The pace of life is too fast in first-tier cities like Beijing and Shanghai? The people who say these words definitely must not have lived in a first-tier city!” The moment he finished saying that, he suddenly gave a stifled expression and said loudly, “It’s fast? Let me ask you! Have you taken a car in Shanghai or Beijing? Eh? Have you downloaded videos at work? Eh? What do you mean, ‘it’s fast’!?”

The crowd was stunned before they erupted into laughter!

Zhang Ye did not stop. He did not allow anyone a breather or a dull moment, “With cars mentioned, I recall some news today that I saw on Central TV’s morning news. Now, they are trying to go green when traveling. Did everyone see it?”

“Saw it.”

“Right.”

“This news has been repeated for days.”

The audience echoed.

Zhang Ye gave a look of resignation, “The news keeps saying that foreigners buy cars not to drive, but to put them at home. Foreigners only take public buses and trains to work!” Then he threw up his hands, “Alright, can I not believe it?”

“Pfft!”

“Yi!”

“Hahaha!”

Zhang Ye’s “Can I not believe it” poked straight into the ribs of many!

The sarcasm was too intense. Are you sure you can say that?

Zhang Ye said innocently, “I scrimped and saved, tightening my belt through great difficulty, before I could buy a car. Then the TV tells me to immediately rise up to the go green movement. Alright, I won’t drive. But on the second day.. parking fees went up once again! Thinking that it’s too expensive to park the car there, I really couldn’t let it just sit idle there. Hence, I began driving again. But on the third day.. gas prices increased! In the end, using my insignificant mathematical abilities, I really couldn’t decide if a car is cheaper parked there or driven!”

The audience continuously laughed. His words resonated with the people, so he was awarded with applause!

Zhang Ye sighed, “Beijing has a stadium. Do you guys know about it?”

“I know!”

“I’ve heard of it!”

The audience responded.

Zhang Ye said with a pained expression, “Actually, it’s a sports stadium. It frequently hosts baseball matches. I’m a baseball fan, but ever since gas prices rose to today’s prices, I no longer go to the stadium for matches. Well, it’s not because the parking fee is too expensive or that there aren’t any parking spaces. The reason is that the moment I drive there, there will be tens of thousands of people in the stadium shouting “Add oil! Add oil! Add oil!” (An encouragement like good luck). Aiyah, hey! You guys may not feel how I feel!” He clutched his chest and held his breath. This joke segment once again tied in with current events. Furthermore, it was news that happened over the past two days!

Wang Xiong gave his kudos!

Even the boss, Feng Guiqin, could not help but laugh with her mouth covered.

Zhang Ye straightened his suit and said in a slightly breathless manner, “Making a living these days isn’t easy. There’s tragedy every day. Talking about baseball, let’s talk about soccer. I saw a news article about sports betting yesterday. I heard that the soccer industry is being investigated. Does everyone know about this matter?”

“Yeah!”

“I’ve heard of it!

The audience nodded.

Zhang Ye said, “These years, it’s nothing new for soccer betting to be prohibited. There is already a trend of its growing proliferation. Not only do rich people bet on soccer, even the soccer players begin betting.” Saying that, he said in a low, mysterious tone, “I have insider news here. You can’t tell anyone else. Well, of course, when it’s broadcast, then I’m out of ideas.”

The crowd laughed!

Zhang Ye then said, “Apparently, there’s a soccer team in the domestic league. You know how absurd it is? Out of the 11 people playing soccer, four of them made bets. Nearly half of the members in a team were involved in gambling. They even bought the odds that their team would lose. Hehe, so what do you think this means? They are bound to lose. Four of their own members bet that they would lose! But the outcome was.. that they didn’t lose!”

“Huh?”

“Eh?”

Everyone looked curiously at Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye smacked his mouth and said, “That’s because the other soccer team.. had eight people betting that they would lose!”

When the audience heard this, they roared with laughter, “Hahahaha!”

A few female members of the audience dabbed their eyes with paper napkins. They were laughed to tears!

This was a joke segment from Zhou Libo’s “Mr. Zhou Live Show”, but it was slightly modified. Zhang Ye concluded, “Hence, the current state of Chinese soccer can be described as follows. The soccer association cheats their club; that’s called management. The club cheats the players; that’s called operation. The players cheats in soccer; that’s called character. When the soccer association, club and players cheat the soccer fans, that’s called Chinese soccer!”

This sentence was very profound.

After having their thoughts provoked, they understood and immediately clapped, “Well said!”

The applause lasted for quite a long time!

Feng Guiqin’s eyes lit up!

Wang Xiong and the Leader beside him, too!

They originally believed that Zhang Ye was just using tweaked jokes, but they had never expected that just a taste of it made them realize how interesting it was!

Zhang Ye estimated this episode’s word count...estimated the time to be almost up, so he said, “After finishing the recent news, let’s talk about weather. The weather is getting colder recently and the year end is coming. The annual [Spring Festival travel season](#) is coming soon. I believe comrades who have experienced it can deeply understand it. Last year, around the new year period, a huge homicide case happened in a province. The suspect was on the run. When the police were interviewed by reporters, they said surely that ‘Our investigative department is sure that the suspect will not be able to escape our province.’ And indeed, a few days later, the suspect was apprehended. A reporter asked him why he didn’t flee, despite so many days passing. The suspect could not help but swear, ‘Do you think I don’t want to run!? I was freaking queuing up at the train station for three days without being able to buy a ticket’. So with this passage, I wish to commemorate the heroes who manage to grab train tickets during the Spring Festival travel season... Of course, I do not need to grab tickets. I’m a person of stature, so I take planes!”

“Yi!”

“Yi!”

“Keep bragging!”

The audience laughed loudly!

Zhang Ye bowed slightly, “Alright, that will be all for today’s ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’. I am your host, Zhang Ye. I wish you all a great weekend!”

*In China, stocks prices are indicated by green and red, but the colors are

inverted from the West. Red, which is an auspicious color in Chinese culture, represents the stock price rising. Green represents the stock price decreasing.

Translator's Note: As we just reverted back to the old site software, donation buttons aren't up. If you absolutely want to donate to IRAS for more sponsored goodness, [click here](#) .

Chapter 242: The Program that Shocks the World!

The moment it was announced that the show had ended!

There was silence throughout the venue, a complete silence!

Zhang Ye felt deeply ashamed. He was thinking ‘how bad could this bro’s new program be?’ It had already ended, so can’t you give me a response?

However, two seconds later, someone from the audience suddenly stood up from his seat in excitement as he used all his strength to clap his hands!

A second person!

A tenth person!

In a blink of an eye!

The hundred-strong audience all stood up. Many of them did not seem like they were capable of using words to express their feelings and excitement that they felt deep in their hearts. They converted all their emotions into applause for Zhang Ye. Some people’s palms had already gone red from clapping, but they did not stop. They still steadfastly stood there clapping, unable to suppress their emotions. No one left, nor planned to leave the venue. They stood in their spots applauding!

Zhang Ye hurriedly said, “Thank you, everyone. Thank you. It’s over. I’ll let the staff lead everyone away.” He then flattened his palms against each other to express his appreciation towards them.

Bba Bba!

Bba Bba Bba!

The applause was still not ending!

People still did not want to leave. Some carried on clapping, while others whistled. There were even people who were excitedly shouting Zhang Ye's name, over and over again!

Zhang Ye was very grateful and his heart was touched by this scene. He knew that the hard work that he had put in was not in vain! He knew the hard work he put in had paid off. The audience was a bunch of cute people. They were not like some Leaders. Sometimes, even if you sacrificed a lot, the Leaders would not remember you. They were also not like colleagues who weighed the advantages and disadvantages. They were also not like so-called experts who decided if you were good or bad on their own whims. The audience was a bunch of people who would respond with the corresponding amount of enthusiasm if you wholeheartedly gave them a piece of good work!

A minute.

The applause was still thunderous!

Zhang Ye hurriedly said, "Thank you. Please take leave. Please take leave!"

The staff members were already there. They wanted to lead the audience away, but no one left. All of them were clapping, giving him the most sincere applause!

"Teacher Zhang Ye!"

"I love you!"

"You're the best! It's great!"

"So this is what a talk show is!"

"Perfect! This is a perfect program!"

The crowd cheered!

Zhang Ye had already given countless numbers of thanks on stage, "Thank you, thank you!"

He could even see Feng Guiqin, Wang Xiong and the other company Leaders standing there, smiling. They were also constantly clapping for Zhang Ye offstage!

Dong Shanshan, Ah Qian, Little Yu, Wang Bei, Zhang Han and the other colleagues were doing to the same thing, too!

Zhang Ye tried to persuade them to end their astounding applause, but failed. He could only smile wryly to himself.

The audience's cheers lasted ten minutes before they felt tiredness from clapping. Finally, under the lead of the staff, they left Studio 7, one after another. But there were quite a significant number of people who rushed up onto the stage, asking for Zhang Ye's autograph or a picture with him. Zhang Ye naturally did not reject their requests. He satisfied every request of theirs. If he didn't do so, the audience might never even leave.

This scene was something never seen before in Weiwo WebTV. They had been doing WebTV for several years and had recorded programs, big and small, that amounted to more than a hundred, but even so, they had never had such an enthusiastic audience after the recording of a program. This was certainly very rare!

.....

After the audience was sent away.

Zhang Ye sat down on a chair he pulled over. Having spoken for half an hour without a break, he was already completely exhausted. This program was not filled with normal, everyday speech. One wouldn't even feel tired chatting normally with friends for two hours. But here, he was doing a program. He had to be careful with his words. His brain had to constantly arrange the words he was to deliver and the thoughts behind them. Besides, there was no one interrupting him midway. It was Zhang Ye speaking all alone from the beginning until the end. It was naturally draining for both his mind and body. Just looking at the present Zhang Ye was enough. He was sweating from his forehead and back. Of course, this was also related to him being shined on by the countless number of lights for a long period of time.

"Teacher Zhang," A female staff member hurriedly ran over with a bottle of mineral water. "Drink some water and take a rest. You've worked hard."

"Thanks." Zhang Ye removed the cap and gulped down the whole bottle.

However, that was not enough. Seeing this, a Field Director brought another bottle of water over.

Zhang Ye finished half of the second bottle before letting out a long breath. He had somewhat recovered, but the moment he relaxed, he realized that his voice had gone hoarse. He got up, saying, "Everyone, you worked hard, too."

Sister Four came forward. Without a word, she punched Zhang Ye in the chest, "Well done! So this is your so-called talk show! Back then, I really believed that it was just jokes after jokes! So it wasn't just purely jokes! It is linked to current affairs! And every joke segment of yours was f**king clever! I was wondering! How does your brain work?"

Zhang Ye laughed, "I didn't say it was a joke anthology?"

"But that was what everyone thought it was!" Sister Four laughed out.

Feng Guiqin, Wang Xiong and another Leader were in whispers as they discussed some matters. When they finished, Wang Xiong came over with a smile, "Teacher Little Zhang."

Previously, he would use "Little Zhang", but now the term "Teacher" was added.

Zhang Ye hurried looked over, "Director Wang."

Wang Xiong said, "We have just discussed. There's no need to wait for Monday. We can have your program aired on Sunday at 8 P.M., which is tonight! This is the best time slot of our WebTV. It's Director Feng's decision. She is leaving this time slot for you, and the other programs will be rescheduled!"

Zhang Ye exclaimed, "Is this alright? I'm a newcomer, so..."

Wang Xiong waved his hand, "Cut that out with me. Hur hur. Nothing is more suitable than your program to take over the primetime slot on the weekends! The Leaders have already decided. If you have any disagreements, keep them to yourself."

How could Zhang Ye have any disagreements? He earnestly wished for it to be like this. Broadcasting on Sunday, and at primetime at 8. That was a completely different concept compared with Monday. "Thank you, Leader."

Feng Guiqin chuckled while looking at him, “There’s no need to thank us. This is all your hard work. Just a few days ago, when you submitted this program’s proposal, several people in upper management, including me, were pessimistic about your new program. What talk show? What the heck was a talk show? It was never heard of, so we naturally had a subjective bias. However, today, you have opened our eyes to what a talk show is. Honestly, I was pretty shocked while listening to your program. I believe everyone present was a bit shocked and surprised. Previously, you said that your program would not have any problems? The facts have proven that you were right. Do you remember the words you said to us back then?”

Zhang Ye blushed with a smile, “It was nonsense. Nonsense.”

Feng Guiqin smiled. “No, that was not nonsense. You said that we cannot deny the basic judgment you had as an artist. Now, from the looks of it, it seems that was the case.”

Zhang Ye hurriedly said, “Not at all. I was just being quick to speak. My temper is a bit short, so... Please don’t take my unsightly words to heart.”

Wang Xiong was feeling very good. He chuckled, “If just rebuking us can produce a good program like ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’, we would wish that there would be people rebuking us daily!”

Feng Guiqin said, “We just had a round of discussion and are very optimistic about your new program. We don’t have to wait to see the hit rate for the first episode. If such a program doesn’t have 500,000 hits, then it would be a tremendous joke. The hit rate would definitely surpass 500,000. It’s just a matter of by how much. Right, prepare for the recording of the second episode. In the future, the Saturday and Sunday time slot at 8 P.M. will belong to your ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’. We have already reserved the best time slot and resources of our WebTV for you, so Little Zhang, don’t disappoint us!”

Zhang Ye said, “Definitely.”

Weiwo WebTV was really having some trouble this year. They were facing setbacks at every turn. Several programs were unsustainable. Those programs that had good results in the past had turned into cliches and had lost a large number of their viewers. They were basically relying on a celebrity interview

program to support their WebTV. The other programs, which had 600,000-700,000 hits, were already considered pretty good programs. The overall quality was getting worse. This was also the reason why Weiwo recruited web hosts to produce new programs. They wished to inject new blood into their WebTV. Dong Shanshan's new program was eagerly anticipated by the Leaders, but they were not pleasantly surprised, as this sort of program was commonplace on television. As for Zhang Ye's program, no one was optimistic about it. But after the recording today, "Zhang Ye's Talk Show" gave everyone a tremendous pleasant surprise and astonishment. The emotions felt were difficult to describe with words!

This was a talk show?

Just one person alone, using his normal mouth, was actually able to use his silver tongue to create a brand new program that the world had never seen!

Domestically, be it talent shows, singing competitions, or the other popular variety shows, they were all taking reference or were even to the point of plagiarizing from foreign television shows. A large number of them even bought the program rights from overseas. There were too few that were domestically created, and those that stood out were even fewer! Creativity was something easily said, but not done, as the country had a mysterious department, known as the State Administration of Press, Publication, Radio, Film and Television of The People's Republic of China (SARFT). Many program formats and variety show formats were kept on a tight leash. For example, excellent foreign programs would be restricted domestically. It would not pass the censors. As such, it would further influence the growth of creativity in the domestic programs. They could only keep taking the leftovers from foreign countries!

But now!

But today!

"Zhang Ye's Talk Show" had been born!

This was a new program format that had never appeared, domestically or abroad! Weiwo company's Leaders even had a hunch that the talk show program established by Zhang Ye would not only create a national sensation, it could even create a global sensation!

Talk show?

What a good talk show!

This was the program we needed!

Chapter 243: The Airing of Talk Show!

At the recording hall.

With the program done, the Leaders left.

Zhang Ye then said to the Directors and staff present, “All of you have busied yourself these past two days. Thank you for the hard work. I’ll be treating you lunch. Let’s have a meal together!”

“Alright!”

“We are going to have a big meal!”

“Hur hur. Thank you, Teacher Zhang.”

“We must have a good meal!”

The staff began echoing this. After recording this episode of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”, they were also extremely happy. Firstly, Zhang Ye had said it so humorously that they bent their backs from laughter. There were even a few camera men who nearly burst out into laughter while filming. They nearly affected the recording. Secondly, they felt that the program was too awesome. As part of the program team, their names would be added to the credits scene at the end. This was also a form of adding to their job experience. They could improve their reputation through such a good program, so it was extremely beneficial for them.

The program team began to clean up the site.

Zhang Ye got off the stage and went to a few colleagues who had not left. He smiled. “Thanks for coming. How was the program? Does anyone have suggestions? I’ll maintain the good parts. As for the bad parts, I’ll slowly improve.” Although the response from the audience was very good, he still wanted to consult his colleagues. After all, no matter how good a program was,

it could not satisfy everyone, so there was always room for improvement.

Wang Bei laughed, “What do you mean ‘how was it’? Don’t you know already?” She pointed at the corner of her eyes. There were marks of tears. “Look, I teared up from all the laughter!”

Ah Qian also said excitedly, “Teacher Zhang, you are too awesome! Really too awesome!”

Little Yu nodded enthusiastically and agreed with Ah Qian’s words, “Truthfully, the comedic programs that I understood in the past are just a few hosts inviting a few guests as they goof off and add some funny games into it to tickle the audience. If not, it will be two people having a crosstalk or a few people acting a skit. Usually comedic television programs are limited to these. There was no other mode of humor. But, but, your Talk Show has completely overturned the traditional comedic formats of the television industry!”

A web host who Zhang Ye had previously met, but was unfamiliar or never spoken with, nodded. “Linking it to current affairs, mocking it and creating social satire was too wonderful!”

But Dong Shanshan suddenly interrupted, “I think it’s terrible!”

Zhang Ye blinked, “Which part wasn’t good? The program wasn’t nice?”

Dong Shanshan used her charming eyes and glanced at him, “You could have done the talk show yourself! Why did you bring me up? My image has been destroyed by you.”

Hearing Dong Shanshan’s words, everyone roared with laughter!

“Hahaha, when homesick, she goes to the stock exchange and looks at that endless expanse of green. That line was classic! Divine reversal!” Sister Four came over after instructing everyone, in order to pack the filming equipment.

After a few exchanges of words, everyone left. They busied themselves, for they still had their own work to do.

However, Dong Shanshan slowed down and did not leave with the rest. She waited for Zhang Ye and left the recording hall together.

In the elevator.

Dong Shanshan said with a wide smile, “Thanks.”

“Thanks for what?” Zhang Ye was surprised.

Dong Shanshan laughed, “A few jokes mentioned me, and their effects were really good. The jokes will definitely have left a lasting impression on the audience. This is effectively advertising me. In a few days, when my program airs, it will certainly give me an advantage. The audience might want to see this person, ‘Dong Shanshan’, who goes to the stock exchange when she is homesick. This time, I’ve surely rubbed off some of the glory from my old classmate.”

Zhang Ye curled his lips, “You’re welcome. In the future, your name will frequently appear in my program.”

“Don’t ruin my image!” Dong Shanshan rolled her eyes at him.

“Haha. I can’t be sure about that,” Zhang Ye laughed.

Actually, Zhang Ye had this goal in mind. If he needed people in his jokes, he could just use any name, but he chose Dong Shanshan, so as to create some momentum for his old classmate and give her some fame. Since it was just a name, why not give it to her? For example, in Wang Zijian’s “Tonight 80’s Talkshow”, there were many characters. Lai Bao, Jian Guo, Dan Dan. These people were not fictional characters, but the names of the people who wrote the jokes for the program. They no longer existed in this world, so Zhang Ye reserving one of those names for Dong Shanshan had no effect on him. Since he could help an old classmate of his, why not?

.....

Office area.

A few people had already returned.

“Ah Qian.”

“You guys went to watch Zhang Ye’s program?”

“What exactly is up with that talk show? How was the series of jokes stitched up together?”

Although everyone was pessimistic about the talk show, they had never heard of such a program format, so they were still curious.

Ah Qian gave a mysterious smile, “Everyone will know tonight. I can only say that the audience gave him a standing ovation and applause for nearly ten minutes after the program ended!”

Everyone was stunned.

“Ah?”

“Ten minutes?”

“Can you not be so ridiculous?”

“It can’t be? A joke program like this can have such a good reception?”

“That’s right, I thought that if the audience didn’t curse, they would already be very cultured!”

“Ah Qian, don’t joke around. How can such a program be met with such good reception? The people in the audience aren’t fools. How can you use a few jokes on the internet to deceive people? If television programs can be done in this way, there wouldn’t be so many hosts being eliminated annually! Can’t they just copy jokes from the internet?”

None of them believed him, but they were even more curious!

Seeing Zhang Ye return, none of them spoke further. It was not good to say those words in front of Zhang Ye.

.....

At noon, Zhang Ye treated people to lunch. He brought the program team to a pretty good restaurant. He gave them a good feast to reward them. Only after the program was recorded did Zhang Ye really gain the prestige and authority as the person with overall say in the program. People began to be increasingly convinced of him. There was no way about it; for Zhang Ye, who was a newcomer that had joined the company for a few days, even if people said that they listened to him, they would not really respect him that much. But Zhang Ye used his program and ability to speak for himself. Now, the situation was different. The program team members all indicated that they wanted to do a good job together with Zhang Ye. They wanted to grow the talk show program and make it even better. Everyone was also very confident!

After the meal.

Returning to the unit.

Zhang Ye's state of mind wasn't very good. The main reason was exhaustion. This was the first time he was doing a talk show. This was completely different from "Lecture Room". "Lecture Room" was ready-made. Zhang Ye just needed to act according to his memories. However, "Zhang Ye's Talk Show" was different. He needed to arrange and analyze what to say and when to say it and how to say it. Besides, it was not as fixed as a historical program. A talk show was a more flexible form of art. It was a test of a host's ability. Even when replicating a joke, the technique was also very important. The rhythm, the tone and speed used when speaking the joke had to be grasped perfectly. It could not just be spoken without technique. It just like how when people chat, the same joke would have different effects depending on the person. It was the same principle. You had to build it up and time the punch line. This was all the basics.

Hence, Zhang Ye was very tired. Of course, this was also due to him not being accustomed to it, as this was his first time doing it. A lot of his speaking habits and experiences were from "Ghost Blows Out the Light" and "Zhang Ye's Analysis of the Three Kingdoms", which were slower in pace. He needed an adaptive learning process. Even though he was a broadcasting major, he did not really learn anything about talk shows in school. He had to blindly try to find his groove. After recording a few episodes, this situation was likely to ease up, as all he needed was to get accustomed to it.

When Wang Xiong came back in the afternoon and saw Zhang Ye's state, he said, "Little Zhang. Hur hur. Why don't you go home and take a rest? Anyway, there's nothing for you in the afternoon."

"Leader, I'm fine." Zhang Ye insisted.

Wang Xiong said in disagreement, "Go; I'll give you half a day off. Grinding an axe will not hold up the work of cutting firewood. I'm still looking forward to you doing a good job for the second episode. Hurry up. Pack up and go home."

Zhang Ye gave a wry smile, "I still need to inspect the post-editing."

Wang Xiong chuckled, "I just came back from the filming crew. The video is pretty much done. A professional editor said that the things you recorded did

not need a single cut from beginning to end. There was not a single extra scene!” The editor actually did not say something, but he sighed that working with a person like Teacher Zhang Ye will cause editors to lose their jobs. Zhang Ye’s every sentence and joke segment seemed like they were scenes that had post-editing!

Previously, when Zhang Ye said that he did not need a teleprompter or a script, no one believed him. They thought he was bragging, but no one said a thing after the program finished recording; no one said a word. For more than 20 minutes, Zhang Ye did not make a single mistake with his words, let alone forgetting his lines! Previously, Zhang Ye said that his programs did not need cuts and assigned three cameras to film him, saying that it was enough. Hence, he had taken on the responsibility of the program team’s editor. No one believed it in the first place. But now, no one could say a word!

Whatever Zhang Ye said, he managed to do it!

The only thing left for everyone was to wonder at his professional abilities!

Upon hearing the Leader’s words, Zhang Ye could no longer refuse, “Then... Alright. Thank you, Leader.”

In the end, he was still not assured. He exhorted a Director for his program, telling him to give him a call if anything cropped up. Then he went to the film crew to take one last look. After some communication with the staff, he left for home with his bag.

.....

At home.

Zhang Ye took a shower before crashing into bed.

In a moment, snores could be heard in his room. This showed how tired this fellow was. Zhang Ye was a person who only snored when he was extremely tired or drunk.

.....

Three hours.

Five hours.

When he woke up, Zhang Ye yawned and stretched. He'd had enough rest. He was full of energy. Then he realized that the sky outside was already dark. When he grabbed his phone, good grief! It was already 7:55. It was nearly 8. Zhang Ye was thankful that he did not miss it. He immediately got up and brought his notebook computer over. After connecting to the Wi-Fi, he planned on first watching his program. After all, the live recording would appear different from the aired version, as the angles were different. Zhang Ye needed to see if his expressions were in any way out of place. For example, how was he to express the jokes to their maximal effect. These were things that he needed to improve on in the future.

It was 8!

The program was starting soon!

Chapter 244: So a Program Can be Done this Way!

Home.

The program's title introduction appeared.

Zhang Ye quickly used his cellphone to make a call.

"Hello, Mom. Watch my program. It's broadcasting online now!"

"It's been brought forward? I thought it would be broadcast tomorrow? I don't know how to use the computer."

"Hur hur. A cellphone would do, too. Just use your cellphone to search the WebTV for my name and you'll see your son. Get Dad to watch, too."

"Alright, I'll try."

.....

"Hello, Sister."

"Bro, what's up?"

"Go online and watch my program. Didn't you tell me to inform you once the program is up?"

"Yo? It was done so fast? I'll immediately watch it. I'll inform our family, too!"

.....

"Hello, Brother Hu. My program is up."

"Now?"

"Yes, it's being broadcasted now."

"That's just nice. We haven't gotten off work yet. I'll watch it."

“You haven’t gotten off work? Alright then, please inform Xiao Lu, Dafei, Hou Ge and Hou Di then. The main thing I want is to find faults with it. This is also my first time doing such a program, so I’m still in my exploratory phase. Many of my expressions and speaking speeds might not be right yet.”

“Hur hur. Alright, we’ll pick your faults.”

“Great. Please point out any faults of mine. But, the program itself definitely won’t have problems. Haha. I’m not bragging to you, Brother Hu. You’ll know when you watch it!”

.....

“Hello, Director Zhao. I’m Zhang Ye.”

.....

About eight phone calls were made.

Zhang Ye informed his parents and relatives, as well as all his old Leaders and colleagues. First, it was to notify them of his results and also because they had previously told him to inform them once the program was out. Secondly, he could also get a few extra hits. Although his friends and family would only add a dozen or so hits, even the smallest mosquito was meat, too. Zhang Ye was very much looking forward to the number of hits that his program would receive. To a WebTV program, the rate of flow and click rate were its vitals. It was an objective result for its performance. This amount of clicks would decide Zhang Ye’s popularity, fixing his salary, as well as decide the sponsorship endorsements for his program. Naturally, he paid a lot of attention to it!

“I am Zhang Ye.”

“I’ll feed a bag of salt to myself!”

Once the parodic clip ended, the scene was changed, turning to the live stage!

“Alright, let us welcome our famous host... Zhang Ye!” Zhang Ye used his own voice to introduce himself without showing himself. In his speech, he self-addressed himself as a “famous host”, which made the audience burst out into laughter. The camera also cut to the audience for a second and a half!

Amidst the laughter, Zhang Ye appeared!

.....

“Let’s look at the first fan’s letter. The tenderness when you bend your head low. He said this, ‘Zhang Ye! Your sister! Why haven’t you freaking come out with a new program!? Do you not freaking believe I will smash your glass, asshole... The concern and passion the fans have for me touches me! Thank you, thank you!’”

“Pfft!”

.....

“The third letter. Wow, this is sent by a female fan...” Zhang Ye then appeared to read excitedly with his head lowered, “I! Really! Want! To! Have! A! Baby! With! You! Zhang Ye...Please pass these words...to Teacher Dong Shanshan!”

“Aiyah!”

“Hahahaha!”

.....

“Dong Shanshan is from Inner Mongolia. Whenever she misses home, it’s a bit tricky... So whenever she’s yearning for Inner Mongolia in Shanghai, she would go to the stock exchange... Look at that endless expanse of green!”

“Aiyah, I can’t take it anymore!”

“Pfft...hahahaha!”

“Do you think that’s the grasslands?”

.....

Finally, amidst the laughter and cheers, the first episode of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” ended. Zhang Ye bowed and the audience gave a standing ovation, reluctant to leave. This content was not cut, and instead deliberately added on. This was Zhang Ye’s instruction and idea. Before he left work, he had communicated this to a post-processing editor. The live audience’s reactions and emotions could also influence the audience watching the program elsewhere. It was like those domestic comedy shows, where they play a laugh track in the background after a joke to lead the audience on. It was the same principle. There was a psychological explanation behind it, and it related to the overall

atmosphere. It was all very important.

Finally, the production credits rolled.

The audience clapped for about nine minutes, which could not be all aired. So to prevent it from being too monotonous, the camera carried on filming the audience's faces, while the captions rolled. They used the credits list to make it not as monotonous. About twenty seconds later, the program finally ended!

Zhang Ye was very satisfied after he watched it. He felt that he had done pretty well for his first talk show performance.

.....

On the other side.

Beijing, at a restaurant's table.

Beijing Radio Station's Jia Yan said, "I heard Zhang Ye's program has been pushed forward to today?"

"Who cares about him, " Zhāng Yě grunted, "He's just a clown! He may be good at literature, but in entertainment programs? He's nothing!"

Deputy Station Head Jia, who was sitting at the seat of honor, shook his head slightly.

Deputy Station Head Jia's secretary said jokingly, "Why don't we take a look? Let's see how terrible his so-called talk show is?"

A few people gave a questioning look towards Deputy Station Head Jia.

And Deputy Station Head Jia nodded, "Let's watch it. I'm also curious." He had just criticized Zhang Ye for not knowing anything on the internet and had said that Zhang Ye's program was bound to fail, so Deputy Station Head Jia definitely wanted to watch the program, so that he could continue to attack Zhang Ye.

Hence, one of them took out a tablet computer, while the others used their cellphones to play Zhang Ye's program, wanting to see Zhang Ye make a fool of himself.

Half an hour passed.

The program ended!

Then, no one at the table spoke again. They were instantly quiet!

This program...

Finally, a female radio employee could not hold back any further. Just thinking of the joke segments Zhang Ye said made her burst out into laughter. Immediately, she realized that it was inappropriate and tried to cover her mouth to suppress it!

Jia Yan stared at her!

Zhāng Yě put down his phone in silence!

Deputy Station Head Jia's face was as ugly as it could be!

Deputy Station Head Jia's secretary struggled to find faults and said, "So this talk show is actually just this. Is it funny? It's not, right. I believe that the audience is likely to be internal staff or hired personnel. No matter what Zhang Ye says, all they do is laugh and clap."

Everyone ignored him.

Seeing this, the secretary cleared his throat and knew his words had no support. He lowered his head to eat his meal and stopped talking.

However, Deputy Station Head Jia was no longer in the mood to eat. "Let's go." Saying that, he got up and left.

The group of people looked at each other and left. They knew that having used his professional status to criticize Zhang Ye, Deputy Station Head Jia was now feeling the pain of being smacked in the face! Trash program? Anyone who has eyes would know that that a talk show would not succeed? Deputy Station Head Jia's words appeared in everyone's minds. Although they were not him, they could imagine and feel the psyche of Deputy Station Head Jia, as well as Jia Yan and Zhāng Yě who had joined in the fun. Their faces were probably feeling the sting as their faces turned swollen!

Deputy Station Head Jia was relatively calm. He steadily left the table to head down the stairwell from the second floor. However, his footsteps betrayed him the very next moment. With his mind not there and thinking about something else, Deputy Station Head Jia missed his footing and twisted his body and rolled

down two flight of stairs.

“Ah!”

“Station Head Jia!”

“Station Head Jia!”

“How are you? Are you fine? Are you fine?”

Everyone behind him hurried over to get him up. Only then did they know that Deputy Station Head Jia had just appeared calm on the surface. He was fuming in his heart because of Zhang Ye!

Deputy Station Head Jia clenched his ribs, perspiring from the pain. He could not help but swear, so as to vent his terrible mood!

“Get up quickly!”

“Get up and see if you are fine.”

Everyone surrounded Deputy Station Head Jia.

Deputy Station Head Jia also managed to stand up with them helping him. But with a cry, he lowered his body as he clutched his ribs, while he breathed heavily. It looked like his ribs had fractured.

The secretary hurriedly said, “Let’s bring him to the hospital immediately!”

Jia Yan said quickly, “I’ll drive the car over!”

Deputy Station Head Jia was feeling pain and embarrassment. His face turned green. He had shamed himself so much today!

.....

Similarly, in Beijing.

Beijing Television Station’s Arts Channel office.

After he finished watching “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”, Hu Fei was already at a loss of whether to laugh or to cry. He slapped his thighs suddenly, “This Little Zhang! So a program can be done this way!” Hu Fei was a program planner. On Weibo, his verification said that he was a famous program planner. However, when he tried to compare himself with Zhang Ye, he realized that he didn’t deserve the

word “famous” in front of his so-called “Program Planner” title.

Xiao Lu was clutching her stomach as she laughed in stitches. The program had ended, but she still could not stop. She had been having a good laugh for almost a minute!

Hou Ge, “Holy sh*t! Teacher Zhang is going to defy the heavens!”

“Far more than that. This is creating a new entertainment program format domestically!” Hou Di said with eyes full of admiration.

Dafei laughed, “If the station did not fire Teacher Zhang, this program could very well be ours. I wonder what feelings the Station Leaders and those people from the other provincial television stations, who do not like Teacher Zhang Ye, are having. Back then, when Teacher Zhang Ye was searching for a job everywhere, it could be imagined that if any provincial television station threw him an olive branch, even if it was not a satellite channel, and was just a provincial local station, he would have definitely accepted it and went there. And in the end? Everyone ignored the golden mountain. All the television stations banned Teacher Zhang Ye, resulting in the WebTV company getting a bargain. With “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” airing, I wonder how many television station Leaders are regretting until their intestines turn green!”

Xiao Lu stopped laughing and said, “That’s right! I’m so happy for Teacher Zhang. Teacher Zhang has once again proved his strength and capabilities! Those who doubted him, their faces must be blue now!”

Hu Fei was also feeling a sense of regret. If only he did not lack the say and could not change the decision of the Beijing Television Station Leaders, he would have done all he could to prevent Zhang Ye from leaving. Now, Zhang Ye had produced such an amazing new program. It was like setting free a bird to fly up to the sky. Hu Fei realized that even if he thought of a way to convince the Station Leaders to let Zhang Ye come back once again, Zhang Ye might not be willing to. Alas, what a pity!

Now, their station was constantly hiring and headhunting. They were trying to bolster their hosting line to create new programs to compete with other television stations. However, from Hu Fei’s opinion, even if their station headhunted 50 hosts... They would be inferior to one Zhang Ye!

Chapter 245: Zhang Ye-Please remember this name!

At the other end.

Shanghai, Weiwo company.

A lot of people were working overtime today. When it was time, many of them quietly switched on their computers and put aside their work to watch “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”. Initially, no one was interested in this program because they had already decided that the program was not a good one, so there was no point in watching it. What’s more, many experts and reviewers online had said that this sort of program that used jokes as a theme could never gain the approval of the audience. Many of them also subscribed to this opinion. But after the recording, Wang Bei, Ah Qian, Little Yu and the others all came back with a piece of news; the audience had clapped for a full 10 minutes after the show. Seeing the smiles on their colleagues who went to the recording like they were really happy and left wanting for more, it became too intriguing!

What had happened?

No way! They needed to watch to find out!

Then, at 8 PM sharp, they watched it!

Following that, the whole WebTV department’s office was filled with continuous laughter! A person, who was having a drink, even spat out water onto the monitor after hearing a joke segment by Zhang Ye!

“Hahaha!”

“Teacher Zhang is too funny!”

“Aiyo, aiyo, I can’t take it anymore! Hahahaha!”

Someone was literally hitting the table while laughing. It was as if they were chewing on Stride Gum; they just couldn't stop!

.....

On Weibo.

On Tieba.

A usually calm 8 PM on the internet was now gusting with winds. The words "Zhang Ye's Talk Show" had taken over all the forums and Tiebas. There was no warning. It felt like just the moment before, there was calmness. Then suddenly, people started crazily posting on Weibo!

"Holy sh*t!"

"I'm shocked! Really shocked!"

"It's too fierce! Teacher Zhang was too cool today!"

"Did all of you watch 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show'? Hahaha! It's too enjoyable!"

"I watched it! My whole family watched it together! It's really great! Please let me curse to express my feelings; Zhang Ye, you're too f**king awesome!"

"What a poker-faced comedian!"

"Yes, yes, yes! Poker-faced comedian is a really apt description!"

"Look at that endless expanse of green? Aiyo, that really made me cramp up with laughter!"

"The most classic line is 'Foreigners only take public buses and trains to work. Can I not believe it?! Aiyah! Zhang Ye really dares to say such things! This has discredited all the news agencies! And talked about the truthful feelings of everyone else! These days, the news reports are all trying to voice the government's policies. They come up with all sorts of baseless reports and make up facts. When they find an advantageous point, they gloss over it and report it as foreigners, who buy cars, do not drive them, just to make us go green! We understand the point of going green and also know the importance of it! But the news agencies and television stations should not treat us masses as fools! We are not dumb! Why don't they just promote green travel as it is! Must you come up with such crooked ways! This really makes us disgusted! Hahahaha! Still,

Teacher Zhang Ye is really f**king awesome! He's singing the opposite tune to those television news agencies! Too well said! I still only have one thing to say. I will reiterate on my view from back then. In the entertainment industry now, the only one who dares to speak up is Teacher Zhang Ye!"

"Fuck, to say all that without holding back, won't it be a problem?"

"Yeah, it's really a kick listening to that. But don't get shut down by the authorities!"

"It won't happen. Teacher Zhang might sound like he's talking too overly strong. But if you listen and understand what he said, everything he talked about did not cross the line. It's all within the limits and falls under ridicule and satire. His control of it was also very well handled. Haha, this is also why I admire Teacher Zhang Ye. Just by that segment that discredits the news agencies, Teacher Zhang was cursing someone? There was no cursing; there wasn't even a swear word! Was Teacher Zhang wrong to bring up this government policy? No, he did not mention it. He was just responding to the news reports of not driving, although we all know that this was him scolding the news agencies and cursing the rise in oil prices. But try if you want to, you won't find any problems with Teacher Zhang Ye's words!"

"This episode of the program was really beautiful!"

"Absolutely! I really love Zhang Ye!"

"Yes, to me, Teacher Zhang Ye is a literary person who meddles with writing poems, writing lyrics, writing supernatural novels and as the host of a historical program. I would have expected him to be a very serious person. But after watching 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' today, I've been blinded by the enlightenment! Not only can he host serious historical programs, he can even do such a funny program! I was f**king laughing from the beginning until the end!"

"Ditto!"

"Ditto+10000!"

"Haha. I also laughed from the beginning until the end!"

"Nearly 30 minutes of laughing. Not a single moment for the audience to rest. This program is too godly! Teacher Zhang Ye! You are my idol from now on! Every

future episode of 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show'! I will watch it once it is broadcasted! It's too d*mn good!"

There was a wave of praises and amazement online!

There were still people scolding Zhang Ye in the morning. But at this moment, there was no sign of them. It's like they had vanished into thin air!

Zhang Ye's fan club on Tieba.

A few fans who had left the fan club earlier had silent rejoined.

"Brothers, I had quit earlier, but now I am back. I....I was really dumb. Really. I apologize for my stupid behavior. I did not think that the talk show would be any good at first, so I quit in resentment. But who would have expected the program to be so awesome! I was wrong! I really know that I was wrong! I swear! I will not doubt Teacher Zhang Ye's abilities and skills in the future anymore!"

"Me, too. I did not want to return in fear of embarrassment. But I really could not let it go. I feel love and hate towards Teacher Zhang Ye. I really like Zhang Ye's poems, but I don't know history. I did not like to watch 'Zhang Ye's Analysis of the Three Kingdoms', so I had been disappointed with Zhang Ye before. But after watching 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' today, I can only describe my feelings as frighteningly amazed! I won't lie to you all! After the program ended, I was really staring at my computer in a daze for a few minutes! There's actually such a damn good entertainment program that suits my taste in this world! Thank you, Teacher Zhang Ye! I won't talk about my quitting of the fan club from before. In all tears, I hope the members would allow me to rejoin once more!"

The two were really sincere.

The other fans were also very magnanimous.

"It's alright."

"Come back. The organization needs you."

"Actually, we also doubted Teacher Zhang before. Sigh, but thinking about it now, we were really stupid. When has Teacher Zhang ever done a program that wasn't a classic? Which program did not create a ratings miracle. And to think that I thought that Teacher Zhang would not have made it this time! I have to

reflect on it, too! I will support Zhang Ye multifold in the future!”

“Haha. I had always believed in Teacher Zhang! I’ve ever said that Teacher Zhang would surely make it, that his new program would have no problems! All of you didn’t believe me!”

“That’s right! Zhang Ye has never disappointed us fans before! Not in the past! Not in the future!”

“What I would like to know now is, the people who had insulted Zhang Ye’s new talk show program... I wonder how they are feeling now and what their expressions are!”

“Ahahaha! I would like to know that, too!”

“I bet those people are vomiting blood now!”

“Hehe. It has been proven. Those who oppose Zhang Ye would always end up badly. With that temper of Teacher Zhang Ye, those who scolded him would definitely have their faces slapped. This has always been his style and also the style that I like best about Teacher Zhang Ye! You doubt me? Then I will prove you wrong! You scold me once? Then I will definitely scold you back ten times! What fear? What concerns? Who cares who your mother is — Teacher Zhang Ye. A brave warrior. I suggest everyone to support Zhang Ye in the future. It was not easy for the entertainment industry to produce a celebrity who dares to speak his mind. Let’s not let Teacher Zhang fall into obscurity! We need to push him up! Push him higher!”

“Agree!”

“Well said!”

“Keep pushing!”

“All of you say it too well. I also cannot hold back my curiosity. If Teacher Zhang Ye, a wonder of the entertainment industry, can become an S-list celebrity in the country, I wonder what kind of things will happen! Hahahaha! When I think of that, I get all excited, too!”

“Upstairs comment is a godly comment!”

“Ah? Zhang Ye becoming an S-list celebrity?”

“Hahaha! That picture is too beautiful, I don’t dare to look!”

“I’ll be d*mned. Listening to you all talk about this, I’m now looking forward to that day!”

In the few days after the “I’ll speak for myself” promotions, the discussions about Zhang Ye became fewer and fewer. The popularity momentum was after all only for the moment. This kind of exposure could not last for long. But at this moment, discussions had exploded online. Zhang Ye and his program’s name was dominating discussions all over the country!

Some industry insiders and Weibo verified users said their piece.

A famous host from Jiangnan Province Television station posted on Weibo, “After watching ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’ today, I was tickled fully. Although I am from Jiangnan Satellite Television station, I couldn’t resist promoting for this program. I was really left wanting for more!”

A famous social commentator gave a review on his own portal, “I did not used to follow Zhang Ye. But a few days ago, a promotional advertisement went viral online. There were many who scolded and cursed his program. This made me curious, and so I went to take a look. If I didn’t see it, it wouldn’t have mattered. But seeing it, saying that my eyes brightened up might still be unable to express my emotions. I feel that maybe I should use the words ‘utterly shocked’ to describe it. Then, when the program ended and after the shock, some thankful feelings towards Zhang Ye started to form. I would like to thank him. Not to thank him for showing us such a good program, but to thank Zhang Ye for contributing such a great entertainment program to the country! Talk show... This is the the first ever program of its kind in the world! This was a booster injection! This was our country’s first entertainment program to be put on the world stage in recent years! At this moment, I feel like I’ve gone back to the time when I was young. I can only feel full of passion! Our entertainment programs do not only depend on copying those from the international market! Our entertainment programs do not only depend on buying the rights from the international market! Today, we have Zhang Ye! We have our very own “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”! Foreigners, you want to do a talk show program, too? Thinking of it? Really thinking of it? Are you all really thinking of it? Confirm that you are thinking of it? Then come and buy the rights from us!”

This statement resonated amongst countless people, as well as stirred up their patriotic feelings!

“Zhang Ye, the mighty!”

“Haha! I’m feeling so passionate, too!”

“Teacher Zhang has lifted the spirits of our countrymen!”

That famous commentator posted once more, “Zhang Ye... Everyone, please remember this name, ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’! Everyone, please remember this program! Not only did he speak for himself today! He also spoke for our country’s variety and entertainment programs! Thank you! Thank you for contributing such a great television program!”

Countless people followed the post!

Countless people left their comments!

A lot of industry insiders had fairly high appraisals about Zhang Ye’s new program!

Seeing this, Zhang Ye hurriedly replied humbly to everyone. All of you are giving putting this bro on too high a pedestal! He really could not afford all these praises!

Chapter 246: Zhang Ye's Ratings Legend Continues!

After reading all the reviews.

He made a few calls.

Zhang Ye's few cousins, the television station's old Leader, Hu Fei, the radio station's old Leader Zhao Guozhou as well as his old colleagues such as Wang Xiaomei, Xiao Lu, Dafei and company who Zhang Ye informed about the broadcast of his show all called back and proposed some small suggestions. For example: the way Zhang Ye stood, as this was not like "Lecture Room" where he stood straight, facing the camera. Furthermore, in "Zhang Ye's Analysis of the Three Kingdoms", there was still a lecture podium for him. However, for the recording of "Zhang Ye's Talk Show", there were some side profile shots and shots from top down. Hence, the way he stood was very important. Where he placed his hand was also important. Zhang Ye readily took in their suggestions.

Of course, most of the phone calls that came here were that of praise and congratulations.

"Teacher Zhang, congratulations!"

"What's there to congratulate me about?"

"Your program has hit it big. Your future will be boundless!"

"Hai, I still don't know the results yet. I'll need to see the hit rate later."

"I guarantee you that it won't be low. In the future, when you become famous, remember to take care of me. I'll be prepared to pack and follow your tail. Hehe."

"Sure, I would wish for that, but Brother Hu needs to let you go."

Zhang Ye had a nice chat with his old colleague Xiao Lu from the television station before hanging up to take a look at the click numbers of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”. But due to some delay or technical problem, the numbers were not immediately refreshed. The number of clicks for the program was still zero, so he couldn’t tell.

He was feeling anxious!

Hurry up and refresh!

Zhang Ye had done everything that he could. Now, all he waited for was the final outcome. Could people accept such a talk show program that had never appeared before? On this matter, it would be a lie if Zhang Ye was not worried about it. Anything new would need a gradual process for people to get familiar with it. Like in his world, talk shows had been developed for decades in foreign markets before they were broadcast domestically, allowing the people to get familiarized with it. However, this world never had such a foundation, so even though he was confident, his heart was still playing with drums. The only good news was that the talk on the internet about “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” was very good!

It was almost 9.

Ding Dong. The doorbell suddenly rang.

Zhang Ye said as he walked over, “Who is it?”

“Me,” It was Dong Shanshan’s sexy voice from outside.

“Hmm? Don’t you have a key?” Zhang Ye opened the door for her. Only after seeing her did he understand. The school belle’s hands were full. There was a large plastic bag in each hand. It was filled with vegetables and meat. “Hey, why did you buy so much?” He hurriedly stretched out his hands to help carry it for her.

Dong Shanshan panted and then stretched her sore arm with a smile, “We’ve been busy these past few days. You worked overtime at work without coming home. I’ve also been coming home pretty late sometimes. We haven’t eaten together in a while. With your program broadcasting today, we must have a good meal, so as to celebrate for you, as well as to celebrate my “Online Talents”

early, hoping it will be smooth and have a soaring number of hits. You haven't eaten yet, right?"

"No, I just woke up." Zhang Ye felt a craving after seeing the groceries. "There's even fish? Hey, I haven't eaten that in a long while. Great, then I'll give you a hand. It's almost 9."

Dong Shanshan said, "Alright, I'll need your help today. Wash the vegetables."

"Sure, leave it to me." Zhang Ye went to the sink to busy himself.

Dong Shanshan smirked while entering the kitchen. She rolled up her sleeves to begin preparing the carp. As she removed the innards, she looked sideways and said, "I saw on my cellphone on the way back. Your program is receiving many commendations on the internet. I saw that there was even an industry insider who pushed you to the forefront of the country! But that is indeed true. Such a new program that has never appeared in the world, it really has risen to the occasion for our country's entertainment variety industry!"

Zhang Ye laughed, "No matter how much kudos I get, it's just the minority. What I want to know is the number of clicks it gets. That is the actual reaction. After all, no matter how good a program is, it will definitely not receive the approval of everyone. They might not like it. Well, the click numbers haven't appeared yet, as it just finished airing twenty minutes ago. I think that it will be out once we finish eating. Let's hope it breaks a million."

In his world, talk shows had a wider audience demographic than historical programs like "Lecture Room". However, it was not considered a program that was very well liked by the masses. One could tell from the ratings. It was still on a different level compared to the top variety programs that quaked the entire country with 2-3% ratings. Hence, Zhang Ye did not have extremely high expectations. He would be content with breaking a million clicks for the first episode. Besides, if it passed a million, the bet he had before with Dong Shanshan would come into effect. They had previously made a bet that if Zhang Ye's program broke a million clicks, Dong Shanshan would lose a kiss to him.

Fish stew.

Stir-fried vegetables.

After busying themselves all day, they finally could eat.

“Here, try my cooking.” Dong Shanshan said.

“Sure, let me try. Oh, delicious!” Zhang Ye praised.

Dong Shanshan said, “I seldom make fish, as I’m not very good at it. Make do with it.”

Zhang Ye smiled. “It’s pretty good; just a bit sour. But I like to eat sour stuff. Here, here, here. You eat, too. You’ve been busy all day.”

Dong Shanshan was wearing a 7-8 cm high heel that was waterproof. She took off her apron and revealed a deep cleavage that was situated in between two snow-white lumps of meat. After returning home, Dong Shanshan had taken off her outerwear and had not switched to pajamas. She wore a pair of black pants that clung tightly to her body as well as a red low-cut top. The neckline was very wide, so although her bra was barely hidden, it appeared that she would end up exposing herself at any moment. It seemed like if she used a bit more strength, her bra would be revealed, but yet he couldn’t see it. It was very tempting.

Covetousness!

A beauty to feast his eyes!

Zhang Ye glanced at her chest a few times before lowering his head to look her two legs that were clinging tightly to the black pants. That butt of hers was so perky. He really wanted to pinch it. Without knowing it, he had finished a big bowl of rice already!

Dong Shanshan flicked the hair off her shoulders and ate a mouthful of fish, “Oh, it’s still alright.”

Zhang Ye put down his bowl and began to eat the dishes.

Dong Shanshan gave him a look, “Oh, you eat pretty fast?”

“Yeah, I’m starving.” Zhang Ye said apologetically.

Dong Shanshan spoke as she munched on the fish and then stood up, “Give me the bowl. I’ll scoop you...Aiyah!” She had not changed shoes after returning home, so she was still in her high heels. So when she got up, she missed her footing. Gulu, the fish and a few bones in her mouth were subconsciously

swallowed. Dong Shanshan's face turned pale as she immediately covered her mouth, "Oh! Aiyah!"

Zhang Ye hurriedly said, "What, what?"

"Bone...stuck!" Dong Shanshan inhaled.

"Quick, drink some vinegar!" Zhang Ye rushed to the kitchen to get a bottle of vinegar for her. He was also very worried. Because as a broadcast host, he knew that the most important thing in their line of work was their throat. It was something that fed them, so they could not lose it.

Dong Shanshan bit the bullet and drank a mouthful, "Doesn't...work."

Zhang Ye went over and said, "Open your mouth for me. Where is it stuck?"

"A few...bones...in larynx!" Dong Shanshan opened her mouth for him to take a look.

Carps were fish that had a lot more bones, and they were mostly "Y"-shaped bones. The moment one got stuck, it would be quite troublesome as it would be latched on.

Zhang Ye lowered his head as he looked into her throat. "Raise up your head a bit more. There's light here. I can't see with it dark here. Right, a bit more. Alright, I see it! There was already a bone that had gone right in, leaving a tiny bit outside! Thankfully, it has not entered your gullet. It's at the mouth to your throat!"

Dong Shanshan closed her eyes, trying to spit.

"Don't." Zhang Ye stopped her, "If you swallow and it enters your esophagus, it would be troublesome. You... Eh, I'll get you a pair of chopsticks."

Dong Shanshan nodded and opened her mouth again.

Zhang Ye stuck a pair of chopsticks into her mouth and tried to find the correct lighting before picking the first bone. However, as the chopstick were too big and inflexible, they could not pinch the bone, as they were too clumsy. The moment he touched it out of luck, it skidded past it!

This touch caused it to stab the school belle, causing her to wail in pain.

Zhang Ye did not dare to make any rash moves anymore, “Why don’t I use my fingers to pinch it out?”

Dong Shanshan urged him, “Hurry... It’s.. very.. painful!”

Zhang Ye had washed his hands before eating, but no longer cared to wash them again. He bent his back and half-squatted to be on the same level as Dong Shanshan. His thumb and index fingers entered the school belle’s soft and seductive lips. He was naturally a lot more precise using his finger, so he managed to pinch the first bone immediately. Taking it out, his fingers were stained with Dong Shanshan’s saliva. He threw the bones on a piece of napkin before reaching into her mouth again.

The second bone was harder to find, as he had to take a long time.

Other than the saliva on his fingers, her tongue was pressing on his fingers. Her tongue was not very big, but it was quite thick. It was soft and hot.

Being distracted, he could not help but glance down. From his position, he could already see the bra down Dong Shanshan’s neckline!

It was dark blue!

And there was lace, too!

Maybe it was because she wore a bra that was larger today, so it was unable to completely wrap around her flesh. The bra was slightly opening outwards. Naturally, Zhang Ye lucked out seeing the white scene inside it.

Zhang Ye focused again as he began trying to get the bones out as he endured the temptation.

The next moment, the bone was pinched. However, this time, it stabbed into Dong Shanshan’s throat making her smooth and small tongue to jerk upwards in a reflex motion. Zhang Ye felt his fingers being wrapped by her tongue. Even the tip of her tongue had licked his palm, as it was smeared with the school belle’s saliva.

Zhang Ye ignored her retching, and pushed his hand in to barely grab the bone and pull it out in one fell swoop. “...It’s done!

Dong Shanshan coughed a few times before swallowing her saliva, and then

she exhaled.

“Are there anymore bones?” Zhang Ye asked.

“No, thanks.” Dong Shanshan went into the bathroom. “I’ll rinse my mouth.”

Zhang Ye looked at his sticky fingers. There were still saliva on it that was rolling down. He quickly went into the kitchen to wash his hands.

A minute later, the both of them sat back down to carry on with their meal.

Dong Shanshan laughed, “Next time, you can’t talk while eating fish.”

“It was such a coincidence. Take off your shoes. The heels are too high,” Zhang Ye suggested.

“Indeed, I was so engrossed in cooking, as it was late, that I forgot about it.” Dong Shanshan did not go to the door to take a pair of slippers. Instead, she bent down and took off her heels and placed them by the side. She stepped on the wooden floor with her bare feet. As she had just wiped the floor yesterday, it wasn’t dirty.

Under her tight pants were black colored stockings. With it exposed in front of Zhang Ye, he could see it just by looking down.

So beautiful!

Every part of her body was so tempting!

Dong Shanshan noticed that he was looking at her leg. She could not help but lower her head, “Why? Did my stockings tear?”

“No,” Zhang Ye coughed, “The floor is cold. Don’t catch a cold.”

“It’s fine. Then turn on the heater.” Dong Shanshan pressed a button to switch on the heater.

.....

After the meal.

Dong Shanshan picked up the plates and left them in the kitchen, “I’ll wash the dishes. Go check if the numbers are out. Hur hur. I’m also pretty interested with how many people your program can attract.”

Zhang Ye took his notebook computer to the living room's tea table. Leaning back on the couch, he clicked into the WebTV's site and checked "Zhang Ye's Talk Show". The moment that he saw the string of numbers, Zhang Ye was first momentarily stunned. Then he pushed his head closer, as he tried confirming what he had seen. There was no mistake. It was that number. It was written very clearly on it. There were no errors!

Holy sh*t!

So much?

Zhang Ye was dumbfounded!

Dong Shanshan probed her head out while holding a dish scrubber, "Are the statistics out?"

Zhang Ye nodded.

"How much?" Dong Shanshan asked.

Zhang Ye laughed, "Guess, I'm sure you won't get it."

Dong Shanshan narrowed his eyes, "Over a million?"

Zhang Ye chuckled, "More than that. Guess again."

Dong Shanshan blinked, "Impossible? It has just been aired less than two hours ago. It couldn't have hit 2 million? It can't be that high, right? I'm not guessing. Tell me quickly. Stop keeping me in suspense!"

Zhang Ye pointed to the computer screen and said a shocking sentence, "It is already 5.3 million!"

Dong Shanshan exclaimed, "No way! Let me see! Let me see!" She did not even put down the bowl she was washing. It was still dripping with water. She rushed out from the kitchen with bowl in hand as she bent over to see the computer!

5,307,200!

Dong Shanshan could not help but let out a swear word, "Holy motherf**ker! Can you not be so ridiculous! It hasn't even been two hours! Even if the increase in numbers would begin to slow down, it would not be a problem to hit 7 million hits by tomorrow! This is a new program, and it's just the first episode. It has 7

million hits on the first day? Ever since WebTV's inception, there has not been any person or new program that has broken 6 million in hits on the first day. The highest is a variety show from our Weiwo's competitor. It hit 5.9 million hits on the first day! You took two hours to almost exceed it?"

Zhang Ye touched his nose, "Actually, I didn't think that it would be so much. I was thinking that a million would be not bad. Looks like everyone approves of my program."

"Isn't it far more than approval? This is heaven-defying!" Dong Shanshan shook her head and sighed, "Just this result of yours is definitely enough to cause a stir. Tomorrow... No, just tonight, before 12, you will refresh the historical record for the pilot episode of WebTV. And I believe that in a few days and in a few episodes, your 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' will also refresh the historical record of having the highest average hits for a single episode! It looks like the evaluation on the internet isn't wrong. You have really created history!"

However, Zhang Ye was cautious, "There might not be so many clicks in the future. There could be so many today because of the good promotions. For example: the hijacking incident. I had appeared on Central TV's news after all. And also with the commercial, 'I'll speak for myself', it had also garnered some buzz. Everyone was curious about it, and since it was quite well-liked after the broadcast, it was in some sense free advertisement for me. Hence, many people clicked in to watch my program. There might be some who watched for a while and closed it after not liking it. So to maintain the level of the first episode's clicks might not be that easy." He didn't let himself get carried away by the results.

Dong Shanshan smiled instead, "Hai, if my new program has a tenth of your clicks, I'll already be overjoyed to death." Saying that, she went back to washing the dishes.

Zhang Ye carried on refreshing the webpage as he watched the click numbers increase bit by bit.

.....

10 P.M.

The school belle had washed the dishes and swept the floor. She even wiped

the table.

“Alright, we still need to work tomorrow. Get some rest.” Dong Shanshan yawned and stretched. Just this stretching motion naturally revealed a charm and laid-backness. It made Zhang Ye unwilling to look away, for it was too tempting.

Zhang Ye recalled something. He did not say good night and instead said blankly, “Classmate Dong, didn’t we have a bet in the past?”

Dong Shanshan looked at him in confusion, “Eh? What are you saying?”

“We made a bet that if my program’s pilot episode broke a million, isn’t there something? Right?” Zhang Ye said.

Dong Shanshan’s mouth of lies relapsed as she smiled. “Did I say that? Why don’t I remember? When was it?”

Zhang Ye exclaimed, “Hey, you can’t do that!”

Dong Shanshan blinked, “Did we really make a bet?”

“Of course it’s true. If you lost, you’ll give me a kiss. If I lose, I’ll give you a promotional clip.” Zhang Ye threw up his hands helplessly, “Don’t you go back on your words.”

Dong Shanshan sighed, “Alright then. Then I’ll consider it as we made the bet.”

“What do you mean, ‘consider’? We really made the bet!” Zhang Ye was speechless.

Dong Shanshan headed to the bathroom, “I’ll brush my teeth first. You brush in a while, too.”

“Alright.” Zhang Ye’s heart was thumping. He stopped looking at the computer and threw his notebook into his bedroom. To him, the attractiveness of the school belle was clearly far greater.

A moment later, the school belle came out after washing up.

Zhang Ye glanced at her and also went into the bathroom as he brushed his teeth and washed his face.

The moment he came out, Dong Shanshan was sitting on the sofa, watching

the news on TV. It was a replay from earlier that day.

Zhang Ye walked to her side and sat down. He wanted to speak, but stopped. He smiled as he felt slightly embarrassed to open his mouth. He also began watching News Simulcast.

Dong Shanshan said, "Done brushing?"

"Yes," Zhang Ye cleared his throat.

"OK." Dong Shanshan did not say anything more.

The atmosphere was vague and somewhat embarrassing.

The school belle always looked graceful and she dressed very sexily. She appeared open, but in fact, as a classmate of Dong Shanshan for so many years, her personality was actually the opposite from her outer appearance. In fact, she was more introverted. People tended to be contradictory after all.

Dong Shanshan was still wearing her black tight pants and a red, low-cut top while sitting on the sofa. She constantly switched her crossed leg. She did not seem natural.

Zhang Ye was even more unnatural. Against his enemies, he was always as cold as the autumn wind. But against woman, he had little experience.

In the end, the two of them watched TV from 10 to 10:30.

30 minutes later, the news ended. Only then did Dong Shanshan switch off the TV and look sideways at Zhang Ye and gave a smile, "Hurry, I'm sleepy."

Zhang Ye tersely acknowledged.

Dong Shanshan fidgeted a lot. One moment, she was stroking her hair, while the next moment, she was straightening her clothes. Finally, she leaned her body towards Zhang Ye. Her chin raised slightly up. Her eyes were closed, too. No, actually, they were just narrowed. One could see her eyes through a tiny gap.

Zhang Ye hurriedly took a cup to drink a mouthful of tea, then he emboldened himself and moved his body over. His head was approaching her.

"Hold on." Dong Shanshan opened her eyes, "Hur hur. My throat is a bit dry. Let me drink a mouthful of water too." She had come home late, so she had not

prepared tea. Dong Shanshan took Zhang Ye's cup and ignored the saliva on the cup. She tossed it back and drank it. "Alright, it's okay."

A moment of silence.

Zhang Ye once again moved his head over as he bit the lower lip of Dong Shanshan, as his saliva had a strange smell. This was the experience he gathered from his previous kiss with Dong Shanshan. Hence, he did not kiss her upper lips. The upper lips were close to the nose, and since Zhang Ye smoked and drank, he naturally wanted to leave a good impression on her. Hence, he only kissed her lower lips. The lips there were also thicker, so the feeling was better and felt great.

The two lips locked.

Both their heads were stuck together.

Zhang Ye remembered the regret from the past, which was not sending his tongue in. Hence, the moment they locked lips, Zhang Ye was afraid Dong Shanshan would run away the moment they touched, so he immediately stuck his tongue into the school belle's mouth. It immediately wrapped around the school belle's tongue!

Dong Shanshan clearly was caught off guard, "Oh!"

Zhang Ye was very nervous and uneasy, but he was such a person. The moment he did it, then it didn't matter. His courage grew, as he kissed her again and again. After his tongue had enough of it, Zhang Ye did not go overboard and removed it from her mouth.

Dong Shanshan huffed and puffed as if she was simmering. She said in an exasperated tone, "Why did your tongue come in? There wasn't this in the bet, right?"

Zhang Ye acted dumb, "Didn't you forget about the bet?"

Dong Shanshan, "..."

Zhang Ye hurriedly said, "The agreements of the bet didn't say that was prohibited. Next time we make a bet, we can make it more detailed."

"Next time?" Dong Shanshan leered at him and smiled. "You sure have taken

enough advantage. Enough, I'm sleeping. You rest early, too."

Zhang Ye said kindly, "Good night, Shanshan."

"Goodnight," Dong Shanshan returned to her room.

Zhang Ye was left alone in the living room, recounting the sweet taste in his mouth!

Chapter 247: A Program Staff Credit List that Shocks Everyone!

He ended up sleeping late.

As a result, he also woke up late the next morning.

By the time that Zhang Ye got up from bed and looked at the time... Good heavens, it's already 10 A.M. He hurriedly dressed up. Last night while in bed, he was recounting the softness from Dong Shanshan's mouth and her tiny tongue. As a result, he suffered from serious insomnia. In the end, Dong Shanshan woke up very early and left, as she had to busy herself with her own program. As she left early, she did not wake him up. Zhang Ye was already accustomed to using Dong Shanshan as an "alarm" to wake him up, so he did not set an alarm. Damn, so when he opened his eyes, it was already so late. He hurried, for he did not want to be too late.

Sure enough, there was no one in the living room.

However, there was fried rice with egg on the table. It was a leftover from yesterday. Zhang Ye could tell at a glance that this was an outcome of Dong Shanshan's cooking. He was momentarily in a dilemma as he changed his mind. He heated it up in the microwave before eating it. Hai, since he was already late, he might as well finish eating first. He could not waste the food cooked by the school belle.

Going out.

He stood by the roadside to hail a taxi.

Suddenly, a youth who walked past saw Zhang Ye and widened his eyes. He then shouted while pointing at him, "You...You...You are Zhang Ye!"

Zhang Ye was surprised and nodded at him with a smile.

The youth was very excited, “Ai Ai Ai! It’s really you! I watched your ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’ yesterday! It was really d*mn good!”

Zhang Ye was very delighted, “Thank you for the support.”

With the youth’s shout, another girl also saw Zhang Ye. She screamed, “Zhang Ye! It’s the Zhang Ye from the talk show yesterday!” She turned around and shouted to a girl waiting in the distance for a car, “Meng Meng! Hurry over and take a look! I’ve seen a celebrity! It’s that poker-face comedian!”

Another young girl ran over excitedly!

“Teacher Zhang!”

“Your program is so good!”

“Please give me an autograph!”

“Give me one, too! Ever since watching your program, I became a loyal fan of yours!”

Zhang Ye was pretty happy about it. He gave each and every one of them an autograph. People in Shanghai could finally recognize him. In the past, when he had just come to Shanghai, he did not need to even wear sunglasses. Although it had delayed him, it was alright. Fans were the ones sustaining him.

Although there were many passersby who passed them with a curious glance, Zhang Ye already knew it was quite something. His fame was slowly increasing in the country. He was no longer only limited to Beijing. This was an upgrade and uplifting. Of course, he could not compare with those A-list or S-list celebrities who were known by everyone on the street. Zhang Ye was still very content and knew that this was the fame that “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” brought him. From this, he could tell how successful the program from last night was. In just a night, he could be recognized on the street, with them asking for autographs!

After taking pictures with a few fans and satisfying them, Zhang Ye got a taxi. The first thing he did upon boarding the taxi was to wear the long-awaited sunglasses.

.....

The unit.

The moment he entered the hall, many people looked at Zhang Ye. These people were basically not from the WebTV department, but they all recognized him.

“Teacher Zhang.”

“You’ve arrived? Good morning.”

A few people greeted him with a smile.

Zhang Ye did not know them, but still responded, “Good morning.”

.....

When Zhang Ye entered his office, the situation became even more intense. The moment his head popped in, the stares of everyone in the office darted towards him!

Wang Xiong was there, too.

Zhang Ye hurriedly went forward apologetically, “Leader, sorry about it. I rested late last night, so I couldn’t wake up in the morning. It won’t happen again.”

Wang Xiong patted his shoulders happily, “It’s alright. I know you have been working hard the past few days. Is your body okay? If you aren’t well-rested, I can give you another day off.”

Zhang Ye said, “I’m fine. I’ve recovered.”

Wang Xiong chuckled, “Did you see your program’s numbers?”

“I saw it,” Zhang Ye added on, “Last night I saw 5 million.”

Wang Xiong chuckled, “Then you are outdated. Just now we were all talking about this matter. In the morning, at a higher management meeting, we were all discussing your new program!”

Zhang Ye exclaimed, “Why is the company’s higher management meeting talking about me?”

Wang Xiong pointed at him, “Do you know how many hits your program has received at this moment?” Saying that, he handed Zhang Ye a document, “These are the statistics that were just collated without any delay!”

Zhang Ye took it over to give it a look.

Wang Xiong directly said, “7.4 million!”

Zhang Ye was stunned. He thought that it would only slowly increase above 7 million tonight, but who knew that it would reach it in the morning? He was indeed very surprised!

Wang Xiong said, “Do you know what this number of hits of yours mean? It means that you have broken a record for the number of hits for a pilot episode in WebTV history! You have created a new legendary rating! I have some numbers here. It’s the number of hits for each pilot episode for all the new WebTV programs this month. You are first, and do you know how many second place got? It’s just 1.3 million! Your program is six times more popular than them! It’s completely an overwhelming victory! There’s no question about it! And in the top ten for this month’s new program pilot episodes, the other nine programs added up still have less hits than your program! And your program is actually twice all the nine added up!”

Zhang Ye said in a low-key manner, “Maybe I happened to chance upon a month without good new programs?”

Wang Xiong shook his head, saying, “It’s not that their programs aren’t good. Having a million hits in the pilot program is already a very impressive achievement. It’s because your program is too good!” Saying that, he turned and said to everyone else, “Everyone, stop your work for a moment. Everyone should know that our Weiwo WebTV hasn’t been doing very well this year. We were being suppressed by the other WebTV platforms. Be it in meetings or mobilization of staff, we always say that our goal is to exceed them so as to get back our position as industry leader. Today, ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’ has created history! It has surpassed all other new programs! After a year, our WebTV has once again reached the top! Should we give Little Zhang a warm round of applause?”

“Yes!”

“Teacher Zhang is impressive!”

“It’s too fierce! 7 million hits!”

“And it’s not even 24 hours yet! It will probably hit 8 million before tonight! It has refreshed the historical record by more than 2 million? F**k!”

“It’s so dazzling that I’m turning blind!”

“That’s right. When I saw the hit rate in the morning, I turned dumbfounded!”

“This hit rate isn’t an accident. Yesterday, when I watched Teacher Zhang’s program, the laughing me teared up so many tears! Seriously awesome!”

“Our Weiwo WebTV has finally produced a signature program!”

Bba Bba Bba Bba!

Everyone applauded!

Wang Xiong did similar. He was feeling extremely good, “Teacher Little Zhang, in the future, have more exchanges with everyone. Teach your experience to your colleagues!”

Zhang Ye quickly motioned with his hands, “I’m a newcomer, too. I’m just trying to find my path. I can have some exchanges with everyone, but not anything like teaching them.”

The Leader left.

Zhang Ye returned to his desk.

Dong Shanshan was not around. She could be busy recording in the studio.

Ah Qian and Little Yu came over immediately, “Teacher Zhang, congratulations.”

Zhang Ye smiled. “It’s a team effort. It’s not just me.”

“You may not know. Hahaha. in the morning, aN ex-colleague of mine called me. He, too, is in this industry, but he is from another WebTV company,” Little Yu said, “The moment he got through, he asked me what’s the matter with Zhang Ye from your company! Where did such a mighty person appear from!” After a pause, he said joyfully, “According to him, when the other WebTV departments saw your program’s click numbers last night, they were f**king aghast with shock!”

Zhang Ye laughed, “It’s not that exaggerated, right?”

“It’s really that exaggerated!” Little Yu said amusingly, “It’s his exact words. It’s true!”

At this moment, a few other colleagues took the initiative to walk over from a distance.

“Teacher Zhang, let’s get to know each other. I’m Li Weipeng. I’m in charge of technology. In the future, look for me if you have any problems on those matters.”

“Teacher Zhang, I do documents. is your program team lacking in people?”

“Teacher Little Zhang, nice to meet you. Can we have a meal whenever you are free? I want to consult you on advice about programs; please don’t be stingy with your experience.”

Zhang Ye hurriedly engaged with them and shook hands with them to get to know each other.

Immediately, everyone seemed to forget they had been extremely pessimistic about the talk show. Zhang Ye had used his ability to prove that as long as he made a program, it would definitely become popular! “Late-night Ghost Stories”, too! “Zhang Ye’s Analysis of the Three Kingdoms”, too! “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”, too!

.....

At the same time.

On the internet, news reports related to this were released.

Some were criticizing it, saying that Zhang Ye’s program had no bottom line and was doing it all for laughs.

Of course, most of them were filled with praise. For a program that was so innovative and ground-breaking to appear domestically, it was mostly affirmation from everyone!

Naturally, the heaven-defying number of hits “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” garnered was also reported!

Netizens expressed that they were blinded!

“Is that real?”

“It can get more than 7 million hits in less than a day?”

“This is the precursor to f**king shooting out into outer space!”

“Just this blinds you? All of you are too naive. It seems few of you noticed it! Haha. I suggest for you to go back and look through the staff credits at the end of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”. After seeing that will you really turn blind! Spoilers ahead, I’m already blind! I turned blind from dumbfoundedness!”

“Ah?”

“Staff credits?”

“What do you mean? Let me take a look!”

A few people went to watch it out of curiosity. It wasn’t a big deal seeing it, but just as the previous person said, they nearly cried out of fright!

Executive Producer: Zhang Ye.

Executive Director: Zhang Ye.

Overall Planner: Zhang Ye.

Directing Team: Zhang Ye, Qi Xuan.

Props: Zhang Ye.

Costumes: Zhang Ye.

Make-up: Liu Weihong.

Post Production: Zhang Ye.

Technical Producer: Zhang Ye.

Scene Design: Zhang Ye.

Filming: Wang Lei, Li Heni, Sun Bang.

Nearly all the roles in the name list had Zhang Ye’s name!

“Holy motherf**king hell!”

“It’s all Zhang Ye?”

“This is f**king him taking nine roles for himself!”

“Teacher Zhang, can you not be so versatile!”

This program’s staff credits really shocked a countless number of people!

Not only netizens expressed their incredulous opinions about it, even some professional insiders posted to express their astonished reactions!

Chapter 248: Live broadcast? Nothing I'm afraid of!

Four days later.

Friday, morning.

On the internet, the awe and discussion of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” had started to die down. The topic was no longer so actively discussed anymore. It was normal that even the hottest topic did not last for long. There had been a plastic surgery scandal of a Korean celebrity who had always claimed to be “natural”. Everyone had gone to discuss about this as the previous topic was left in the dust. Zhang Ye didn’t mind because he had earned enough reputation in this wave of discussions.

His Weibo followers were nearing 900,000!

His Tieba fan club’s hardcore fans had increased to 40,000!

Even the celebrity rankings did not place Zhang Ye at the bottom of the D-list celebrities anymore. He had been promoted to around 8th or 9th spot, although it was counted from the back. But the concept of D-list and E-list were totally different. This was a level where the celebrities were all truly professional; they had gone through fire of baptism to reach this level. There were no pushovers. So to be able to climb 8 or 9 positions was already going against the heavens. If “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” could continue to keep up its quality, then it’s very likely that his placing would only keep increasing.

Taking a look at his total Reputation points, it was a total of 2.1 million!

Zhang Ye knew that he had gotten so many Reputation points through just one episode of the program mainly because this world did not have an entertainment program such as his talk show. This led to the big effect of him gaining so many

Reputation points. Based on his guess, he would not be able to get so many points anymore. Starting from the second episode, the reduction would be by at least half, so he would get around one million Reputation points per episode.

But to get one million was already very high. When he was back at the Beijing Television Station, an episode of “Zhang Ye’s Analysis of the Three Kingdoms” could at most get him a few hundred thousand Reputation points, so he was operating at several multiples of that now! Looking back, Zhang Ye knew that his choice to join the online television station was the right one!

Still an hour before work.

Dong Shanshan had already left home to busy herself with her new program.

Zhang Ye had the habit of watching the news on TV after breakfast. He brought up the game ring’s interface at the same time to try his luck at the Lottery. There was nothing to do anyway, so he might as well try his luck. Then without looking at where the pointer would land on, Zhang Ye used his Additional Stakes and added 10 stakes!

He had spent a total of 1.1 million Reputation points!

The pointer began to swing! It spun crazily fast! Then it started slowing down!

Because the Difficulty Adjustment Die had left a deep psychological trauma to Zhang Ye, and the previous two lottery draws had gotten him Consumption Category items, he really did not want to get the Consumption Category items anymore. It would be best that he could draw a Special Category item. If that doesn’t work out, a Stats Category or Skills Category was fine, too.

Spin on! Round and round!

The pointer came to a stop!

Zhang Ye took a look. It was still okay; it had landed on the Skills Category!

He took out the Treasure Chest (Small) from his inventory and opened the lid, full of expectations, hoping to see what would come out from inside.

[Computer Programming Skills - Network Technology Experience Book] (11)

Zhang Ye’s eyes turned gloomy. He could not help but slap himself on the forehead. What kind of lousy sh*t was this? His program was getting more and

more popular. His fame was also increasing. But why was his luck becoming worse by the day? Thinking of the previous time when he was still in Beijing... Before he had gotten his Taiji Fist Skill, he had actually drawn a Computer Programming Skills Experience Book, for a total of 21 books! This time it's back? A change of course? This time it's Computer Programming Skills – Network Technologies Experience Book? Your sister! Was this a plan for this bro to become a Computer Programming Teacher?! Why programming? Why network technologies? What would I want them for? This bro here wants to become a famous celebrity, not become an IT worker!

Forget it, what's done is done. There's no point in saying any more. I will eat it first. Who knows if this crappy thing might come in handy in future? That was how Zhang Ye consoled himself.

1 book.....

10 books...

11 books.....

Zhang Ye “ate” up all the skill experience.

As for the remaining 1 million Reputation points, Zhang Ye did not plan on carrying on playing the Lottery. Without any hesitation, he bought a total of 10 Memory Search Capsules. After eating them, he carried on extracting the memories of all the excellent talk shows from his world. There was no such thing as having too much of it. The previous time, he had only extracted a tiny amount, and if he wanted to carry on doing the talk show well, the knowledge and memories were extremely important. Without these things, it would be impossible for Zhang Ye to tell the joke segments with such confidence and composure. It was a fundamental need!

8:40 A.M.

All the reputation was spent. Zhang Ye took a cab to work.

.....

The unit.

Today was a gloomy day, but it did not seem like it'd rain.

The moment he entered the office, a staff member called him over to inform him that Director Feng want to see him.

Zhang Ye put down his belongings and went upstairs to Director Feng's office. He knocked on the door and went inside, "Director Feng, you were looking for me?"

Wang Xiong was also in the room. Feng Guiqin was just speaking to him as she looked towards Zhang Ye. She smiled and waved him over, "Come, Little Zhang. Sit down first."

"Okay." Zhang Ye sat down over there.

Feng Guiqin looked at him and said, "Recently, your 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' has brought us many viewers and it has received much praise. But there has been much happening on the internet the past few days; discussions about your program has begun to die down. I'm worried that after the second episode's broadcast tomorrow, the results would deteriorate further. Therefore, I would like to create some publicity to make your program the topic of discussion again."

Zhang Ye wondered, "What kind of publicity?"

Feng Guiqin laughed, "This came to me on a whim, or maybe I should say it's just my fantasy. I would still have to hear your opinion first."

Zhang Ye ask puzzledly, "What kind of gimmick are we talking about?"

Feng Guiqin said hesitantly, "I would like to do a live broadcast for one episode."

"Live broadcast?" Zhang Ye was stunned, "A live internet broadcast?"

Feng Guiqin nodded, "This has some difficulty, I understand. Even in traditional television stations, live broadcasts are a rarity. Except for some news and sports programs, the rest are mainly recorded broadcasts. Because factors and problems cannot be controlled fully for live broadcasts, even news programs will often have difficulties in preventing them even when they use scripts and teleprompters. So for online television stations, a live broadcast is even harder!

This new industry has already been around for the past few years, but no one

dares to do a live broadcast on WebTV. Such an event is probably already rejected by industry insiders as being too difficult. They would not want to risk it if anything were to go wrong. If problems occur during a live set and the host is unable to handle it, then it would become a live broadcast incident, so it would be better if they didn't do a live broadcast at all. But having seen you live at your first episode's recording, I have a feeling that you are able to do what others can't!"

Zhang Ye nodded. Director Feng's words gave him a lot of pressure, but his emotions were stirred. This sort of trust was hard to come by.

Wang Xiong asked, "Teacher Little Zhang, what do you think?"

Feng Guiqin laughed, "Director Wang is not too agreeable. He thinks the risk is too high. Rather than get the title of 'First to do a live broadcast on WebTV', it would be better to do it slow and steadily. But I somehow feel that you can do it. Your program does not need any editing, and the rhythm from the beginning to the end was marvelously controlled. You even measured your words and did not cross the line. As for your adaptive ability, you were a graduate of a broadcast major and have done a number of programs before, so your experience is definitely not worse than anyone else."

Zhang Ye was silent; he was considering.

Feng Guiqin glanced at him and said, "Of course, like I mentioned, it still depends on your opinion. Whether you dare to take this risk or not to be the first to do this. If you feel uncomfortable, then let's forget it. We will resume our original plan for recording."

After more than 10 seconds, Zhang Ye raised his head and said, "Director Feng, I've meddled with live broadcast related activities before, but this will be my first time doing a live broadcast. I will try. I have considered it for very long just now. I don't think there will be a problem. I dare not say that there will be no problems, but at least the problems won't be big!"

Wang Xiong interrupted, "Teacher Little Zhang, you have to think carefully!"

Feng Guiqin said, "Yes, you have to consider it very carefully."

Zhang Ye laughed, "I've already thought about it. Other online television

stations might not dare to do it, but I am a little different. I was born with guts; I dare!”

Feng Guiqin was very happy. She slapped the table, “Good. Then we will do the live broadcast at 8 P.M. tomorrow. Little Zhang, go back and prepare yourself; it’s all on you now.”

“Okay.” Zhang Ye nodded and said goodbye.

.....

Afternoon.

Everyone in the office had also heard this piece of shocking news — Saturday, 8 P.M.! “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” would be broadcast live!

Wang Bei found Zhang Ye in no time and asked, “Zhang Ye, you want to do the live broadcast?”

Zhang Ye tersely acknowledged.

“Are you crazy?” Wang Bei made a fainting gesture, “This is not a news report program; you are doing a variety program. How are you going to make it a live broadcast?”

You can’t avoid a live broadcast if you’re doing a news program. There were even scripts for those and all you needed to do was to read it accordingly. A sports match was more suited for a live broadcast because as long as the filming was done on time, it did not matter even if the commentator gaged on his lines. Some variety shows, like singing competitions, had live broadcasts for the finals, but since the contestants had already made it through to the finals, there would not be any major problems with their singing. But what sort of program was Zhang Ye hosting? It’s a talk show! It depended on nothing but Zhang Ye’s oratorical skills! He even insisted on not having a teleprompter. If he forgot his lines, then there would be no way to rescue the situation at all! It would all be ruined!

Ah Qian came forward to ask, “Will you be using a teleprompter?”

Zhang Ye shook his head, “No. There’s no need for that.”

Ah Qian and Little Yu, “.....”

An old comrade came over and said, “Little Zhang, you’re too rash. There’s a reason why all the online television stations do not do live broadcasts. It’s way too difficult!”

Zhang Ye smiled a little, “I will give it a try.”

After a whole day of everyone trying to dissuade him, Zhang Ye still would not listen. He had already decided.

Zhang Ye knew that Feng Guiqin wanted him to do a live broadcast because it would continue to help increase their online television station’s influence. At the same time, Zhang Ye also understood that if they managed to do it while others did not dare to, this would be a huge advantage for them. It would definitely add more credentials to his program!

Afraid?

Scared?

Zhang Ye did not have those emotions!

There was a saying from his previous world. If a singer does not dare to sing live at a concert, then he was not considered to be a singer.

Similarly, a host who did not dare do live broadcasts..... No matter how famous they might be, they would never be considered as an outstanding host!

If his goal was to just be a normal host and earn a living, then it wouldn’t matter. But no, he wanted to go further. This was why Zhang Ye wanted to risk it all and give it a try!

Live broadcast?

Don’t dare to?

There’s not a f**king thing that I don’t dare to do!

Chapter 249: A war of words begins again!

Saturday.

Early morning.

The bedroom door opened.

“Zhang Ye, wake up,” said Dong Shanshan who was in her work clothes.

Zhang Ye, who was hugging his blanket, turned his head drowsily, “Shanshan, why?”

Dong Shanshan said with a pretty smile, “What do you think? It’s already 8 A.M. Wake up quickly. I’m going to work first. Breakfast has been prepared for you.”

Zhang Ye shut his eyes again, “Okay.”

Dong Shanshan slapped his thighs, “Wake up quickly.”

“I’m not going to work in the morning. I know, I will get up soon,” Zhang Ye vaguely said.

Dong Shanshan glanced at him, “You were watching the news last night to find inspiration? You really asked for it when you promised to do the live broadcast. You could have just kept doing what you did and it would have been good and would get better. But yet, you had to go along with the crazy idea of the Leaders. If a live broadcast was so good to handle, wouldn’t the other online television stations already have done it? I don’t care anymore; I’m off.”

“Byebye.” Zhang Ye closed his eyes and waved.

Five minutes after the school belle left, Zhang Ye finally got up unwillingly. Because of tonight’s live broadcast, the Leader gave him the morning off to prepare for the program. After having breakfast, Zhang Ye continued watching the news as he sorted out the lines for tonight’s show in his head. But what gave

Zhang Ye a headache was that there was not much that was interesting in the news recently. Many of the current affairs and happenings had already been used for the last show and couldn't be used again. This was also the reason why he stayed up so late last night; it was because he could not find a suitable topic and points to talk about!

Give me a topic!

Can't there be something happening today?

Otherwise, how would this bro do his talk show!

.....

Weiwo had already released the news and this news had already been spread all over the internet.

"What?"

"Zhang Ye is going to do a live broadcast?"

"Is that fake news? Or has Teacher Zhang gone crazy?"

"A program that depends on the host's oratorical skills and topic for 30 minutes... Can you even do a live broadcast for that? And it's even a live broadcast over the internet? How much guts did you get from your mother!"

"Haha. It's gonna be a good night tonight!"

"Looking forward to it. Zhang Ye is still the gutsy one! He even dares to do a live broadcast!"

"I am very interested and looking forward to it, but are you all sure that there won't be any problems doing a live broadcast? This isn't a news report or a sports live broadcast. Isn't it going to be too difficult?"

"Yeah, I heard that Zhang Ye also doesn't use a script!"

"Right, Teacher Zhang Ye seems to go off-script for the entire show!"

"What a professional! He even dares to go off-script for the whole episode and dares to do a live broadcast. This is what I call a real host!"

"Weiwo WebTV is really brave. There's no other online television station that dares to do a live broadcast. I definitely must watch tonight!"

As Feng Guiqin predicted, this first-ever live broadcast for an online television station had attracted a lot of eyeballs. It had further propelled “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” to a new height. Although it was not as shocking as the first episode of the talk show, the discussions around it were not small either.

An industry insider commented, “Zhang Ye is playing with fire. If the live broadcast fails or anything goes wrong, his popularity would definitely be affected. There’s already no lack of people who curse at him online. This would cause a massive increase in those kinds of people. He could have just continued what he was doing, but yet he chose to take this risk. Why?”

Another online television station’s CEO posted a laughing emoticon on Weibo, “Whether it’s Weiwo Company or Zhang Ye, all of this is too radical.”

Following that, another company’s long famous WebTV host analyzed, “Unless Zhang Ye prepares a script or uses a teleprompter this time, I do not think this live broadcast would work. A program like his depends too much on oratorical skills. No script? Fully going off-script? It’s not practical at all! For any hosts, they might not be able to do it well for a genre like a talk show even if they were reading it off a script, as the speed used in speaking can be too fast and too overloaded with information, so let’s not even talk about going off-script! If anything goes wrong during the recording, it can be re-recorded or edited out. But you can’t do that for a live broadcast!”

Everyone was discussing the matter intensely. They were guessing if Zhang Ye would be using a script this time. Because during the first episode of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”, the scene of Zhang Ye hosting off-script left a deep impression on everyone. The audience might not pay much attention nor care about this detail, but how could industry insiders and other hosts ignore this? To a truly knowledgeable person, Zhang Ye’s strongest ability was not in his writing of scripts or joke segments, but his ability to go off-script! Many people could write joke segments, but to be able to go off-script for 30 minutes and ensure the smooth delivery of all the complicated joke segments, the ability needed was very demanding. In the hosting world, only a handful of people could do that!

Arguments, discussions.

Everyone was mainly exchanging views.

But suddenly, an unfriendly voice appeared!

A Weibo profile with a picture of a pretty boy with small eyes commented. Those who saw it were immediately stunned. Everyone knew him. This person was called Lee Parkwoo. He had over 4 million followers on Weibo and was from South Korea. He had filmed many dramas in Korea this year which had average ratings. But in China, many people had watched it online. He was even a singer before, an ex-member of a Korean group. Lee Parkwoo was very popular in China right now, with many teenage girls forming his fan base. Lee Parkwoo was not extremely popular in Korea, but he could still do well in China. So for the past year, he had been focusing and based his promotions in China, ready to take root over here. It was not known whether he knew Chinese or if he had a translation assistant, but anyway, his post on Weibo was in Chinese!

Lee Parkwoo: “I’ve been on quite a number of programs, but I’ve never seen anyone go off-script for a performance like this before. If their company said that he was hosting off-script, would you necessarily need to believe it? There has to be a teleprompter or he refers to the script with every segment before keeping it away. But through editing, it was shown like he did not refer to a script throughout. Realistically, this is falsifying the truth; they just made it seem like it was real!”

“Wow!”

“It’s Lee Parkwoo!”

“Lee Parkwoo, I love you!”

“What program are you commenting about?”

“‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’? What rubbish program is that? I’ve never watched it!”

“Support Lee Parkwoo. These domestic programs only know how to misrepresent and falsify! Our Lee Parkwoo is still the most charming! Never engaging in unscrupulous acts!”

When Lee Parkwoo spoke, the replies were countless!

But Zhang Ye’s peers were not impressed! Of these peers, some of them were Zhang Ye’s colleagues with a competing relationship. Some of them did not like

Zhang Ye much either. But they were all countrymen, while he was a Korean! You are leading a bunch of our crazy Chinese fans to insult our profession?

A female WebTV host, who was ranked 4th in the industry, replied to Lee Parkwoo: “You speak like you understand our work. You might have been on many programs before, but it’s only as a guest. Have you even done hosting before? You don’t even know the basic editing process, so why are you commenting? The industry has already reached a consensus that the first episode of ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’ was definitely done off-script. As for you saying that he refers to the script mid-way through and it was post-edited out? To say that means you are an amateur! Do you think the live audience members are fools? If this was really the case, then the truth would never have been kept secret! And from the program’s effects, the cut scenes were definitely all continuous!”

At the same time, other industry insiders also rebutted!

Lee Parkwoo only responded with a word, “Childish.”

Even more unaccepting of the post were the domestic netizens. This included Zhang Ye’s fans, but even more of them were nationalistic youths! Many of these youths did not even know who Zhang Ye was, but seeing a Korean celebrity who wasn’t even from the hosting industry criticizing their country’s program and host, they began scolding!

“Why are you acting all high and mighty!?”

“You don’t know a fart! Don’t show off to us!”

“Go back to Korea!”

“You’re even accusing our Teacher Zhang Ye of faking it? I think you the one who’s faking it instead! You are f**king fake from your face to your legs!”

“Are you sure you were scolding Teacher Zhang Ye just now? I have a strong premonition that you guys are gonna be in for a bad time. Hahaha! Teacher Zhang is no pushover! You guys can offend anyone but him!”

But the opposing camp also fought back. It wasn’t Lee Parkwoo; he did not even say a word. It was his brainless Chinese fans who came rushing forward for him!

“Who are you scolding!”

“Damn! You dare to scold our Lee Parkwoo? Are you looking for death!”

“What Zhang Ye! What talk show! It’s all rubbish!”

“If Lee Parkwoo says that Zhang Ye was faking it, then he must be faking it!”

“Ask that whoever Zhang Ye to scram! Don’t deceive the audience anymore!”

.....

Coincidentally, Zhang Ye, who was just watching the news, had received a call from a leader who was informing him about some matters. After hanging up, he conveniently browsed through Weibo and saw this mess of infighting.

Me?

Faking it?

Deceiving the audience?

Zhang Ye laughed. But he did not reply to anything. He only noted Lee Parkwoo’s name, which he went online to research on his news in Korea.

“A person from Korea claims: Chinese characters and the printing press were invented by them!”

“The Greats from the past have Korean origins? Korea comes up with audacious claims again! ”

“The officials of Korea have released a press statement. They will be applying for the World Cultural Heritage on traditional Chinese medicine. This author would like to ask... What does traditional Chinese medicine have anything to do with you all?”

News articles were found, which could have been published from long ago or from recent times.

Zhang Ye realised that this world and his previous world were alike. The Koreans would make claims to certain achievements? It was exactly the same as his previous world? There was even a news article which made Zhang Ye very angry. It had existed in this world, too — the Jiangling Dragon Boat Festival was declared by UNESCO as an “Intangible Cultural Heritage Property of Mankind” —

a simmering World Heritage nomination of the Sino-Korean Dragon Boat Festival ended in victory for Korea!

Looking at these pieces of news.....

Looking at the Weibo's mentions regarding him, Lee Parkwoo's brainless fans and some Korean undergraduates in China scolding him.....

Zhang Ye focused his mind. He still had not thought of what to talk about for this episode, but now he had found his topic. He speedily thought and planned his joke segments in his head and sorted out the order of presentation before committing it to memory. He double-checked everything, so that the episode's presentation would not go wrong!

Let's talk about Korea this episode!

It was impossible for such a wonderful country to not appear on a domestic talk show!

Translator's Notes: Regarding the anti-Korean sentiment regarding the UNESCO cultural heritage in China, please refer to the [Wikipedia](#) page. About the Greats mentioned, it is due to reports that claim that [Confucius](#) , [Cao Cao](#) , etc were Korean by certain academics or through incorrectly communicated news. This naturally provoked a sense of national pride amongst the Chinese which they have always claimed to be theirs. To put it into context, Korean netizens can be as equally hateful as Chinese netizens when matters of national pride are at conflict such as the [Paektu/Changbai mountains](#) , with [celebrities even embroiled in it](#) , so neither side is really innocent in the cultural conflict. It is a matter that should be resolved through their own respective governments through diplomacy, so we, as outsiders will not comment on who is in the right or wrong. You can get some understanding of this very complicated conflict through this [Quora post](#) (South Korean point of view), and [this one](#) (Chinese point of view).

Chapter 250: WebTV's First Historical Live Broadcast!

Evening.

Nearly 7 P.M.

Zhang Ye came to work under the light of the moon. According to the company, this was a classic case of working late. It was also something that the Leaders had specially approved. It wasn't too different from a traditional television station. Usually, before a live broadcast, the hosts wouldn't be kept too busy. They'd also usually do their preparations an hour or two before the show started, otherwise, if they were to work normal hours like everyone else, how would they be able to handle the live broadcasts at night? They wouldn't be able to their energy levels up!

The lift doors opened just as he entered the building.

Zhang Ye quickened his footsteps so that he caught the lift just in time.

There was a man inside the lift, someone that Zhang Ye knew. It was the person who he'd met on his first day after joining the company—the one from Human Resources who'd made him fill in his form with an English name.

His name was Yang Yang. He glanced sideways at Zhang Ye with a sunken expression.

Zhang Ye didn't pay any attention to him, and pressed the button for his level, looking relaxed.

Yang Yang didn't attempt to speak to him either. The two of them had already argued in the past, so of course they didn't want to speak once again!

The lift went to the basement first, where Zhang Ye walked out. He walked straight to Studio 7 for the recording. He entered by pushing the door. Damn, it

had already transformed into a whirlwind of activity and staff.

“Is the signal okay?”

“It’s almost there.”

“I’ll adjust it a little more, then.”

“Lights, we need some more lights over here!”

Over a dozen people were busy climbing around and carrying equipment.

When Zhang Ye noticed the WebTV department’s second-in-command, Wang Xiong, he knew that the company had placed a lot of emphasis on this live broadcast of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”. The department leaders were all handling this personally, causing Zhang Ye to subconsciously feel pressured.

“Little Zhang, you’re here?” Wang Xiong said when he saw him.

Zhang Ye went forward to greet him, “Director Wang.”

Wang Xiong looked at him, laughing, “You look pretty confident. How’re your preparations? Has the script and all of the joke segments to be used been decided already?”

Zhang Ye nodded, “It’s been decided.”

Wang Xiong said with heartfelt emotions, “Your talk show’s program style is the first of its kind in the country, as well as in the world. There’s been no precedence nor experience with this sort of program. Although our company has many scriptwriters and editors, they can’t really write good material for joke segments like you can. It’s their first time handling something like this, so before they familiarize themselves with it, we’ll still depend on you to write it. When they know it better, in the future, it’ll be much easier. I’ll find a group of writers for you, in order to help with your background research and work, so that you won’t have to work so hard.”

Zhang Ye smiled. “It’s alright, Director Wang. Writing these things comes quite naturally to me.”

Wang Xiong cautioned, “Director Feng asked me to remind you that the joke segments should all be original, just like in the first episode. If you’re out of any original joke segments, you can get some from online too. However, the

company will have to purchase the rights on your behalf. At least we'll avoid any copyright issues then."

"Don't worry." Zhang Ye didn't have any such worries. He said, "You won't find any of the joke segments from my talk show online."

Wang Xiong said at ease, "Haha, that's good then. Come, you should get ready. Go do your makeup and get changed first. I've gathered the best from each department in order to help out the situation here today. This is a historical live broadcast in WebTV history, and also a first. It's a real milestone for us, so we've gotten the backstage works all ready for you. You can rest assured, and just do your best up on stage. This live broadcast isn't only watched by our company's top management... you should've seen the discussions online? There are many people in the same industry, and peers, who are watching us. We aren't asking you for perfection, just for you to do the best that you can."

Zhang Ye replied, "I won't betray the leader's trust."

.....

Backstage.

In the aisle.

Sister Four from the filming department was chatting with Dong Shanshan and Wang Bei. Ah Qian and Little Yu were present as well, but didn't say anything.

Zhang Ye was a little stunned, "Shanshan...teacher Shanshan, aren't you busy with your program? What're you doing here?"

Dong Shanshan turned around and smiled at him, "My old classmate's doing a live broadcast today, therefore I definitely have to come and support him. No matter how busy I was, I'd still have come."

Zhang Ye said happily, "Interesting."

Dong Shanshan added on, "The main reason is because I'm afraid that you'd use me as your topic again, so I'm here to watch you!"

Everyone laughed.

Zhang Ye looked over at Sister Four, "Sister Four, you've worked hard."

Sister Four snapped her fingers, “It was nothing. The person one who’s going to have to work hard in a while will be you. If anything happens during the live broadcast, the responsibility is all on you...Pui, curse my mouth!” Then, without saying any more worrisome words, Sister Four said, “Oh right, how’d you offend that Lee Parkwoo from Korea?”

Zhang Ye held his hands up in denial, “I don’t even know him, nor have I even heard of him before this.”

Wang Bei added her share of opinions, “That person is such a grandson. He had nothing better to do, so he wanted to create trouble for you? His sense of superiority is really there. A Korean thinking that he has fans from both countries, and that he can even forget his surname? I’ve already posted a reply on Weibo to scold him. That Lee Parkwoo really is unbearable to watch. He looks all high and mighty, and with just a few words, leads those brainless Chinese fans of his to do all the dirty work for him. He even looks like he’s enjoying the entire process, which makes him that much more hateful!”

Little Yu echoed, “Yeah! He still said that Teacher Zhang was faking going off-script? Why doesn’t he just die? We all saw it clearly back then, even the audience saw it! Teacher Zhang never once referred to the script from beginning till the end. He didn’t have an earpiece prompter either. Lee Parkwoo is just blatantly accusing him. I read on the internet that many Hallyu fans believed it, and are scolding both Teacher Zhang and our company for misrepresenting it to the audience. What do we even call this?”

Zhang Ye smiled, but then sighed, “It’s just a small matter. If they wish to say so, then leave them be. I’ll go and get changed, and have my makeup done first.”

He left.

Only Sister Four, Dong Shanshan, Wang Bei, and the others were left looking at each other.

Eh. This wasn’t right. It definitely didn’t feel right. Everyone in the company knew about Zhang Ye’s terrible temper. If someone casually said something that offended him, he might even desire to grab them by the collar and scold them. What’s more, that Korean celebrity had blatantly accused him like this. This wasn’t Teacher Zhang Ye’s style at all!

Ah Qian wondered, “What’s with Teacher Zhang?”

Sister Four was also bewildered, “Just a small matter? Shouldn’t this be a big matter? He’ll let it go, just like this?”

It was still his old classmate, Dong Shanshan, who knew him the best. She smiled diligently, saying, “This is the calm before the storm. Zhang Ye is simmering his feelings right now. I think in this episode of the program today, someone’s definitely going to get scolded. And I think he’s going to be scolded really, really badly!”

.....

Put on makeup.

Get changed.

The costumes were all handled and chosen by Zhang Ye himself. The makeup artist gave him some opinions, but he didn’t listen. He insisted on wearing a suit and tie. No one except Zhang Ye understood what a talk show was like. In his previous world, a suit and tie were the symbol of a talk show, therefore Zhang Ye didn’t want to change and lose that in this world. He picked a color that he felt matched, and went to the front.

A field director along with several staff members were carrying a teleprompter.

“What are you doing?” Zhang Ye went over and asked.

The director said, “Oh, Director Wang said to prepare this for you.”

Zhang Ye said with a wave of his hand, “Take it away. I don’t need something like this.”

Sister Four, who was fiddling with the cameras, looked over, “Teacher Little Zhang. This is a live broadcast, so there’s a need to be prepared. You might not need it, but it’s always better to have it prepared in case you forget a line.....”

Zhang Ye was very stubborn. Smiling, he said, “Sister Four, there’s no ‘in case’. I definitely won’t forget my lines. In fact, I don’t even have a script, so what’s the teleprompter going to show?”

The director nervously said, “Ah? You don’t even have a script for a live broadcast?”

“I’ve never used a script when I did a recording or broadcast.” Zhang Ye had said this before, and he repeated it again today.

The few of them didn’t dare to make a decision. One of them ran over to Wang Xiong in order to seek his advice.

Wang Xiong frowned and looked back at Zhang Ye. Then he told the staff, “The production team is handled by Teacher Zhang Ye, just do whatever he says. There’s no need to ask me for advice!”

The staff appeared to be choked, but didn’t dare to say anything further.

Wang Xiong’s attitude towards Zhang Ye was to give him full support.

.....

20 minutes until the live broadcast.

The audience had already entered the studio. Then, Feng Guiqin and a few of the company’s leaders entered through a side door. They didn’t sit in the front row, instead sitting in one of the corners. The remaining company staff also came along to watch, even though they didn’t have any tickets. He couldn’t neglect his fellow colleagues, so he arranged for them to stand to both sides near the stage. The cameras wouldn’t be able to capture them, as it was considered a section for the internal crew to watch over the set. Their fellow colleagues who’d wanted to come and watch had all arrived. Even that person, Yang Yang from Human Resources, who’d argued with Zhang Ye before, was here.

Finally.

The audience numbered around 70 to 80 people.

The company’s staff members watching numbered around 40 to 50 people, almost equal in number to the live audience numbers.

Dong Shanshan, Wang Bei, and the others had tickets for seats, so they sat in the middle and waited. Everyone was looking forward to the broadcast, but a lot of them were worried about it.

Zhang Ye looked on as the time approached. He tested the mic on stage, “Hello, I hope everyone’s doing good. The live broadcast will be starting soon.

The situation today will be a little different. Because the picture and sound will be broadcast real time over the internet, I hope that everyone can minimize their movement and volumes. Thank you.”

Sister Four’s camera crew gestured to him—there was still 10 minutes left.

After the audience had been seated, they started discussions amongst themselves.

“Did you see what happened online?”

“Yeah, you’re talking about Lee Parkwoo, right?”

“Yes, those bunch of Koreans are so wicked!”

“Yeah, I already disliked them from before. They should’ve just quietly had their own developments to earn our money and gain our fans. But now they’re even scolding our hosts?”

“Korea has always been like this!”

“Right? They’re really strange people. Always claiming that everything belongs to them!”

“I came to the recording the previous time, and I know that Teacher Zhang didn’t use a script. Look, there’s no teleprompter today as well, right? This is a live broadcast, let’s see if that Korean still dares to shoot his mouth off this time!”

“But what if a situation arises?”

“Hai, indeed. There can be all sorts of incidents during a live broadcast. I hope Teacher Zhang can do well for our countryman, such that that Korean can’t mock us!”

Chapter 251: Zhang Ye's Continuous Saving off the Situation!

As time passed, seconds became minutes!

The live broadcast of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” was going to begin at any moment!

At this very moment, the online viewers had already gathered anticipating the live broadcast on the homepage of Weiwo WebTV. After the incident regarding Lee Parkwoo’s comments, the online viewers were divided into two camps. One of the camps supported Zhang Ye’s face slapping. They hoped to see Zhang Ye go off-script for the entire live broadcast to show those Koreans what he was capable of! Didn’t you say that it couldn’t be done? Sure! Today we will show you that it can be done! Your Korean hosts aren’t able to do it, but our Chinese hosts definitely can! The other camp was specially here for the sole purpose of discrediting Zhang Ye. They were all Lee Parkwoo or Hallyu fans!

Both sides were like fire and water!

When they saw each other in the comments section of the WebTV video, they immediately immediately engaged in a war of words!

The first comment of the day came from an original hardcore fan of Zhang Ye’s. Even if you did not know his name, you’d immediately know who he was by what he said. “I’ve been waiting for this day for a long time! Come quickly, Koreans! I haven’t cursed in such a long while! My large saber is again again again again again again again again again again again again unable to endure the thirst!”

“Big Saber Bro is so fierce!”

“I’m here too! I’m prepared for the cursing to begin!”

“Where’s the Korean? Where are the Korean’s fans? Quickly come out!”

Zhang Ye’s fans began to crazily call for blood. They could no longer wait!

Some visitors and industry insiders were more level headed. They just wanted to see if Zhang Ye could successfully do the first ever live broadcast for online television and see if he could really go off-script for the entire show, but Zhang Ye’s fans and some nationalistic youths, who did not even know Zhang Ye, were not so level headed. Some of them couldn’t even recognize who Zhang Ye was, but were just hardcore Korean haters. When they smelled blood over here, they came rushing over without a care, without bothering about who Zhang Ye was. To them it didn’t matter because whoever scolded Zhang Ye meant scolding them too!

The troll army surged!

It was a sea of ultra-nationalists!

Of course, Lee Parkwoo’s fans showed no sign of weakness either. Their numbers were quite large too and they were highly cohesive. They did not speak reason. To them, Lee Parkwoo’s words were law!

“Tell Zhang Ye to scram!”

“Zhang Ye, you stupid pig!”

“You dare to challenge our Lee Parkwoo? Fine! Let’s see who has more fans!”

“Still doing a live broadcast? You’re way too overconfident! What our Lee Parkwoo says is right. Zhang Ye is just a cheat! He can do pre-recorded shows, but he will definitely make a fool of himself during a live broadcast! Just wait and see!”

“Hehe, everyone is waiting for Zhang Ye to make a fool of himself!”

.....

Beijing.

At the same time.

Zhang Ye’s mom and dad were in front of the computer, waiting for the live broadcast to begin.

Zhang Ye's three female cousins also joined in on the fun. The two elderly people did not know how to use the computer well, so the live broadcast page was loaded by these cousins.

"Will my brother make it? Is he really going to do it off-script?"

"I'm so nervous. Our brother's memory has never been very good since he was young, right?"

"These Hallyu fans are so irritating! Hmph! They dared to curse at my bro! I will never chase after Korean celebrities in the future! Don't let me see them! I'll curse them every time I see them!"

"It's beginning, it's beginning!"

.....

On the other side of Beijing.

Rao Aimin was at home wrapping one dumpling after another.

Chenchen was staring at the computer monitor before she suddenly shouted, "The opening is playing! Aunt, come over quickly!"

Rao Aimin groaned, "What's so good about that rascal?"

"Aren't you afraid that Zhang Ye will suffer? Many people are cursing him," Chenchen said.

Rao Aimin could not help but laugh, "That kid? Suffer? It would be weird if he suffers with that mouth of his!"

.....

Meanwhile...

Hu Fei was also watching his television at home. He had already connected the WebTV's signal to his smart TV, so he could watch it from his sofa.

Xiao Lu, Dafei, Hou Ge, and Hou Di were also at home watching the live broadcast.

Some industry outsiders, who knew about the matter, came to watch the fun and help Zhang Ye argue back at those brainless Hallyu fans. Even Zhang Ye's former ex-leader and colleagues, like the radio station's Zhao Guozhou, Wang

Xiaomei, Xiaofang, Big Sis Zhou, Auntie Sun, Tian Bin & wife, etc, etc, etc all joined in after hearing about it. “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” became hotly discussed on the internet and involved arguments with Hallyu fans, so everyone became concerned about this issue. People like Xiao Lu and Xiaofang, who were both mild tempered, even put on a strong front and joined in the scolding!

.....

It was a mess outside the studio.

In the studio, there was a solidarity feeling against a common enemy. The people who applied for tickets to the show were mainly fans of Zhang Ye. They all carried the same hatred towards Koreans!

However, there was an exception in today’s group.

A foreign black man stood out from the crowd.

“Counting down!”

“Three...”

“Two...”

“One...”

“The live broadcast begins!”

After the opening clip finished airing, the music, live from the studio, began playing.

Zhang Ye took a deep breath backstage as he gazed at the dark stage. He took a sip of tea to smoothen his vocals and passed the teacup to a staff member who stood to the side. His facial expression suddenly changed as he took large steps towards the stage. He continued to do his own self introduction, “Now, let us welcome our famous host, famous poet, famous advertisement producer, famous program producer, famous writer, the country’s top Talk Show host, and the world’s top Talk Show host..... Zhang Ye!” This long introduction was said all in one breath!

He entered the stage in a grand manner.

The audience was laughing, applauding, and even whistling!

“Yi!”

“Yi!”

“Get off the stage!”

“Haha! Can you be any more shameless!?”

If it were any other celebrity or public figure introducing themselves in such a manner, they would definitely be cussed out as there would be a lot of voices of dissatisfaction, but somehow, this sort of boastful self-introduction that came out of Zhang Ye’s mouth was accepted as normal by everyone. They even thought it was very funny!

The live broadcast had already begun!

Suddenly, the black guy sitting at the front suddenly took out a piece of paper from his pocket and unfolded it, lifting it high above his head. On it a few words were written— Zhang Ye is a pig!

There was an uproar from the audience!

The faces on the company’s Leaders and colleagues from the program team immediately changed!

“Who’s that?”

“Who let him in!?”

“What is he doing!?”

“This is a live broadcast program!”

“Camera crew! Quickly move the cameras away! Stop showing the audience!”

Sister Four hurriedly commanded the filming crew!

But it was already too late as the cameras were focused on the audience as they clapped and laughed. Every viewer had seen it. It was not known if this black man was a Hallyu fan or instigated by someone, but how dare he come to make trouble at the studio!

Feng Guiqin’s expressions were ugly!

Wang Xiong’s facial expression became gloomy. He nearly went forward to

beat him up!

But Zhang Ye was very calm; furthermore, he even smiled at that man. The shot had already been broadcasted out, so he did not deliberately avoid this matter. It would in fact appear abnormal. Instead, Zhang Ye said to him, “Yo, we have a black friend here too? But you don’t look very good. You might not have many days left, so you should enjoy your life as much as possible.”

“Ha? Why?” The black guy was still holding the banner high, but he obviously looked doubtful. Not only did he understand Zhang Ye’s words, but he also knew how to speak Mandarin Chinese, just not at a good standard.

Why would I not have many days left?

Zhang Ye pretended to look like an old seer as he counted with his fingers pinched, then he pointed at him, “Because your glabella seems very dark (means you are seriously ill or can potentially have bad things happen to you in physiognomy)!”

The audience was stunned, then burst out laughing!

“Hahaha! Glabella seems dark?”

“That’s a sign of dying!”

“He’s black! How can his glabella not be dark, dude!”

“Teacher Zhang Ye is too damaging! But...I like it!”

The black man was at a loss upon seeing an unangry Zhang Ye who end up flipping the tables on him. He could only silently put the banner away and not say a word.

An incident that would have caused much trouble was easily resolved by Zhang Ye with just a few words. He did not lose out on the argument, but instead schooled the opponent into submission!

Wang Bei said happily, “Zhang Ye is indeed Zhang Ye!”

Dong Shanshan smiled. “I told you, his mouth is really wicked.”

Ah Qian was in total admiration, “Teacher Zhang’s joke segment really keeps coming without a pause! This was obviously unexpected, but Teacher Zhang’s

easily handled it with a spontaneous joke! So impressive!” In the past, Ah Qian’s ambition was to be a host, not a producer. He also wished to stand on stage, for everyone to see. This thought did not die until today. When he saw how Zhang Ye performed on stage, Ah Qian extinguished all thoughts of himself becoming a host. He no longer felt that he was just as good as other hosts. Now he understood the gulf between him and a real host!

Feng Guiqin heaved a sigh of relief.

Many other colleagues also heaved sighs of relief.

But just as Zhang Ye was about start the show properly, another accident happened!

Yang Yang, the guy from Human Resources, had been standing off to the side near the stage watching the recording. He was with many other colleagues standing there and jostling around in the crowd when he tried to take a tiny step back. In the end, he accidentally bumped into a lighting rack at the back and caused it to fall over. It smashed into the ground with a thunderous noise!

Smash!

Yang Yang was dumbfounded!

Everyone around him looked at him in shock!

Yang Yang swore, even if he had a score to settle with Zhang Ye and did not like him much, he still knew the importance of today’s occasion and would never do it on purpose!

The live audience did not see it happening, but they heard the deafening crash!

Another wave of calamity before the previous wave had settled? Everyone’s face went pale, what the heck was happening? Why was there another interruption? This was a live broadcast! How would they clear this up now?!

Wang Xiong angrily said, “What’s wrong with you!

The production team was now totally humbled, it’s over! This time, it’s really a live broadcast incident!

The audience had heard it clearly and there was clearly some commotion. As for the audience watching the live broadcast at home on their computers, they

were definitely discussing about it now!

.....

It exploded online!

Those Hallyu fans were all in great spirit!

“Hehehehe! What did I say!”

“The mess has just begun! An incident has occurred! Serves you right!”

.....

But just as many people on the sidelines were gloating about this, while many of the colleagues present were anxious, Zhang Ye remained calm. The next moment, he looked at the ceiling in horror and clasped his hands together and bowed twice, “Sorry for disturbing you. We will leave once we finish recording. We will leave immediately!”

The very next moment, the audience burst into laughter after being momentarily stunned!

“Ahahahaha!”

“Can you not be so funny!”

“Teacher Zhang! Who are you talking to!?”

“Aiyah, I can’t take it anymore!”

“Are you speaking to the Spirit of the Studio!?”

“Did we alarm the old esteemed Spirit of the Studio? Hahahaha!”

Chapter 252: Teacher Zhang begins Cursing!

Zhang Ye finished “praying” to the ceiling.

With laughter came applause!

This joke segment of Zhang Ye came too timely. He did it less than a second after the loud crash had happened. It was unlike the usual when a host would give some formal explanation when a live broadcast incident occurred. It brought out his witty side by converting the incident into a joke segment. This tickled everyone. If it wasn't for the fact that the live audience could see that there was a lighting rack that lay on the ground all smashed up, they might even have thought that this was a pre-planned situation for Zhang Ye to do the joke!

What a clever move!

It was as well done as how he handled the matter with the black guy!

.....

On the web.

Those who were waiting for Zhang Ye to make a fool of himself were stunned.

“What the heck!”

“He can even follow up on that?”

“There's such a way to save the situation?”

Those Hallyu fans who had cursed Zhang Ye were at a loss of words.

With their imposing momentum lowered, Zhang Ye's fans and the ultra-nationalists struck while the iron was hot and began cursing!

“Haha! A bunch of brainless idiots!”

“Still want to see Teacher Zhang make a fool of himself? All of you are sure funny! You guys sure are humorous!”

“What sort of person is Zhang Ye!? Zhang Ye has done so many programs! Does he not have the ability to adapt!? Or would the WebTV dare to let Teacher Zhang Ye do a live broadcast!?”

“You are underestimating Teacher Zhang Ye!”

“Teacher Zhang is domineering! That was a perfect rescue of the situation!”

“Aiyah, I can’t handle it anymore. Teacher Zhang’s ‘We will leave once we finish recording’ has stabbed me in the ribs! Hahahaha! I only knew Zhang Ye as a person last week! But why am I so in love with him now? Now no matter what Zhang Ye says, I just want to laugh the moment he opens his mouth! Are you guys in the same situation as me?”

“Me too. I feel like laughing the moment I see Zhang Ye!”

Many people from other online television stations, who were watching the live broadcast online, gave him a thumbs up in their hearts upon seeing Zhang Ye’s performance!

.....

At the studio.

Wang Xiong was simply astounded!

Colleagues of Zhang Ye and the production team for “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show could not hold back their feelings and also applauded. Zhang Ye’s rescue of the situation had turned a broadcast incident into a joke segment. Even for them professionals or WebTV hosts, they felt that they could not do the same under such an environment and pressure!

Feng Guiqin smiled with relief. She looked to Wang Xiong who was by her side, “I told you Little Zhang could do it!”

Wang Xiong never agreed with doing the live broadcast before this, now he was finally assured, “This Teacher Little Zhang, his reaction is too quick! Haha!”

An old man, who was a company leader, was standing beside them as he said in surprise, “When did our WebTV department recruit such a talent?”

Feng Guiqin smiled. “We just recruited him a short while ago, you were away on a business trip at that time.”

The old man tapped his head continuously saying, “This recruitment was very well done. To have such a good reaction speed and resilience, he’s a really talented host. There’s not many of them in the country, even if there is, they are all working for those traditional television stations. Those people have very well drawn contracts to prevent headhunters from getting to them. How much did our company pay to recruit this Little Zhang? 500,000? 1,000,000?”

Feng Guiqin laughed, “Not a single cent, this Little Zhang was fired by Beijing Television Station. He was a free agent with no contractual obligations.”

The old man was very happy, “There’s even such a good deal? Is Beijing Television Station stupid? Such a good host and they were willing to release him?”

“The internal happenings were more complicated, I do not know the details very well myself,” Feng Guiqin said, “But what I can say for sure is that we picked up a bargain.” Actually before recruiting Zhang Ye, the company’s management had already considered and analyzed the issue. They felt that Zhang Ye was a double-edged sword, he could hurt others and hurt them too. They were taking a bet on him. Looking back now, they felt that they had made the right bet!

.....

On-stage.

A few close shaves had been handled well by Zhang Ye. He also had his back full of sweat over the incidents, but only he knew about it. He could react so quickly this time because back then on “Tonight 80’s Talkshow”, a similar situation occurred, though it was a backstage incident that happened. Even if Zhang Ye did not eat the Memory Search Capsule, he would definitely remember that episode, so he borrowed the host, Wang Zijian’s words!

Whew.

Finally, he could start the live broadcast.

Zhang Ye smiled. “Thank you very much for watching today’s ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’. I am your host, Zhang Ye. Many people must have heard about today’s program. Yes, this episode is a live broadcast. So despite being such an excellent host in this industry, I also can’t help but feel nervous!” As he said that, he

adjusted his tie.

“Yi!”

“Yi!”

The audience began to boo!

Zhang Ye pretended not to hear it and carried on speaking in his jolly manner, “After the first episode’s broadcast, the response from the audience was very good. The program’s clicks steadily climbed. There were people who praised my program and there were also people who cursed my program. Someone said, Zhang Ye you are lying. You are cheating us consumers. How can you go off-script for such a long program? Impossible, absolutely impossible!”

Here it comes!

He went straight to the point!

The eyes of the audience lit up. Everyone knew the person who doubted Zhang Ye. It was Lee Parkwoo and his brainless fans!

Zhang Ye suddenly said to the camera, “What I want to say is that you guys guessed right!”

“Ah?”

“What did that mean?”

“He really isn’t doing it off-script?”

“That’s not right. I don’t see any teleprompter?”

Zhang Ye said to the camera as he pointed to an empty space before him. He began gesturing a podium-like shape, “Those watching the internet live broadcast might not understand. Actually all the live audience present can see it clearly. In front of me, yes, which is this podium. On it are all the scripts for this episode. Some netizens who are watching the live broadcast might ask. Aiyah, why can’t we see anything. Well, actually you can’t blame yourself. It’s because our Weiwo company’s technology processing is too good. I have a friend...Her name is Dong Shanshan.”

Due to the first episode, everyone could not help but laugh upon hearing Dong

Shanshan's name.

Dong Shanshan gave a look of innocence, "..."

Wang Bei roared with laughter, "He's talking about you again, Shanshan!"

Zhang Ye said, "Those friends who watched the first episode should know. She's my classmate from college. Right, she's the one who goes to the stock exchange when she misses home. Back in school, she was good in her studies, especially in computer technology. So for last episode, and this episode's live broadcast, I had pleaded for Teacher Dong Shanshan to help me do some computer processing." He pointed towards the cameras and said, "The audience in front of your screens, the reason why you can't see the podium in front of me is because Teacher Dong Shanshan has Photoshopped it away. Right, she has removed this table frame by frame!"

Photoshopped?

How do you Photoshop a live broadcast!

Everyone could tell what he meant as they burst out with laughter, "Hahaha!"

Zhang Ye said to the audience, "All the audience present can see this podium, right?"

"Right!"

"That's right! Haha!"

"Pfft! There is a podium! We can bear witness!"

The live audience also followed suit and made a commotion, everyone was enjoying the joke!

Dong Shanshan, Wang Bei, Ah Qian and the others were all amused. This was self-mocking sarcasm! This sort of joke segment was generally not very effective, but Zhang Ye employed it perfectly! Zhang Ye did not fight against those doubters but instead admitted it. But the irony was that the sarcasm worked better in retaliating to their doubts and even added a sense of joy! On the surface, Zhang Ye was self-mocking. Nonsensically explaining that there was a podium in front, he wrapped his explanation up with sarcasm. This was in fact scolding those brainless fans, whom did not believe that he had gone off-script

for the whole episode, and that they had no common sense!

.....

Viewers on the internet were all tickled with joy!

“Aiyo! Hahahaha!”

“Well said, Teacher Zhang!”

“Teacher Zhang Ye. If you say it like that, that Korean might even believe you’re for real. His intelligence is infinitely close to zero. Who knows he might even post something like ‘See, what did I tell you, Zhang Ye does use a teleprompter’, hahaha!”

“Right off the bat, he’s being sarcastic about Lee Parkwoo’s intelligence level! Teacher Zhang is indeed still that temperamental guy we know! From Beijing to Shanghai! But his temper remains the same!”

“Mighty!”

“Angrily praising Teacher Zhang Ye!”

“What did I say, what did I say! Lee Parkwoo scolded Zhang Ye? You really don’t know who he is! It’s been so many months already. Those cursing buzzwords trending on the internet, the top 5 curses still originates from Teacher Zhang Ye. No one has been able to surpass him! You still dare to scold him? You must be looking for death! With that mouth of his, even a living person can be said until he’s dead. And a dead person can be said until he lives again! Hahaha! Look, now you are being scolded already, right?”

.....

The live audience was also delighted!

Although they thought that this was the end with Zhang Ye changing topics after retorting, they realized how naive they were the next moment!

Zhang Ye stared into the camera and said, “So, that Korean friend who scolded me on Weibo, you are right. I’m really shocked. I never expected you to see through it. I was using such a method to cheat. Hai, I’m so embarrassed. I never expected there to be mountains beyond mountains, and heavens beyond heavens!”

“Hahahaha!”

“Lee Parkwoo is a dumbass!”

A member of the audience shouted very loudly, so it could be heard!

Zhang Ye quickly interrupted him, “Don’t scold people. Please don’t scold. Actually, we should talk things out nicely. This is a mistake brought about by culture and geographical distances, so it is understandable.”

The person was stunned, “Ah?”

Ah Qian also blinked, “Why is Teacher Zhang speaking up for the Korean?”

The other audience and the netizens online looked at him completely with clueless expressions. Impossible, this wasn’t Zhang Ye’s style!

Zhang Ye surprised everyone by being so magnanimous. He said earnestly, “Actually I feel quite helpless seeing people scolding Teacher Lee Parkwoo. Everyone has their bright spots. Let me ask you. Have you heard him sing? Have you watched his television dramas? Do you know him as a person?”

Everyone was momentarily speechless.

If they were honest with themselves, many of them had actually never seen Lee Parkwoo’s shows. They had only cursed him because he had garnered too much hatred with his words.

The youth who had just cursed even lowered his head. He was ashamed for his actions!

Teacher Zhang Ye was the one who was gracious! Teacher Zhang was indeed magnanimous! He actually objectively spoke up for Lee Parkwoo!

Then, they heard Zhang Ye speaking in a righteous, fair and objective manner, “So I always believe that only after you watch his television dramas, and walk into his world, will you be like me, in which you understand him as a person, you will definitely have the same thoughts as mine. That is, what the JB* is this!”

The youth, who was repenting his actions, immediately turned stunned. Then with an ‘Aiyo’, he held his belly as he laughed loudly, “Hahahaha! Aiyah! I am laughing so hard I have stitches!”

The other audiences were stunned for a second!

Then immediately with a gasp! The sound of laughter exploded!

*In China, JB is short for 鸡巴 (jī bā), or penis.

Chapter 253: Zhang Ye's Cursing Time!

"That was a godly reversal!"

"Ahahahaha!"

"Someone help me up! I can't get up! I'm laughing too hard!"

"Zhang Ye, you're too naughty! So it was waiting right at the end!"

"Aiyah, I can't take it anymore! I can't take it anymore! This joke segment is so freaking classic!"

"Where's a pen? I must jot it down! Just learning a tiny bit from Teacher Zhang will make you invincible when cursing throughout the world!"

The whole studio was enveloped in laughter. This could be the loudest decibel reaction to a joke segment since the beginning of "Zhang Ye's Talk Show".

Dong Shanshan was laughing with her face covered!

Wang Bei laughed until her high heels came off!

Ah Qian and Little Yu hammered on their own thighs with joy!

Sister Four and the other cameramen covered their mouths as they laughed. They were the closest to the audio receivers and didn't want to affect the live broadcast. They held it in, but it was too difficult as tears rolled down their eyes. They nearly fainted from laughing too much and almost affected their recording work!

What the JB* is this?

We thought that after your explanation of Lee Parkwoo, we would realize that he's a good person! In the end, Zhang Ye came up with such a line! Hahaha! What were you even thinking! This reversal transition was freaking unexpected! Teacher Zhang Ye! By doing this, you will make Lee Parkwoo cry! He'll really cry!

Some people found it irksome.

The black guy frowned, “Why are you cursing!?”

Zhang Ye blinked his eyes, “Cursing? Who cursed? I said ‘Jīn Bì (coins)’. You don’t know what JB means? Oh, maybe as a foreigner, you don’t really understand Chinese that well. In our country, JB means Jīn Bì, or coins. JIN BI is the contraction of Hanyu Pinyin. What is Jīn Bì? It’s a very precious thing. It’s very valuable and glamorous. I was praising Teacher Lee Parkwoo’s glamor. When did I swear?”

Black guy, “...*%\$##@ @ @!”

The moment the audience heard it, they were overjoyed, “Hahaha!”

Zhang Ye pointed to the other members of the audience, “If you don’t believe me, ask anyone in the audience. What does JB mean?”

All the audience of the People’s Republic of China shouted in unison, “Of course it’s Jīn Bì (coins)! Hahaha!”

“See, I’m not wrong, right?” Zhang Ye shrugged his shoulders, “This program of ours is very high end, how can we allow such profanities to appear?”

The black guy was nearly about to cry. Your sister! Do you really think I don’t know Chinese!?

The old man off-stage and the company’s Leaders were all at a loss whether to laugh or cry as they looked towards Feng Guiqin, “This new program of yours has such a high yardstick!”

Feng Guiqin had been tickled greatly for long time, she finally managed to catch her breath and said breathlessly, “It’s alright. WebTV does have a higher tolerance as long as it does not use prohibited words or cross the line too obviously.”

Wang Xiong laughed, “I finally understand now. Teacher Little Zhang’s program today is too funny! It can’t be him scolding the Koreans for the entire episode, right?”

Unfortunately, Wang Xiong had really guessed it!

.....

The laughter continued on for quite some time that lasted about 5 to 6 seconds. When it died down, Zhang Ye continued to say*, “Speaking of Koreans, I’ve actually always admired them a lot, do you know why? Because the cross-talkers in our country all have to memorize something from young — The Imperial Feast List. Us broadcast majors were also required to memorize this while in school, to practice tongue twisters with it. There is a total of 108 dishes. As a Chinese national, I feel the pain of having to memorize all of it. It consists of the Manchu Han Imperial Feast dishes and I had to memorize it.”

The audience immediately clapped!

“Show us what you can do!”

“Right, recite it!”

Dong Shanshan was stunned. They had never memorized “The Imperial Feast List” before, but a professor had suggested that they practice it, though it was not required.

The other colleagues were also unsure if Zhang Ye could do it.

His world also had “The Imperial Feast List” cross-talk segment. Because it was too traditional, the history of Manchu Han Imperial Feast did not change. So in this world, it still existed. Zhang Ye had checked it out before the broadcast.

Zhang Ye smiled. “Alright then. Let me simply say a short tongue-twisting paragraph. Well, I’ll treat you...steamed lamb, steamed bear’s paw, steamed deer’s tail, roast duck...” Zhang Ye was initially saying it very slowly, but as he spoke, his speed increased, with not a break in between, “Roast hen, roast green goose, stewed pig, stewed chicken, preserved ham, preserved egg, dried ham, sausage, assorted vegetables, smoked chicken with tripe, steamed pig with eight treasures, ducked brewed with glutinous rice, pot-braised pheasant, pot-braised quail, simmered chicken giblets in brine, simmered goose in brine...etc!” With this foundational skill showcased, it was not funny, but in fact, quite stunning. This tongue-twisting paragraph was already much better than many domestic cross-talk actors!

“Alright!”

“Well said!”

Everyone applauded loudly!

Wang Bei and the other hosts also applauded with praise. To be fair, just looking at the basics, they could not compare to Zhang Ye. No wonder his oratorical skills were so good. His foundation was already so solid. Just from this, it could be said that Zhang Ye did not save any effort when learning, he had taken it all in!

But in truth, all of this was credited to the Memory Search Capsules. Zhang Ye had, in recent days, spent all of the Reputation he had acquired on Memory Search Capsules. His memory was full of information now and his basic knowledge was ever increasing. Saying that he could recite it in a cross-talk manner was an understatement. He could even read it backwards without any problem. This was because he was different from those who memorized it traditionally since he could retrieve everything directly from his memory.

With a slight deviation, he had shown his skills in a simple way. Zhang Ye continued with his jokes, “Did you fall asleep while listening to that? I needed to memorize 108 dishes, so I particularly admire my Korean peers. If I were them, it would be so awesome. It would be so much more simpler.” He cleared his throat and said, “I’ll treat you...Kimchi-seumida, Kimchi-seumida, Kimchi-seumida, Kimchi-seumida, Kimchi-seumida...as well as Kimchi-seumida*!”

“Hahaha!”

“Aiyah, that’s too funny!”

“They only have Kimchi!”

The audience burst out into laughter!

Zhang Ye’s continued on, saying helplessly, “But later on, I realized I was wrong. I personally know a Korean cross-talker and found out that their ‘The Imperial Feast List’ was longer than ours. The types of dishes are much more rich in variety.” Seeing that everyone was confused, Zhang Ye said, “First of all, their first 108 dishes are the same as ours!”

Wang Bei, who was just taking a sip of water, had spit it all out!

Ah Qian, who was sitting in front of Wang Bei was sprayed with water on his shoes, but he didn’t care. He was still thumping his thighs and laughing!

The Chinese characters were yours?

The printing press was also yours?

The Dragon Boat Festival also belonged to you?

When Zhang Ye said that their 108 dishes were the same as theirs, it revealed just how despicable the Koreans were in the eyes of the Chinese!

“After memorizing all of these, after the salted duck and chicken, they still needed to add on one more,” Zhang Ye raised his hands and gestured, “From the Changbai mountains to the Bohai Bay that spans 3000 Li, stretching over 5000 years of history, the specialized traditional delicacy of the Republic of Korea — Kimchi-seumida!”

“Hahahaha!”

Bba Bba Bba!

Applause rang out in the midst of laughter!

After Zhang Ye finished one segment, the next one came, “Actually about the names for food, everywhere is different. For example, wonton. In the North, it’s called wonton, while in the Sichuan, it’s called ‘dragon reading hands’, right?” Looking at the audience off-stage, “And in Korea, do you know what it’s called?”

“In Korea?”

“No idea.”

“What’s it called?”

The audience asked curiously.

Zhang Ye raised his hands and made the same exaggerated hand gesture as before, “From the Changbai mountains to the Bohai Bay that spans 3000 Li, stretching over 5000 years of history, the specialized traditional delicacy of the Republic of Korea—Wonton-seumida!”

Just as Zhang Ye said “From the Changbai mountains”, the audience already knew what he was going to say and began to laugh hysterically!

“Aiyah!

“Hahahaha!”

“Let me rest! I can’t laugh any more!”

The audience was in stitches. Those who were easy to humor were already clutching their bellies and laughing!

However, Zhang Ye did not plan on giving the audience a chance to catch their breaths. As a few members of the audience were wiping their tears, the next joke segment came, “When talking about Korea’s delicacies, actually I need to improve everyone’s knowledge,” said Zhang Ye as he noticed someone was about to laugh, “It’s not a joke. It’s really knowledge.”

The audience quietened down to listen.

Some blinked while others were curious.

Zhang Ye looked at everyone and said, “Truthfully, I cannot understand why Koreans like Kimchi so much. Although I like it too. Right? It has a crisp taste that’s sour, sweet, and spicy. Yes, and most importantly, it’s cheap. It’s just such a food, but they can never leave it out. No matter what they eat, they will eat it with Kimchi. So a word of advice to the people sitting in front of your screens and the audience present, if you don’t need to eat Kimchi, try not to eat it. As salted food is carcinogenic!”

Carcinogenic?

Indeed, this was backed by scientific facts!

The audience believed that he was expanding their knowledge, so they listened attentively.

However, Zhang Ye next said, “Well, this is also why when you watch Korean dramas, the moment the couple gets together...after some time, one of them will fall terminally ill!*

The moment he said that, the audience went into a daze before laughing while clutching their stomachs!

Zhang Ye then pointed to the camera as he stared, “You think it’s because the plot was cliché? No! It’s because of the Kimchi!”

The moment the last phrase, “it’s because of the Kimchi” was said, the audience burst out into laughter!

Many people were laughing and cheering at the same time! Applause filled the entire recording studio!

.....

At this moment.

Those watching the live broadcast on the internet were also laughing!

“Teacher Zhang Ye is too awesome!”

“I always knew Teacher Zhang was awesome! I never expected him to be so awesome!”

“Hahahaha! What a great feeling! What a good scolding! Today’s Zhang Ye seems to be imbued with the power of gods!”

“So fun! Actually I came here just to scold those braindead fans, and didn’t know Zhang Ye as a person, but holy f**k! Today, I have realize my ignorance! When did our country have such a coquettish celebrity? And such a nice, relieving and humorous entertainment program? Zhang Ye! I will be your fan from now on!”

“Aiyah, this is f**king hilarious!”

“Is this a concert to screw over Korea?”

“He scolded the Koreans from beginning to end? It feels so good!”

“I’ve never felt as good as I have today!”

“Zhang Ye’s mouth is really f**king defying the heavens. Look and see. Previously, many Korean exchange students and those braindead fans were scolding, now they have all been sent packing by Teacher Zhang Ye’s scolding!”

“How many things exist in Teacher Zhang’s head? Didn’t he just have conflict with Lee Parkwoo earlier today? Then, he had his live broadcast at night. There’s no way he could come up with a script so quickly, and those classic joke segments were followed one after another like they cost nothing! Teacher Zhang Ye’s literary talent is peerless!”

Literary talent?

Did he need any bullsh*t literary talent!?

Joke segments that ridiculed Koreans? Zhang Ye could go on for three days and nights without any repetition!

In Zhang Ye's world, be it cross talk, or talk show programs, there were only four things to do.

1. Ridicule Korea.
2. Ridicule Japan.
3. Ridicule America.
- 4... Carry on ridiculing Korea!

*In China, JB is short for 鸡巴 (jī bā), or penis.

*The segment about the 108 dishes to Kimchi causing death in Korean dramas is taken ad verbatim from the [24 Jun 2012 episode](#) (from 02:56 to 06:10) of Wang Zijian's "Tonight 80's Talk Show".

*Seumida (습니다) is an honorific way of ending Korean sentences, so it is often heard in Korean conversations.

*A popular trope in Korean drama is a sudden terminal illness contracted by one of the main leads. For other common Korean drama troupes, check out this [guide](#).

Chapter 254: Scolding till the Skies Go Dark!

The atmosphere in the studio was getting high!

The viewers who were watching from home were all giving their kudos!

Zhang Ye's continual waves of joke segments had brought everyone's mood to the peak. Whether they watched the broadcast live or watched the recording live, the audience was filled with joy and appeased. Except for a minority, most people in the country did not have good impressions or even bad impressions of the Koreans. Their nation was too loud. One moment, this was theirs. Another moment, that was theirs too. They had brought up so many issues, everyone already hated them to the bone. In the past, the domestic media only protested a little here and there. At most, the domestic variety programs poked a little fun at these matters and nothing more. It didn't make much impact, until today. The situation had completely changed!

This country now had a program called "Zhang Ye's Talk Show"!

This country now had a guy who dared to openly speak and his name was Zhang Ye!

Zhang Ye, who was neither afraid of the heavens or the earth, had started scolding the Koreans from the beginning to almost the end of this episode!

Di Di.

Below the stage, Feng Guiqin had received a message from the company's technical department. She lowered her head to read and broke into a smile.

"What's the matter, Director Feng?" Wang Xiong asked.

Feng Guiqin waved her cellphone, "The online viewer data has been calculated."

The old man on the other side asked, "How many are there?"

Feng Guiqin smiled. “There’s currently a total of 2.9 million people watching online and this figure is steadily increasing!”

When the old man and Wang Xiong both heard this, as did some colleagues who were seated around them, everyone secretly took a deep, breath of cool air!

Thinking back about the first episode of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”, it had only hit 2 million some time after the broadcast had ended, but for this live broadcast, just the online viewers right now numbered close to 3 million? Are you f**king headed for 10 million views for this episode? What would 10 million views mean? No one even dared to think about it! This new program by Teacher Zhang Ye wasn’t just the highest viewed program for its debut episode on WebTV, it was also the first live broadcasted program! With these 2 accolades, it was even going for the record of highest average views for a WebTV program episode?

“How much more do we have left?” Feng Guiqin asked.

Wang Xiong looked at his watch, “There’s still about 6-7 minutes left.”

Feng Guiqin nodded, “There shouldn’t be a problem crossing the 3 million viewer mark. After 24 hours, this episode should easily hit 10 million views!”

.....

On Weibo.

The program had been broadcasted for over 20 minutes now. It was spreading like wildfire online. Perhaps some people who didn’t pay attention to or didn’t like entertainment programs would never actively try to understand, but being the provoker of this incident — Lee Parkwoo could not possibly not know. Even if he didn’t pay attention, even if he did not know Chinese, his manager or translator would definitely tell him!

Then, Lee Parkwoo’s Weibo after being silent for a long time finally posted, “With regards to the abuse and personal attacks, it has caused me much emotional distress. I retain the right to take legal action!” Even a fool could see that this post was directed towards Zhang Ye.

His brainless fans responded because of this!

“Zhang Ye, go to hell!”

“How dare you anger our Lee Parkwoo!”

“Zhang Ye! You dumb pig! You will receive retribution!”

“Right! Pursue legal responsibilities! Sue him in court!”

“The words that Zhang Ye says is so irksome! It makes me want to grit my teeth with hate! How can he say that about our Lee Parkwoo!? What’s wrong with Korea? Korea is better than the People’s Republic of China in every way!”

Another wave of people began to fight back.

“A bunch of braindead fans!”

“There’s no way of communicating with them!”

“Korea is good? Then go to Korea! Hurry and get lost!”

“Do you people even know who was the first one to instigate matters? It was the Lee Parkwoo you worship and respect! He was the first to slander Zhang Ye by saying that he could not possibly go off script for such a long time, that he was faking it and had a teleprompter, but what were the facts? As everyone has seen in this live broadcast of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”, the number of cameras were clear for all to see. There was no teleprompter, nor did Zhang Ye wear an earpiece. It was also impossible he had someone hold up a script for him. In the 20 minutes, he depended on his own strength and experience to go fully unscripted for the whole show! Yes, there might not be many hosts with such strengths, but Zhang Ye is one of them. Zhang Ye could do this! So what are you all blabbering on for? Want to sue Zhang Ye? Don’t make me laugh. If there’s any suing to be done, it should be Zhang Ye suing Lee Parkwoo for slander and personal attacks instead! It shouldn’t be Lee Parkwoo, the guilty party, doing the suing!”

.....

Center stage.

Zhang Ye was enjoying everyone’s cheering and applause.

The audience was all looking forward to more with their eyes wide open. Although they knew the program was almost at an end, they still hoped that Zhang Ye would say a little more, scold a little more. They truly got a kick out of it

just by watching !

But it seemed like Zhang Ye did not have anymore to say, “With the newfound knowledge about Kimchi, let’s move on to other matters.”

The audience clearly looked disappointed. Talk about other things? Not talking about the Koreans anymore?

In the end, Zhang Ye said, “Forget it, talking about other things is not as interesting. Let’s continue talking about Korea!”

“Hahahaha!” The audience members whistled, “Yi! !”

Sure enough, Zhang Ye did not disappoint. After so many cursing segments, he still did not hold back. This was the outcome of offending Zhang Ye. This fellow was too vengeful and didn’t like to lose. You scold me once? Then I will scold you ten times!

Only for Zhang Ye to continue hooting, “Recently, I was met with an incident. As all of you know, I am now famous. Many people are now paying attention to me.” his eyes looking cocky.

“Yi!”

“Haha!”

Zhang Ye spread opened his arms, “But two days ago, I heard news from Korea that said: ‘Zhang Ye ah, you are also a Korean-seumida’. I was so shocked at that moment, did you know? That can’t be, me? Korean? With more than six degrees of separation, I’m a pure bred Beijing-er. Then they said, ‘Zhang Ye, you really are a Korean-seumida.’ I asked why and they said ‘Look online, didn’t many people call you a — Poker Faced (冷面)* Comedian!’”

The audience was confused for a moment, then they were struck by realization!

“Hahahaha!”

“Aiyo, damn it!”

“Poker Faced Comedian? Isn’t that Korean Cold Noodles (冷面) Comedian if put together!?”

.....

Online, a lot of brainless fans began to flood with their posts!

“Ban Zhang Ye!”

“He’s too wicked!”

“His mouth is full of nonsense!”

“When did Korea offend you? Must you mock them so ruthlessly?”

.....

At this moment, the field director gestured to Zhang Ye that there were only 5 minutes remaining in this broadcast.

Zhang Ye looked at the audience. He hadn’t bothered about the time because he had already taken into account of his timing, “When this episode is over, mark my words, there will surely be waves of cursing at me from the Korean celebrities and fans. Hai, to be honest, it’s not very acceptable of me to say all that. This time, I’ve offended too many people, but..... I said what I said!” Zhang Ye looked into the camera and pointed and said, “If you aren’t happy, bite me!”

“Hahaha!”

“Strongly supporting!”

“That’s right! Come bite us!”

The audience once again burst out laughing, grinning from ear to ear!

Zhang Ye’s earlier expression was really asking for a beating. It did not have a hint of class that a famous host or literary person should have, but the Zhang Ye of this moment was the cutest to many members of the audience. This was truly what you’d call gutsy talking! I’m scolding you! You aren’t convinced? Come bite me then!

The company leaders and colleagues below the stage could not help but laugh. They really couldn’t do anything about him!

After trash talking the Koreans, Zhang Ye still cheerfully finished off, “Aiya, I’ve spoken too much already. Yea, actually it’s not good to keep saying things like this about Korea. It’s really not good. I want to thank the Republic of Korea here,

not hypocritically or faking it. I really want to thank them for contributing once and again to China's entertainment industry. It was you all that spared no effort to advance China's Talk Show! To be honest, if there wasn't such a wonderful country, my Talk Show program might have ended at 2 episodes. There was nothing else to talk about and when I was worried till my hair dropped, I came across the world map and saw the Republic of Korea. In a flash of genius, I felt....the lowest estimates of episodes I could record would be around 180 episodes! I even had the feeling that as long as the Republic of Korea exists, China's Talk Shows would definitely make rapid progress. We would never run out of joke segments to perform! So here, I will bow to the camera for you all. I represent China's entertainment industry in expressing our gratitude towards you! You are the real unsung heroes!" saying that, Zhang Ye bowed deeply to the camera!

The audience could no longer handle it. They were laughing like they had gone mad!

"Aiyahahahahha!"

"I can't breathe!"

"Teacher Zhang's mouth is too damaging!"

"After scolding them, he even thanked them? You sure are bad!"

Today's joke segments were a little messy. The joke segments came from many different Talk Shows. Some came from cross-talks, others came from the masses wisdom of the internet in his previous world and some were even original creations of Zhang Ye's. He was, after all, a broadcast major, so how could he not have a few tricks up his sleeves?

Time was almost up.

Zhang Ye clasped his hands together and interrupted the laughter. He smiled and said, "Today's program will end here. Finally, let's summarize the topics of today. Koreans invented the printing press? Koreans invented Chinese characters? Koreans invented the Dragon Boat Festival? Some people might not be able to help but ask, then what did the Chinese invent?" Zhang Ye straightened his suit, saying, "Let me tell all of you, the Chinese invented the Koreans!*"

There was not one vulgarity in this statement!

But it was the most ruthless scolding he had said today!

The moment the audience heard it, they felt an impulse surge through them as they stood up and applauded, “Nice! Well said! Hahaha!”

“Invented Koreans?”

“That’s right, they were originally ‘invented’ by us!”

“Teacher Zhang’s cursing without vulgarities sure has f**king lots of patterns!”

“Aiyah, this is the first time I’m slightly pitying those bunch of Koreans! They encountered a damn hooligan like Teacher Zhang Ye! They can only end up being cursed!

“Too awesome!”

“Giving Zhang Ye 100,000 Likes!”

“Teacher Zhang! You are our role model!”

“I seem to have seen it! The Koreans that were watching our program are probably crying out of anger! Hahaha! I express my heartfelt condolences!”

*Poker/Cold Faced (冷面) can also mean Cold Noodles. Face and noodles share the same Chinese character (面). There is a unique Korean dish, called [naengmyeon](#) (냉면), which means Cold Noodles in Korean.

**This is implying that [Koreans](#) are descendants of the ancient Chinese race, but research suggests this is not true. They are more closely related to Mongolians, Manchurians and the Japanese. They are genetically distinct from Southern Chinese.

Chapter 255: Great Victory!

The live broadcast ended.

Just like the previous episode, the audience gave a standing ovation, with no one leaving.

Zhang Ye already knew how to handle the situation, so he walked off stage, “Thank you everyone, but the program has ended. If there’s still a chance to in the future, we would like to invite you again. It has been tough on you, our staff members still need to clean up the set for the next program’s recording. Please go home and rest. Those who are interested, you can follow me on Weibo or Tieba, and we can have some interaction online.”

A female member of the audience cheered, “Teacher Zhang, I love you!”

A male member of the audience also shouted, “Haha, Teacher Zhang, I love you too!”

Another girl added, “You did such a great job! You are No.1 in the entertainment industry! You are the most unique celebrity domestically and in the entire world! Any other celebrities can be replaced, any celebrity, but it can’t do without you! Teacher Zhang Ye! No one can replace you! You spoke in such a godly fashion today!”

“Zhang Ye! Great scolding today!” a middle aged man yelled out.

Zhang Ye held his hands together and thanked them, “Thank you, thank you everyone.”

The audience started to leave the recording studio one by one. As usual, those that wanted autographs and photos were spared five minutes by Zhang Ye.

When the audience had finally cleared out, their faces had expressions that seemed to say they wanted more. Although they did not know each other, their

relationships grew closer because of the program. They all left in groups of two or three, laughing and discussing the joke segments performed today!

.....

The doors closed.

It was all their own people now.

Only then did Zhang Ye collapse into a seat in the audience stands. He leaned back and closed his eyes, motionless. Today's episode was much more intense than the previous one. It sapped all of his physical and mental strength. Because it was a live broadcast, there was no time to rest and no second chances. Every joke segment was a one time deal and he had to ensure that they were delivered with the biggest impact. There was one or two joke segments that he did not deliver well enough to achieve the maximum effect, but overall it wasn't too bad. It couldn't be considered a flaw since they were still within his acceptable standards. After all, a program could never be perfect, it was the same for anyone. At best, it would slowly evolve towards perfection and be done better.

"Teacher Zhang, water!" A female staff member rushed over and hurriedly gave him a bottle of mineral water. She even unscrewed the cap for him, "Are you alright?"

"I'm fine." Zhang Ye took it from her and drank.

"Here's a warm towel." Another intern came over. He was a college senior and had been assigned to Zhang Ye's team the moment he entered the company.

"Thank you." Zhang Ye used it to wipe his sweat off his face.

Feng Guiqin was seen walking to the side of the stage, as she said, "You guys, hold up."

Several company employees had watched the free live broadcast and were about to leave. When they were stopped by the Leader, they all turned their heads.

Feng Guiqin said with a deadpan expression, "Right at the beginning of the live broadcast, who knocked over the lamp?"

No one spoke. This sort of matter would offend people, but still, a few people

looked towards Yang Yang.

Yang Yang knew he could not keep it under the wraps as he bit the bullet and stepped forward, “Director Feng, I accidentally bumped into it. I was really careless!”

Feng Guiqin looked at him, “What’s your name?”

“I...am Yang Yang.” Yang Yang said with a despondent face.

Feng Guiqin nodded, “Follow me.”

Yang Yang knew that the leader was going to criticize him. It wasn’t likely that he would be fired, but a deduction of his bonus or wages was guaranteed. He was depressed. This was such a mishap, but complaints being complaints, Yang Yang knew that he was in fact very lucky today. When the lighting rack fell over and made that thunderous noise, it was already a broadcasting incident. If it were any other host, they would probably not have been able to handle it. So it was really lucky that Zhang Ye was the host. Not only did he smoothen over the incident, he even turned it into a joke segment. His wits stunned everyone. If not for Zhang Ye’s quick reaction, Yang Yang knew that he would definitely lose his job today!

A few people had already left.

Wang Xiong stayed behind for a moment and looked towards Zhang Ye, who was taking a break. He smiled. “Teacher Little Zhang, well done. I have nothing else to say about today’s episode.” Saying that, he reached out his hand and gave him a big thumbs up. Zhang Ye was about to stand up, but Wang Xiong waved him back down, “You rest, I’ll be on my way. You should go home early and have a good rest. There’s still an episode to record tomorrow, but it won’t be a live broadcast. Let’s do the recording tomorrow afternoon.

Zhang Ye obeyed the order.

Wang Xiong also left.

The upper management leaders departed. Some of his colleagues, who were there also left, but a few familiar people who were on good terms with Zhang Ye all went over to congratulate him.

Dong Shanshan imposed herself, “Why was I mentioned again this episode?”

Zhang Ye laughed, “No other way. Just mentioning your name tickles the audience.”

Dong Shanshan chuckled “Right, so this time I didn’t go to the stock exchange, but became a computer expert? What role do you want me to be in the next episode? Supergirl?”

The colleagues laughed.

Sister Four came over and pointed to her eyes, “Little Zhang, take a look.”

“What’s wrong, Sister Four? You cried? Your eyes are red.” Zhang Ye acknowledged.

Sister Four slapped him on the shoulder, “I teared up from all the laughter! I laughed till my tears kept flowing! This episode was too great! It was better than the previous episode!”

“That’s right, that’s right!”

“Indeed, I also think this episode will break records again!”

“Right. I initially felt that the second episode would not be as well-received as the first. After all, a new program’s pilot episode usually debuts well and then slip in ratings, but within the first ten minutes of the live broadcast, I knew I was wrong! This episode definitely won’t lose out to the first!”

“Haha, but the content was so brazen. Teacher Little Zhang, are you sure it won’t be a problem?”

“I guess there will be many people scolding Teacher Zhang after today. Not to mention those professionals, I’m sure they will be part of the scolders! This is going to be tough!”

“Hei, Teacher Zhang Ye is afraid of their scolding? You sure are funny!”

.....

That night.

“Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” had finished airing, and it caused a stir on the internet!

A lot of people had watched the live broadcast online, while some people

waited till after the show ended to watch it. An hour after the program ended, the discussions about this episode's topic of Koreans had reached a high point!

"F**k! I've opened my eyes today!"

"What a great 'the Chinese invented the Koreans'! Wahahaha!"

"Zhang Ye — I didn't know who you were at all, but this name is now etched in my memory forever!"

"Hahaha! Lee Parkwoo's Weibo is silent! He's been cussed to great effect by Zhang Ye! He didn't even dare to fart! Teacher Zhang Ye went full force today!"

"Speaking of scolding, I don't think that anyone can compare to Teacher Zhang Ye domestically! If he says claims to be second, then no one would dare claim they are first! No matter if it's locals or foreigners, whether they are celebrities or commoners. In the field of scolding and insulting, I've never witnessed anyone better at it than Teacher Zhang Ye! I bought a watch last year? A picture hung above the bed wards off pregnancy? All of these came from the great mind of Teacher Zhang Ye!"

Another person posted in a discussion forum.

"I will not concede to anyone in the future! Unless that person is Teacher Zhang Ye! He's too damn good at it! He's only a person, with a mouth, with a simple solo performance, but yet he played with words to their maximum effect! His skills could already be considered as god level!"

"Support Zhang Ye!"

"It was time for someone to give the Koreans a scolding!"

"Today, I got too excited! I've decided to join Zhang Ye's fan club. This is the Tieba, right? From now on, any problem of Teacher Zhang Ye is a problem of mine! I will go to wherever he points!"

"Ditto! Let's come together and scold the Koreans!"

"Teacher Zhang is the light that guides us nationalistic youths! Count me in, I wanna join too. I've finally found a fucking organization that I can peacefully belong to! Hahahaha!"

More and more people became interested in the topic!

With Zhang Ye's lead, a wave of Anti-Korean sentiment began rising online!

The fanatic Korean fans also started to scold, but at this moment, after the broadcast of "Zhang Ye's Talk Show" had ended, the pride of the nationalistic youths and Zhang Ye's fans were at their best. They had the numbers, so why would they be afraid? A spit from each person and they would drown. In the end, the people who were scolding Zhang Ye barely made a ripple before they were fully suppressed!

Time went by as the discussions went on.

It was already near midnight.

A lot of people were actually wondering, normally when a situation like this occurred, some professionals or scholars would usually jump in or some celebrities would stand up to say something? It was always the same thing they would say. Things like how everyone should not be too xenophobic, or how Korea is a nation with its own good points, or how nationalistic youths are undesirable, or how the relationship between the two nations should not be severed, or how Korean products or societal views were more advanced than them as Chinese and should be learnt from, etc, etc, etc.

But no one said a thing!

Today, not a single person said a thing!

There were many nationalistic youths and people who disliked the Koreans, but there were also many people who liked Korean culture. So how could it be that no professionals or celebrities stood up to denounce Zhang Ye?

What was going on?

It didn't seem normal!

Many of Zhang Ye's hardcore fans did not go to sleep because they were waiting for this sort of person to come forward. They had already discussed that the moment these denouncers appeared and criticized Zhang Ye with the "moral cudgel" or say that he should have been more careful with his words or that he should not have scolded others on a program, they would all be scolded by his hardcore fans! Up to now, not a single person of significance came forward to say anything!

In the end, the Big Saber Bro, who never spoke but only cared about online beef, posted something on Zhang Ye's Tieba fanclub.

Addressing everyone's wondering and suspicions, Big Saber Bro said, "Don't wait anymore. The people of authority will not be saying anything, at least not today. Maybe it's not that they can't, but probably more because they are afraid. All Lee Parkwoo did was question Teacher Zhang Ye on Weibo, but look what happened? In the end? Teacher Zhang Ye used a whole episode! A full 30 minutes to scold Lee Parkwoo and the Koreans! What sort of spirit and style is this? Those famous people aren't stupid either. Right now, who doesn't know that Teacher Zhang Ye is not one to be trifled with? Who doesn't know that his temper can be a little bitchy! To step up now and scold Zhang Ye for being a nationalistic youth? To say that he does not hold his conduct up properly as a public figure? Hur Hur, then they would become the subject for tomorrow's new episode of "Zhang Ye's Talk Show"! They definitely have to weigh the consequences! If they end up offending Teacher Zhang Ye, with him using a full episode of program to scold the Koreans today, they might even end up being scolded by him for a full episode! This is a program that belongs to Teacher Zhang Ye himself. It will be so if he says so, even if he scolded them, they won't be able to argue back!"

"Big Saber Bro's godly analysis!"

"That's right! I understand now too!"

"Hahaha! Teacher Zhang Ye is notorious once again!"

"Aiyo, damn! In the past, when I was still idolizing Teacher Zhang Ye, he was still an uninfluential radio host. Who would have thought that he would become so great in just a matter of months?! If anyone thought of scolding Teacher Zhang Ye, they would still have to weigh the consequences! So impressive!"

"That's right, Teacher Zhang is really an awesome man!"

"Jealousy, envy, why did my parents not give birth to me with a mouth like Teacher Zhang Ye's!"

"Right, right, Teacher Zhang really just uses that mouth of his and bulldozes his way forward! He's such a legend!"

“After today, there will surely be many more fans of Zhang Ye. At least I, as a nationalistic youth, love him to death! I have never idolized celebrities, so I’m wondering why I like Zhang Ye so much. I’ve finally understood that it’s because Teacher Little Zhang Ye is so different from other celebrities. He does not care for those disgusting self-interest, he does not care for those words and views of the so-called professionals or elders. He just keeps saying what he wants to say and believes, even though it might not be correct, even if the words he uses are not pretty, but each and every word comes from his sincerity. He does not act classy or cover his commoner way of thinking. If it deserves to be scolded, he’ll scold. If it’s worthy to be angry over, then he will rage — Isn’t this the profile of us commoners?”

“The previous poster said it well!”

“Correct, seeing Teacher Zhang Ye is like seeing myself!”

“Correct, Teacher Zhang Ye represents the voice of us commoners!”

“When you said that, it dawned on me. Usually when we watch TV at home, don’t we also scold this and that and get edgy when we see injustice? But when we are in public, we put on a face as if we were cultured people, not even daring to speak vulgarities. That’s not who we are... Teacher Zhang Ye represents what we really are deep down! What we want to say, but do not dare to say or do not have the ability to say, Zhang Ye will say it for us! The things we want to do but do not dare to do or have the ability to do, Zhang Ye will do it for us! Even when he meets an obstacle or gets banned, has Teacher Zhang Ye ever changed? No! He’s still that hooligan that carries that commendatory nature! Still the Zhang Ye who dares to beat up, to kill, to say, and to do! Yes, that is why we like him!”

“This kind of celebrity is rare these days!”

“It’s not rare, but this sort of celebrity who does not play his cards logically....has never existed before he came along!”

Chapter 256: A change in schedules for the Talk Show!

Sunday.

“Do we still have tickets?”

“What tickets?”

“Tickets to ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’, what else?”

“Hur Hur, I still have an internal ticket here.”

“Aiyo, give it to me Old Xu. I will treat you to dinner!”

“I can’t give this to you. I have a relative who wants to watch Zhang Ye’s program no matter what. This ticket is for him, so you better continue asking around.”

“I did, but there’s no more!”

“True, it’s really hard to get your hands on a ticket to Zhang Ye’s show now!”

“Eh, that’s true. We don’t even have internal tickets. How can I answer to my friend now? She especially likes Teacher Zhang Ye. Once she remembered that I work here, she specially requested me to get tickets for her. Oh, forget it. If there’s really no choice, I will bring her in via the staff passage backstage.”

.....

Afternoon.

Zhang Ye had just finished his lunch in the canteen.

The director from his program team found him, “Teacher Zhang, the latest figures are in. Our second episode of the Talk Show now stands at 9 million views. It’s estimated that after your afternoon recording, it would surely cross

10 million views.

The first episode of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” had already broken the records for 1st day views of an online television station broadcast. It didn’t manage to cross the 10 million view record for a single episode, because the other online television stations also had their own programs, which had more views than Zhang Ye’s single episode views. The number of programs that had crossed 10 million views for a single episode could be counted with both hands. There were not many, so his record was already one to be proud of. Besides, “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” only had two episodes. It had just begun, so there was still plenty of time for it to break records in the future. As long as the program’s quality was maintained, then the chance of it happening was highly likely. It was all a matter of time.

Zhang Ye was also very please, “Great, what time do we record this afternoon?”

“It’s estimated to be at 1:30PM, but we will arrange it according to your schedule.” the director said.

Zhang Ye nodded, “Then let’s do it at 1:30PM. We shouldn’t keep the audience waiting.”

The director acknowledged. As the program reviews became more and more positive, so did his mood, “Sure.”

.....

It was time.

The new episode’s recording was beginning.

Being the program team in-charge, Zhang Ye did not try to skip on his duties. He did not rest, but instead came to the set early to give instructions. He told the staff, “Everyone might have to work a little bit harder today, I’m planning to record 2 more episodes today, a total of 3 episodes altogether. 1 episode is for the broadcast tonight, the other 2 in preparation for next Saturday and Sunday, so that we aren’t in a rut for time later on. Let’s make use of today’s appointed time and record them too.”

“Alright.”

“We will follow whatever you say.”

“Then I will inform the audience!”

Although this was what he said, Zhang Ye’s plans for recording another 2 episodes had another objective. When the recording ended, he would go and look for the leader to discuss about it.

20 minutes later, the audience entered the studio.

The atmosphere at the studio today was a little different. When the audience came inside and saw Zhang Ye giving out instructions, they began calling out for him. Some of the girls were even shouting his name and some youths did not care about the staff, who were attempting to blockade them and went up to ask Zhang Ye for an autograph. They looked very excited.

When the staff member was about to chide them, Zhang Ye stopped them from saying anything. Instead, he smiled and obliged by giving them the autographs, without putting on any airs.

When the audience off stage saw this, another 6-7 people also rushed up.

The staff gave wry smiles, but Zhang Ye didn’t say anything. Whoever came forward, he obliged by signing. He was not bothered by any delays to the recording, because in his heart, his fans and his audience always came first.

After a long time, the recording started.

Zhang Ye did his usual introduction as he heard the thunderous applause outside. He smiled and greeted, “Hello everyone, and welcome to today’s ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’. I am your host, Zhang Ye. Before the program begins, let me read a few more letters sent in by our audience.” He took out a card and read from it, “Zhang Ye, I want to have your baby!” Zhang Ye was stunned, but without a pause, dismissively threw the card aside, “Huh!”

Audience, “Yi!”

Afterwards, Zhang Ye seemed to pause for a few seconds, then laughed heartily, “Aiya, are the audience members so passionate these days, am I really that hot? This program is watched by so many people?”

The audience once again raptured, “Yi!!”

Zhang Ye cockily said, “Actually, I’ve researched a little the past few days. I’ve walked among the grassroots and took the public transport with everyone else. The other day, I saw 2 pretty young ladies and went up to them to ask ‘Hey, did you watch Zhang Ye’s Talk Show?’, but their faces turned contemptuous like they were thinking ‘What the heck are you talking about? We don’t even know what that is’, ‘We like watching Korean dramas, Oppa!” Zhang Ye sighed, “Alright, then I turned to the other side, where there were a few rather pretty female, white collared workers, ‘Hey, do you all watch online television? Which host do you like most?’ They looked at me and then suddenly got excited and said, ‘Of course it’s....Dong Shanshan, Online Talents is such a good show! She’s very pretty too. She’s what we aim to become!” Zhang Ye was once again speechless, but continued on, “My heart was blowing a cold wind inside. So next, I went to a snack shop in Chengdu and there I saw it! A few big sized men were looking at their cellphones watching ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’. My spirit was jolted and I went up to them asking if they liked watching Talk Shows? One of them answered loudly ‘But of course, Zhang Ye’s too funny! The program is too good! I’m a hardcore fan!”

The audience did not understand what Zhang Ye’s long story was for and only listened.

In the next moment, Zhang Ye’s burden was revealed. He said with a depressed face, clutching his forehead and giving a long sigh saying, “Hai, so...these are the kinds of people....who want to have my babies!”

Upon hearing this, the audience burst out laughing, “Hahahahaha!”

“Many people are envious of me, but there is no such need. Everyone’s life is filled with excitement. For example, before I became famous, my life was already extremely exciting. According to my incomplete statistics, I have accumulated 63 draws at the lottery, winning a total of 12,600,000 Renminbi (US\$1,900,000), as well as winning 39 high-end phones, 9 computers, 17 sedan cars, as well as 38 subpoenas, accepted into college 27 times. In addition, my girlfriend had been kidnapped five times, my daughter had been sold three times, while my son had been caught by the police for adultery seven times. My life...is really a legend!”

“Pfft!”

“Hahahaha!”

After saying a segment from “Bao Zou Big News Events” and then another joke segment from his world’s internet, the atmosphere had been livened up!

Zhang Ye carried on without pause!

One episode...

Two episodes...

Three episodes finished recording!

By the time he finished, it was almost four in the afternoon.

The moment the audience dispersed, Zhang Ye left the recording studio and took an elevator upstairs. The moment he walked into the corridor, he encountered Dong Shanshan. He could not help but ask, “How’s your new program?”

Dong Shanshan smiled. “Three million hits in one day.”

Zhang Ye was stunned, “Such good results? Well done.”

Dong Shanshan glanced at him, “Cut it out, it’s just not bad. How can I compare to a hot host like you with ten million hits an episode?”

Zhang Ye gave a wry smile, “What do you mean I’m hot? I’m full of infamy. Don’t you see the loads of people scolding me on the internet?”

Dong Shanshan said, “But there’s no lack in people commending you either. Hur Hur, also their scolding itself is a topic. It allows exposure. No one scolds me even if I wished for it, so be content!”

After their short conversation, they separated. He went to the office of the WebTV department’s head.

He knocked on the door.

A voice came from within, “Come in.”

Zhang Ye pushed the door open and entered, “Director Feng.”

“Little Zhang.” Feng Guiqin smiled. “I was just about to go looking for you. I heard you recorded three episodes in one go today? You produced so many?”

Zhang Ye had such a motive. Noticing that she mentioned it, he took the opportunity to say, “Those joke segments are basically in my head, so I can say them at any time. So I came today, hoping to request for my program to be aired every day of the week? If the timing doesn’t work out well, it will be fine with a poorer time slot from Monday to Friday. I just find two episodes a week to be too few. After all, the audience’s reception towards it isn’t bad.”

Feng Guiqin looked at him with surprise, “Broadcast it everyday?”

Zhang Ye answered, “Yes, that’s my intention.”

“Then will your scripts be able to keep up?” Feng Guiqin said with worry, “It will naturally be best to broadcast it everyday, as it can pull in a bigger audience. However, the creative team only has you. Even if I’m not exaggerating, this program has you as the core, bones, blood, and flesh. It’s all you. You are the only one holding it up. If you fall sick for three to five days, no one can replace you in a Talk Show program. It all depends on you. If your creations can’t keep up, would the airing frequency cause a decrease in the quality of the program? If this becomes the case, it would be better to just broadcast twice a week!”

Zhang Ye affirmed, “That won’t happen, Leader. You can watch the three episodes I recorded today. Not a single episode has a problem with its quality. I would also not do a slipshod work just for quantity.”

Feng Guiqin did not make a decision right away, but made a phone call instead. She got someone to send her the programs Zhang Ye recorded that afternoon, and then watched them one by one.

Zhang Ye sat on the sofa to wait. He too was not in a rush.

The sounds of stifling laughter could be heard from Feng Guiqin every now and then. She was either covering her forehead or her mouth. She was completely engrossed in the program.

Around the knocking off time, Feng Guiqin finished watching the programs and said to Zhang Ye, “Alright, I’ve made my decision. From now onwards, the 8 PM time slot from Monday to Friday is yours. The creative talent and continuous flow of inspiration you have really makes me speechless!”

“Thank you Leader,” Zhang Ye said.

Feng Guiqin pondered and said, “Your program is now a key highlight of our company. In the future, no other program will use Studio 7 for recording. I’ll leave it all to you. From now on, that will be the place to do recordings or live broadcasts of ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’. As for the scheduling for Monday to Friday at 8, you don’t have to worry about it. I’ll negotiate and arrange it for you. All you need to focus on is making each episode the best it can be, and establish a first class highlight for our WebTV station!”

“Alright, I will!” Zhang Ye pledged with sincerity and seriousness.

Chapter 257: Numerous Television Stations Headhunt Zhang Ye!

After work.

Zhang Ye came out of the Leader's office and went to his desk to grab his bag.

Zhang Ye naturally had his reasons to initiate his request that would increase his own workload by two to three times. He was probably quite different from others. His goal was not to just get by, nor was it for the salary or bonuses. To put it simply, his goal was fame. Honestly speaking, if Zhang Ye did two, or even one Talk Show episode a week, he would be doing the same thing as the Talk Shows from his world that only did it once a week, right? By dragging out the broadcasting period and breadth, he would definitely gain more overall popularity. Over time, with new audiences joining in, there would be more and more people who would recognize him and like him. However, that was overall popularity, accumulated over a year or two. However, if he broadcasted it continuously, seven days a week, it may be tiring, but the popularity he would gain in the short term would definitely be more than a weekly broadcast. Hence, Zhang Ye did not hesitate to choose the former choice. He was not planning on working at an online television station for two to three years, as this world's news was different from his world's. It also limited Zhang Ye to many joke segments. He was destined not to be able to produce too many episodes, so he planned on using the simplest, most direct method to use this platform to quickly increase his renown!

And the most important thing was that a daily broadcast would give a lot more Reputation points than a weekly broadcast. Zhang Ye also needed Reputation points to strengthen himself. For example, he had to recall the Talk Show programs from his world. His current progress was still very slow and minute. He needed more Reputation points to buy Memory Search Capsules, so as to build

onto the content in his Talk Shows. This would create a virtuous cycle!

There were still a number of people left in the office.

Zhang Ye smiled. “Why aren’t you leaving?”

An intern from his program team said fretfully when he saw Zhang Ye coming over, “Teacher Zhang, Quick! Take a look.” He pointed to his computer, “Someone is also doing a Talk Show program!”

Zhang Ye was surprised and then said, “Oh, let me see.”

A woman from another program team said angrily, “It’s a WebTV program competitor of ours called ‘Chen Yan’s Humor Speak’. Although the program doesn’t have the words talk show in it, but just from the content, even a fool can tell. This is copying and plagiarising our program. Even the pictures of the stage posted look similar to ours. They are going too far. This is our copyright. How dare they use the fruits of our results? And they aren’t paying us any copyright royalties?”

Zhang Ye said, “When is it broadcasting?”

“It will be aired soon. Their WebTV station set up the new program last minute, but they are already beginning large scale promotions.” Said a female worker.

Wang Xiong had also seemed to hear the news, as he strode into the office, “Little Zhang, you haven’t left? That’s perfect, stay here for a moment so we can observe this ‘Chen Yan’s Humor Speak’.”

Zhang Ye knew that they definitely had to pay attention to their competitors’ programs. However, in truth, he was not too worried. If one had to describe what Zhang Ye’s emotions were at the moment, it would be the trademark phrase of Chenchen—Hur Hur. Then, he and a few others sat together and waited for the program to go air.

Wang Xiong frowned, “Little Zhang’s Talk Show has gone viral. I heard quite recently that a number of WebTV stations, as well as television stations, are planning on beginning a Talk Show program. One of the provincial channels of Shanghai Television Station has approached us to talk about the copyright. However, these few WebTV stations aren’t that particular about things. See,

they didn't even inform us or ask about the copyright. They just copied our program's format!"

A staff said, "Are we going to take this to court?"

Another female staff said, "Right, we must sue them!"

Wang Xiong waved his hand, "Let's monitor the situation. A lawsuit isn't simple and should be done only as a last resort."

Zhang Ye was still unconcerned. He leaned against the window and smoked a cigarette. When he returned, the program had just begun airing. Just as he sat down, he saw a middle-aged man in his forties. He was Chen Yan and was also the host of "Chen Yan's Humor Speak". As described by his colleagues, the moment the footage changed to the stage, Zhang Ye felt a sense of familiarity. This was exactly arranged according to the stage setting of "Zhang Ye's Talk Show"!

"Hello everyone. I'm your old friend, Chen Yan."

"Let me tell everyone a story. In the past, there was a mountain, and on it, there was a monastery..."

Ladida. "Chen Yan's Humor Speak" was a twenty minute program so it quickly ended.

Ah Qian had also joined in to watch midway, "As expected, they are imitating Teacher Zhang!"

Little Yu grunted, "I've heard some of the joke segments before. It's clear that it was taken from the internet. They sure are shameless. This Chen Yan may not have been very popular or very unpopular, but he is still an experienced web host. How can he do things like this? Does he not care for his reputation anymore?"

A female staff said, "Teacher Zhang Ye, we must sue them."

Zhang Ye chuckled, "There's no need."

The people surrounding him were stunned, "What? They are infringing your copyright!"

Zhang Ye made his claim, "With program quality like that, they won't last more

than two days.”

Wang Xiong had his views too. Initially, he was tensed up, thinking that with his company’s exclusive program being plagiarised, it would negatively influence “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”, as a portion of audience would leave. However, after watching “Chen Yan’s Humor Speak”, Wang Xiong was calmed, “Hur Hur, Little Zhang is right. There’s no need to bother about such programs. In a few days, no, maybe it won’t even have a second episode!”

Indeed, a few minutes later, the number of hits for the twenty-minute program appeared. There was a total of 35,000 hits. It could not be any lower!

Ah Qian said in disbelief, “Aren’t Talk Shows extremely popular now? Why didn’t ‘Chen Yan’s Humor Speak’ manage to jump on the bandwagon? So few hits? I still found a few joke segments in it passable.”

Zhang Ye laughed as he explained, “Talk Shows are not just pure joke segments. You can’t just merge a large number of jokes together. The core of a Talk Show is to tie it in with current affairs. It’s to satirize as well as scoff. It is also an artistic form that makes one introspect. This ‘Chen Yan’s Humor Speak’ has just taken a bunch of online jokes ad verbatim without any changes. There’s no technique involved in it. It would be a wonder if it’s results were any good!”

This was the reason why Zhang Ye was not too worried from the beginning!

Talk Show? The people of this world had only heard of the phrase “talk show” through Zhang Ye. However, they had only heard it. They still did not completely understand the meaning behind Talk Shows. They did not even know the core value of a Talk Show, nor did they fully understand why “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” was so popular. It had only been a few days, and they expected to produce a celebrity that could match Zhang Ye’s perfect Talk Show? How could this be possible!? A Talk Show was not something anyone could produce! The host and creative team were extremely important! Chen Yan did not have Zhang Ye’s eloquence, nor did he have Zhang Ye’s knowledge. Hence, after chattering all day, not a single person was sold by his performance. It could also be said according to Zhang Ye’s opinion, that the style of “Chen Yan’s Humor Speak” was not a traditional Talk Show at all!

Everyone had experienced a false alarm.

After hearing Zhang Ye's analysis, everyone understood why "Chen Yan's Humor Speak" failed. As a result, they also further understood Teacher Zhang Ye's ability and strengths. Maybe in this year, the only person who could perfectly produce a Talk Show, both domestically and internationally, was Zhang Ye alone! Not a second person could be found!

.....

After reaching home.

Noticing that Dong Shanshan was not home, he guessed that she was busy with her program. Hence, he casually prepared a packet of instant noodles for himself. The Instant Noodles Hero had made his comeback.

After his meal, Zhang Ye opened his game ring. He needed more ammunition for the recording of his daily episodes. Hence, he used all his Reputation points to buy Memory Search Capsules and ate them one after another. He carried on reinforcing the Talk Show programs and web joke segments from his world in his mind.

After finishing this, the telephone suddenly rang.

"Hello, may I know if this is Teacher Zhang Ye?" It was a male who sounded like he was in his early thirties.

Zhang Ye said, "That's me. Who is this?"

The man immediately said, "I'm from Shanghai TV Entertainment Channel. I would like to inquire what format is the contract between you and Weiwo company? I wonder if it's alright for you to reveal it? I don't have any other intentions. I mainly want to know how many years your contract with Weiwo company lasts as well as the breach of contract fees. Our side has seen your 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' and find it extremely refreshing and good. Hence, uh, we wish to invite you to Shanghai TV, and wonder if there would be such an opportunity."

Shanghai Entertainment Channel?

This was also a provincial station and was similar to Beijing's Arts Channel.

Zhang Ye said tactfully, "Sorry about it. The fees for breaching my contract

might not be a small amount, so...”

The person immediately said, “No worries, Teacher Zhang. If you are really willing to come, we will pay the fees. It will not be a problem as long as it’s below 3 million!”

Zhang Ye clicked his tongue and said, “I think it’s best you forget it. I just started here and am still in the developing phase. We can work together if there’s an opportunity to do so in the future.” He did not burn his bridges, but he had rejected the offer. This was because Zhang Ye knew that he was somewhat famous on the internet now. He had also developed himself, so if he were to job-hop at this moment, it would not be rational. Besides, Weiwo company was honestly not bad to Zhang Ye. The Leaders trusted him greatly, and was not like the radio or television station that repeatedly made things difficult for him. He was also leading a comfortable life here, so he naturally could not betray their trust.

The person did not say a further word regarding the matter. After exchanging a few pleasantries, he hung up.

Following that, another person called Zhang Ye’s cell phone. This was a phone call that greatly surprised Zhang Ye, as it was from the Beijing Television Station!

“Teacher Zhang Ye, we have previously met during a meeting, but you might not have an impression of me. We never spoke, but I’m calling you regarding your Talk Show program. The dismissal decision previously made by the station was made without any other option. I know you can definitely understand why we had to make that decision. You have also worked with the Beijing Television Station for quite some time, so we have past relationships with each other, having fought together before. Right, I’ll cut to the chase. The station has the intention to invite you back, and produce a Talk Show at the Beijing Television Station. What say you?”

It had just been a few weeks since the Beijing Television Station had fired Zhang Ye. It had not been long, but they were already inviting him back? Zhang Ye actually did not have a grudge against the Beijing Television Station. He only had beef with Wang Shuixin, but the current situation made it impossible for Zhang Ye to return. At least not now. Was he one to be ordered to come and go

as they wished? Who do you think this bro is!? What the heck!

Zhang Ye said, "I temporarily do not have plans on job hopping."

"Is that so? Actually you do not need to worry about the breach of contract fees. We can pay for it." The person was indignant as he added on.

Zhang Ye smiled. "It's not a matter of the breach of contract fees."

The person could only say, "Then...alright."

It was unknown if they had discussed beforehand, for one television station after another called Zhang Ye. One of them was even a Deputy Station Head from a Dongshan province's television station who personally invited Zhang Ye over. However, Zhang Ye naturally did not accept it and tactfully rejected the offers. Actually, this fellow's attitude was still considered good. Thinking two weeks back, he had been applying to several television stations by calling them or submitting resumes. However, the entire television station network had banned him. No one wanted him. Even his fans had tried to help him find jobs by submitting his resume, but there was no response. Oh, and now that this bro's program is hot, you are looking for me one after another? Interesting!

Zhang Ye rejected all the olive branches!

However, the people from the traditional and online television stations did not give up. As three episodes had already been broadcasted, and "Zhang Ye's Talk Show" had gone viral, and did not seem to decrease in its popularity over time. Instead, it grew more popular by the day, so even the dumbest of people would know the market value of a Talk Show program. Talk Shows were bound to take up a certain importance in entertainment programs, so which television station would lag behind and miss a piece of the pie? The person most familiar with Talk Shows was Zhang Ye, but after failing to recruit him, these people did not give up. They believed that the most important aspect of a Talk Show was the joke segments. As long as they found the writing team behind Zhang Ye, then any host would be able to come up with the same effects.

Jianguo?

Dandan?

Laibao?

These three people had appeared in “Tonight 80’s Talkshow”. Zhang Ye had introduced the three people in his third episode. Everyone believed that these three people were members of the creative team backstage. Hence, though they failed to target Zhang Ye, they shifted their target onto these three “people”!

Phone call after phone call was made to Weiwo company.

Every insider that they could contact was contacted.

However, they never expected that the so-called writing team trio that appeared in the program were creators from “Tonight 80’s Talkshow” from Zhang Ye’s world. They did not exist in this world. Zhang Ye had only used their three names without changing them as amusement, as well as respect for the original work.

Hence, those people from the television stations, who wanted to headhunt, received shocking news from their counterparts, insiders or friends. Every joke segment in “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” was produced by Teacher Zhang Ye alone. No one helped him, nor was there a so-called writing team!

It was all him?

It was all created by him?

The people from the television station were all amazed!

This way, all of them finally gave up on the idea!

Chapter 258: Which is the best in excavating technology?

The next day.

Zhang Ye went to work.

There was a recording that he had to get done in the morning. The audience had been informed and the tickets had already been distributed. However, just as many of the audience and staff members arrived on scene, they were informed that “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” had been changed to a daily broadcast. The amount of work gave the staff a large fright!

“Teacher Zhang!”

“This, isn’t this schedule too tight?”

“That’s right, can we even manage it?”

“A broadcast a day means we have to produce more episodes prior to prevent any mishaps. In that case, wouldn’t there be a drop in quality? We aren’t the issue, but we are afraid that it will put too much of a strain on you.”

A person from the program team said.

Zhang Ye laughed, “Let’s give it a go. We already recorded an additional two episodes yesterday. Let’s try recording three episodes today, maybe even four if possible. Let’s get them out first.” Then he said to the audience, “Hello everyone, I have a matter to trouble you with. We will probably record multiple episodes today. We will probably be recording until noon, so if anyone has something to attend to midway, it’s alright, you can quietly leave prematurely.”

“Go ahead and record!”

“It’s best if we record ten episodes!”

“Right, I’ll not leave even if we record into the night!”

“Haha, we are dying to watch a few more episodes, so who would be willing to leave!?”

The audience’s reaction was intense, relieving Zhang Ye and his program team.

Then, after checking that the audience members did not have any recording devices, they began recording.

After the introduction clip, Zhang Ye appeared in his usual fashion, “Hello, everyone and welcome to today’s ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’. I am your host, Zhang Ye. Today, I have an exciting piece of news to tell everyone. Due to the feverish response and support we have received for the past few episode, from today onwards, my program will have a change in broadcasting time. It will be changed from airing at 8 on Saturdays and Sundays to an airing time at 8 every day from Monday to Sunday. Our program also has a sponsor now. This episode is sponsored by the ‘Korean Aerospace Industries’—We want to go further, to see what else belongs to us!”

Initially, the audience was listening attentively. Things such as the change in airing schedule and introducing a sponsor’s advertisement, but who knew that Zhang Ye had already thrown in a joke without any warning! Even many of the staff present were fooled by Zhang Ye. As he had been speaking very seriously at the beginning, they were still curious. What sponsor? They had never heard that their program had sponsors yet! No one expected Zhang Ye to come up with such a sudden reversal!

“Pfft!”

“Hahahaha!”

“The Koreans are too ambitious!”

Everyone, including the staff present, burst out with laughter!

Teacher Zhang Ye was too professional! Wasn’t Korea’s special episode done for the entire second episode? It returned again? This was f**king professionally ridiculing Korea for a hundred years! Just as Zhang Ye had said last time, who was the one propping up China as well as the Talk Show industry? It was not the SARFT, nor was it the television station media, nor was it the professional

industry experts, nor was it the citizens of China, but rather it was the silent hard work of the mighty South Korean citizens!

Haha!

There was something to look forward to with this episode again!

Just from the opening statement, it meant that this episode would not be bad!

.....

All the way to noon.

People dispersed from the recording studio.

The final result was Zhang Ye recording five episodes in one shot. Including the additional two episodes he did yesterday, he now had a large enough “stockpile” for them to broadcast for a full week. This was also because Zhang Ye was getting more and more used to the performance style required for Talk Shows. Hence, his condition was getting better and better. It was not as mentally sapping anymore. If it were anything like the first and second episode, he would definitely faint on-stage after recording five episodes. Today, he was not as exhausted. When the members of the program team saw Teacher Zhang in great condition, they were completely reassured.

In the dressing room.

Zhang Ye changed back into his work clothes and removed his makeup. He then switched on his cellphone and within a few minutes, a phone call came in.

The number indicated—Director Jiang.

The Executive Director of “The Great Pugilistic World”?

Zhang Ye picked it up, “Hello, Director Jiang, how are you?”

Director Jiang smiled. “Little Zhang, why did you switch off your phone?”

“Hai, I was recording programs all morning and have just concluded for the day,” Zhang Ye said, “Is there something you need?”

Director Jiang said, “Tonight is the premiere of ‘The Great Pugilistic World’. It will be held in Shanghai. If you have time, join us. After it, there will even be a celebratory feast. This time it will be the official celebratory feast.”

Zhang Ye did not hesitate, "Sure, I'll definitely be there."

Previously, if the filming crew needed to inform him of such matters or to aid in their promotions, it would be the Assistant Director contacting him. However, this time, Director Jiang personally made the call. Zhang Ye also understood that his popularity had increased, and that his status in the industry had naturally increased. The current him was no longer a minor side character who needed to use connections to be pulled into a film crew as a background character. The current Zhang Ye...eh...no longer needed to use connections to be pulled into a film crew as a side character! His societal status had clearly improved!

.....

Cafeteria.

Zhang Ye happened to bump into Dong Shanshan who was also there to eat.

He whispered, "I'll need to go out at night. The movie, which I previously made a guest appearance in, is having its premiere today, so I'll probably be home late. So don't delay your dinner for me.

Dong Shanshan whispered, "Got it."

After a few whispers, the two returned to their normal voice and began chatting amidst laughter.

.....

Evening.

Zhang Ye reached the cinema theater and walked towards a specialized zone for staff only.

A youth stopped him, "Who are you? Outsiders are forbidden!"

A woman behind him turned around and immediately stared at the youth, "How can you not know Teacher Zhang Ye?!" With that, she smiled at Zhang Ye, "Teacher Zhang, please enter."

The youth was stunned. He was Zhang Ye? The one that had recently become very popular on the internet?

Zhang Ye entered a waiting zone and saw many familiar faces.

“Aiyah, Little Zhang is here. Hahaha.” Yao Jiancai spotted Zhang Ye at a glance and immediately came up to greet him, putting his arm around his shoulder, “You have really been making the scenes recently. I saw your ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’. Although the other episodes weren’t to my taste as my expectations for humor are a bit higher, that episode about Korea was so well done. I saw that episode a total of three times! So addicting!”

“Teacher Zhang, you came?”

“Little Zhang, sit over here.”

A few actors, who had previously filmed with him, greeted him.

Sitting at the most important spots were the male and female leads, but Zhang Ye did not know them, nor was he familiar with them. As on the day he went to the Qingshan monastery for filming, there were no scenes for the male and female lead, so he had not seen them. Hence, after exchanging pleasantries with his old friends, he went to a corner with Yao Jiancai. The old and young duo began chatting. Their relationship was the best, and their personalities matched, allowing them to become good friends despite the great difference in age.

After Yao Jiancai joked a few times, he finally became serious, “Your Talk Show sure is new. I always felt crosstalk had its limitations. It had a limitation in broadcasting as well as regional and language barriers. However, this Talk Show of yours has perfectly surpassed the limitations that crosstalk always had. Furthermore, it is different from solo crosstalk. The style and content is packaged in a different way. Your talent in this sure isn’t trivial.”

Zhang Ye said in surprise, “Old Yao, you really know?”

Yao Jiancai said with a chuckle, “Of course, do you know what I did before movie filming? I did three years of crosstalk.”

Zhang Ye exclaimed, “Professionally?”

“Keke, self-learned, not professionally.” Yao Jiancai then said with a bit of a sigh, “Back then, there was no food to eat, so I had to do anything to survive. So I was an understudy for three years. Back then, I was a utility man, so I had to do everything. So I can’t say which was my main job and which was my side job.”

Zhang Ye asked inquisitively, “Were you a main or side character?”

Yao Jiancai laughed, “I can speak well enough while chatting with you, but I can’t do well in crosstalk. I don’t have a mouth that can reach the acme of perfection like yours, nor am I a graduated specialized major, so naturally I was a side character. Don’t look down on me though, for back in the day, I was quite a good side character!”

“Alright, I’ll believe it.”

“But why do I feel like you are giving me a distrusting expression?”

.....

It was not even 7.

The premiere ceremony began.

The ceremony was a bit more complicated. However, it was quite simple for Zhang Ye. He did not need to say a word, and just followed everyone down the aisle. He and Yao Jiancai were the same, they were both side characters. He was even inferior to Yao Jiancai’s character in terms of scenetime, so there was no need for him to say anything. That was the job of Director Jiang and the male and female leads. Even though Zhang Ye’s popularity was increasing by the day, he could not compare with the male and female leads at all. The lowest ones were, after all, B-list celebrities, so whatever they did was of greater importance than Zhang Ye. A celebrity appeared after accumulating all of one’s strengths. Zhang Ye may have quite a bit of pull on the internet and was quite a topical person, but be it his notability or experience and qualifications, he was far too inferior.

After going through the motions.

The movie finally rolled.

Zhang Ye sat at the third row with Old Yao. They watched the movie silently. Zhang Ye found this movie not bad, but...it was just not bad. It would not be terrible at the box office sales, but neither would it be too good. As there were too many common tropes with nothing new. Well, that was Zhang Ye’s own personal opinion. He did not know if audiences would accept the show or not. After all, there were many movies in his world that were heavily criticized but ended up having pretty good box office sales.

“Hey, it’s your scene soon!” Old Yao, who was beside him, kicked his shoe.

Zhang Ye stared at the screen, and indeed, the character he played appeared. He did not have much of an image as a character, and was just a guest appearance, so he fought the moment he appeared!

Many people in the theater did not have any reactions.

However, there were clearly a few people who recognized this person to be the host of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”!

Immediately, what was originally a very serious scene with someone about to die suddenly had a few stifled laughs. For some unknown reason, many people had a reflex action after watching “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”. The moment they saw Zhang Ye, they felt like laughing!

“Hur Hur Hur.”

There were stifled laughs, but it sounded out very clearly.

Director Jiang, “...”

The main leads, “...”

The production team as well as the other cast members were at a loss of whether to laugh or cry.

Your sister, we are having a serious ancient costume play wuxia film, not some comedy!

However, one could feel from this matter that Zhang Ye’s popularity and notability was rising by the day. Eventually, there would be a day where he could ride a rainbow and step onto the peak of this world, as he watched the vast and endless lands, shouting to the whole world, “Which is the best in excavating technology? In China’s Shandong, find Lanxiang!*

*Lanxiang colloquially refers to [Shandong Lanxiang Vocational School](#) that offers courses in cooking, construction equipment operations (specialized in excavators), as well as computer skills (albeit possibly only basic ones). In 2009, the school was [suspected](#) to be a site where cyber attacks were launched ([Operation Aurora](#)). As a result of this, the school received numerous calls a day to inquire about their computer courses, and their website was a result of

constant hacking on a daily basis. When the news that Lanxiang was involved in the attack of Google reached China, most netizens found it ridiculous and began mocking it. They named Lanxiang Vocational School as “Blueshit Institute of Technology”, as Lan (藍) literally means blue in Chinese, while Xiang (翔) is commonly known as shit in internet speak. The phrase “Which is the best in excavating technology? In China’s Shandong, find Lanxiang” was used as a [commercial by Lanxiang](#) (it’s hilarious from the ostentatious display of its capabilities), but is often edited to ridicule the situation such as if Lanxiang students are reported on the news for fighting, they would post, “Which is the best in fighting techniques? In China’s Shandong, find Lanxiang”.

Chapter 259

That night.

After the celebratory feast.

After filming was over in Beijing, they had drunk a lot. That was the internal celebration of the film crew, however this time it was different. It was official in nature with reporters and officials invited, so naturally they could not drink as much.

On the taxi back home, Zhang Ye idly looked at his game interface and realized his Reputation points were rapidly increasing. The film premiere had just ended two hours ago, and ignoring the usual increase obtained from “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”, his Reputation points had increased by approximately 100,000. It was still not too bad, and was apparently largely credited to his guest appearance in “The Great Pugilistic World”. He would never find this sort of “side income” too much.

He reached his destination.

“It’s here, right?”

“Yes, how much is it?”

“28.”

“Alright, here you are.”

Zhang Ye alighted from the taxi and a cold wind blew past him. He suddenly felt his stomach ache as he had drank liquor, as well as red wine. He had also eaten quite a bit of meat, and maybe he was suffering from indigestion. He took a deep breath as he grasped his stomach and tightened the coat on his body as he strode towards the elevator, before going upstairs.

At his doorstep.

Zhang Ye hurriedly pressed the doorbell.

Ding Dong, Ding Dong. No one opened it.

His stomachache increased in intensity. As he could no longer hold it in any further, he grabbed his keys out of his bag and opened the door. With a slam of the door, he rushed towards the bathroom.

Hua Hua, there was the sound of water.

There was someone in the bathroom, as the frosted glass was covered with mist.

Zhang Ye gave a wry laugh and quickly took off his coat and threw his bag down. He knocked on the bathroom door, "Shanshan, Shanshan, are you in there?"

"Ah?" The person inside probably didn't catch it as it was drowned out by the sound of water. Suddenly, the sound coming from the showerhead stopped. The voice of Dong Shanshan was heard through the door, "Zhang Ye?"

Zhang Ye hurriedly acknowledged. "It's me."

"The premiere ended already? I'm showering. We'll talk in a while." Dong Shanshan said.

Zhang Ye said hastily, "Classmate Dong, can we discuss a matter. Can you come out first? The faster the better. Si, my stomach is hurting and I can't hold it in any longer."

"I'm still covered in soap. I just began showering."

"I really cannot take it. I can't hold it in."

"Alright, then wait for me to rinse myself clean. Immediately."

"How long would it take?"

"Three minutes. Three minutes would do."

"Aiyah, hey! I can't even wait a minute!"

"That bad? I can't go out with the pile of foam on me, then...why don't you come in. The door isn't locked. Close your eyes. I don't have any clothes on."

“Is that appropriate?”

“Then you can wait. I’ll make it quick.”

Zhang Ye wanted to wait, but after he paced in front of the bathroom door for five to six seconds, he realized that he could not wait. He had to go in, hence he gritted his teeth, “Then I’m coming in.” Then with a hand covering his eyes, he opened the bathroom door and walked in. A surge of steam brushed past his body. The bathroom of his newly rented apartment was very big. It had a bathtub, and with transparent glass separating the toilet from the bathing area. However, he had not bought a curtain. Probably the previous tenant did not prepare for this, so it could be seen clearly from the outside.

Zhang Ye was covering his eyes, but even so, there were always gaps. When someone said not to look, there were times when one would end up focusing on it. Hence, through the gaps in his fingers, he saw something. The scene was a pair of long, sexy legs. There was foam covering it. The shower head was spraying water down at her smooth and tender thighs. The foam flowed down her beautiful legs bit by bit before entering the drainage. His nose also smelled the fragrant bath soap and shampoo. On the plane to Shanghai, Zhang Ye had lain on this pair of beautiful legs. Later on, at the Ladies’ in the company, he had also seen the school belle’s stockings pulled down to her knees. So, he was very familiar with them. Her legs accounted for nearly half her height. They were too long!

Zhang Ye’s heart thumped, but he could not care about this the next moment. He quickly opened the toilet seat and fiddled with his belt. Subconsciously, he wanted to turn to look to see if Dong Shanshan was looking at him, but recalling that the school belle was showering and naked, he pulled his head back at the last moment. Without caring for anything else, he undid his pants in an embarrassed manner before sitting on the toilet.

Whew!

Wow!

Zhang Ye exhaled a long breath and carried on with his business.

Hua Hua. The sound of water was to his side. As Dong Shanshan did not use the bathtub and was using the showerhead, she was standing at the outermost

region. Just now, in his haste, he had noticed that Dong Shanshan's left thigh was pressed against the glass, and had been pressed flat on the clear glass.

After solving his most urgent problem, Zhang Ye's mind started to wander and could not resist from looking away at the scene to his right. However, he did not dare to take a look.

"Drank a lot?" Dong Shanshan's voice sounded out amidst the sound of water.

Zhang Ye acknowledged, "Yeah, just an average amount. I didn't really drink that much, but had mixed alcohol. I also ate both Western and Chinese food, as such I had a stomachache."

A feminine voice came once again, "Alright. I just heard from a friend that watched the premiere that the movie was not bad. It definitely wouldn't be a problem for the box office sales to hit tens of millions. It might even cross a hundred million (US\$15 million). In the future you will enter the hundred million actors' club. Hur Hur."

Zhang Ye answered, "Cut it out. I was just a guest and minor character. No matter how good the movie's results are, it has nothing to do with me, unless I'm the main lead."

The two exchanged words and began chatting.

Dong Shanshan was also still showering. She had said that she would be done in three minutes, but since Zhang Ye was there, it was impossible for her to leave. She could not change in front of him, hence she might as well continue showering at her own pace, and was in no rush.

To avoid arousing suspicion, he purposely turned his head in the opposite position to not look in her direction. He actually was not done with his business, as his stomach was still in pain. However, this turn of his head instead made Zhang Ye see things he shouldn't see. On the floor beside the bathroom door, there was a basket that clothes were placed in. Clearly, they were the clothes she had taken off before entering the shower. Zhang Ye could not see the clothes that were placed right at the bottom, but he could clearly see the items on top. As underwear was the last to be removed, it was what could be seen at the top. It was a yellow lace bra. As the panties were on the other side the basket, it could not be seen clearly. However, noticing that the panties were hanging along

the corner of the basket, it looked hollow. Then further back, there was a pair of black yoga pants placed beside a white vest. The “scenery” was very good.

Zhang Ye did not know if the school belle was watching him, so he did not dare take any more peeps. He quickly lowered his head towards his feet. Holding his hand, he held his fingers together.

The sound of water stopped.

A charming voice said, “Are you done?”

“Soon, soon. Almost done.” Zhang Ye replied.

“Okay.” The school belle probably was not done with her shower.

When Zhang Ye entered, the lights above him were switched off. Probably to conserve electricity, the school belle had only switched on the lights in the bathing area. Hence, Dong Shanshan’s shadow was cast down onto the bathroom’s tiles. With Zhang Ye’s head lowered, he could see a slim shadow slightly wobbling. The shadow’s hand reached out and grasped a black shadow. It looked like a towel. Then it slowly merged into the body’s shadow. Wiping up and down, left and right, every action and pose of hers was very enchanting and seductive.

Sexy.

This was a characteristic of Dong Shanshan. She was probably not doing so on purpose, but a simple move of hers exuded sexiness. She was a natural succubus.

Wiping her arm.

Wiping her back.

Wiping her thighs.

Zhang Ye even saw the school belle shadow using the towel with one hand to dry her crotch. Her shadow’s legs were also clasping the large black shadowed towel in between them. She was very likely wiping her nether regions.

Zhang Ye’s nose nearly spurt out blood. Although the proportion of the shadow was not that great, the somewhat elongated shadow still allowed him to see clearly. He could tell what Dong Shanshan was doing behind the glass

through the shadow. With his imagination, it made Zhang Ye fantasize.

“Are you done?” The school belle asked.

Zhang Ye said, “Done.”

The school belle said, “Then hurry, I’m waiting to put on my clothes. Hu, it’s a bit cold.”

“Alright, alright.” Zhang Ye tore a piece of toilet paper and then added on, “Don’t you look.”

He was met with Dong Shanshan’s laughter, “Hur Hur, don’t worry. I don’t have a hobby of seeing the asses of others. I have already turned my body, so hurry up.”

Zhang Ye wiped his ass and then pulled up his pants. Just as he was about to flush, he suddenly thought of Dong Shanshan not being able to see him with her back facing him. Then, she wouldn’t know if he glanced at her. Zhang Ye had wicked intentions, and with a blink of his eyes, he gathered courage to turn his head suddenly to the shower glass. The school belle’s back was indeed facing him. She was holding a wet towel, and her entire back was exposed to Zhang Ye. That curvaceous contours made Zhang Ye feel his heart turn hot. This was the first time he was looking with his own eyes. He never expected Dong Shanshan’s ass to be so perky, as if there was something holding her ass up. It was hanging up high and looked beautiful! And from this angle, he could even see her long legs and her torso’s ratio. After all, it wasn’t obvious with clothes on. It was way too clear!

Her legs were so long!

Why did she have such long legs!?

“Are you not done?” Dong Shanshan said from across the shower glass and he twisted his head back.

Zhang Ye was sharp and fast as he pretended to be looking elsewhere. After tightening the belt on his pants, he flushed the toilet. Without looking back, he said, “I’m done. I’m going out now.”

“I prepared some tea for you. Add some hot water before drinking,” a voice

came from behind.

“Alright, thanks!” He opened the door and left the bathroom before closing the door for her.

Zhang Ye breathed hard and took a teacup from the tea table. He did not add hot water, and only drank a few mouthfuls of cold tea. The main reason was to calm and wake him up. The scene from before was too enticing. That slim and perfect pair of legs could no longer be removed from Zhang Ye’s mind. He believed that if he were to dream tonight, he would definitely end up eating Jinhua and Shineway*!

*Jinhua and Shuanghui is a food company that is famous for its “hot legs” drumsticks .

Chapter 260: Sneak attack on the school belle!

Outside.

In the living room.

Zhang Ye had finally managed to put out the fire within him, but his stomach was still not feeling well so he shouted towards the bathroom, "I'm going to cook some noodles, do you want some?"

"Your stomach still feels unwell?" the school belle replied from inside.

Zhang Ye acknowledged, "I want to eat something warm to see if it helps."

The school belle answered, "You go ahead then, I won't have any. I had a late dinner."

Zhang Ye went into the kitchen and turned the fire on. He opened a pack of instant noodles and cooked it.

The bathroom door opened and Dong Shanshan walked out. She was wearing what Zhang Ye had seen in the clothes basket earlier, a pair of black yoga pants and a small sleeveless vest. Whether she changed her undergarments or not, Zhang Ye could not tell since he could not see it from the outside, except for her deep, bottomless cleavage.

"Let me do it." Dong Shanshan said as she walked into the kitchen.

Zhang Ye waved her off, smiling, "Don't bother. I may not be able to cook other things, but there's no one better at cooking instant noodles than me. My nickname is 'Mr Capable Instant Noodles'."

Dong Shanshan covered her mouth and giggled, "Sure, I won't bother to do it for you then."

"Don't bother about it, just do your own thing." Zhang Ye said.

After five minutes, Zhang Ye's noodles were done. He took it to the living room and set it down on the coffee table. There, he saw Dong Shanshan exiting from his room, with her hands carrying a pile of Zhang Ye's clothes. There were pants, socks, and even the underwear that he had just taken off a while ago. Zhang Ye shouted, "Aiyo" as if he had been scalded by the hot soup. He put away his instant noodles and went to stop her, "What are you doing, what are you doing?!"

Dong Shanshan laughed diligently, "Washing clothes."

"No need, I can do that myself." Zhang Ye said embarrassedly.

But Dong Shanshan deflected him with an arch of her shoulder, "Go away, I need to wash my clothes too. I'm just doing this since it's convenient. It doesn't take much effort. I'm using the washing machine anyway."

Zhang Ye said, "It's too troublesome, there's no need to do it."

"I've said it when I said I was going to move in, that I would handle the washing and buying of groceries. You are in charge of the rent, so our responsibilities are clear." Dong Shanshan proceeded to push him out of the bathroom. She switched on the washing machine and put the dirty laundry in, "Alright, you go and enjoy your meal."

"Then....then thank you..." Zhang Ye was helpless so he went back to eating his noodles. He looked into the bathroom to observe.

As long as Zhang Ye's pants' and shirts' color wouldn't run, the school belle added them all into the washing machine. Then, Dong Shanshan went to her room and took out a few of her dirty clothes and put them inside as well. She poured some detergent into the machine and let it do the rest. What was left over was laundry whose color would run. Zhang Ye saw Dong Shanshan take two of his underwear, and put them into a basin. Then Dong Shanshan proceeded to put two of her own undergarments into the same basin. She did not mind Zhang Ye's filth and actually put all of it into the same basin!

Zhang Ye nearly spat out his noodles. This was what he was afraid of. How could he expect others to wash his underwear for him, that's just too.., "Shanshan!"

“Ah?”

“Aren’t you washing those in the washing machine?”

“Underwear and socks should be washed with soap, otherwise it won’t be clean.”

“Aiyo, that’s not necessary. You don’t need to be so detailed, just use the washing machine.”

“Just eat your noodles, I will take care of these.”

“It’s not that, but....heh!”

“Alright, I know what you mean. Hur Hur, do you think I don’t feel embarrassed that you are paying for the rent? This kind of housework doesn’t mean much in return. It’s just that we have both been busy these past few days and I didn’t find time to do the housework. Otherwise, all your clothes would already have been washed. I’m not busy today, so I should do some housekeeping. You might not care about cleanliness, but I can’t stand dirtiness. If you have anymore clothes to wash, bring them to me later.”

“There’s no need for that, right?”

“Is there a problem?”

“...No.”

“Then it’s settled, bring them to me.”

With the soap, Dong Shanshan squatted there and scrubbed Zhang Ye’s underwear. After it was done, she started cleaning her bras one by one. While she was squatting, the back of her yoga pants naturally dropped lower by a little. Because of her long legs and her short vest, her bright yellow panties was exposed. It was exactly the one that Zhang Ye had seen in the bathroom earlier. Dong Shanshan probably wore it today, so she did not change it after her bath too.

After finishing up the noodles, Zhang Ye washed the dishes.

While Dong Shanshan single handedly washed the clothes.

With everything done, it was already past 11 at night. Dong Shanshan tossed

the last piece of laundry into the dryer and washed her hands before sitting down on the couch and wiping off her sweat.

Zhang Ye poured a cup of hot tea, "Here, have some. It's been hard on you, old schoolmate."

Dong Shanshan took it from him and blew at it, before taking a sip, "It's nothing. In the future, just put your dirty laundry on top of the washing machine. I will wash them when I see it, so don't leave them all lying around in your room."

Zhang Ye laughed, "Alright. You're so virtuous, whoever marries you will be a lucky guy."

Dong Shanshan sipped her tea and said, "I do wish to get married early, although I'm not that old, I'm not young anymore either, but people like us in this line, if we get married too early, it would affect our careers too much. Although we can be like many celebrities who marry into rich families and retire from entertainment, but that's not what your old schoolmate wants. I really like this career and don't want to lose it."

Zhang Ye understood her train of thought very well, "It's the same for me."

Dong Shanshan threw up her hands saying, "In our line of work, getting married at 30 would also be considered early."

Zhang Ye nodded and said, "For you, that might be the case because you are pretty. Hur Hur, but for me it does not matter. I only have average looks, so getting married should not affect me."

Dong Shanshan, with her curly hair, smiled. "You underestimate yourself too much. Just look at when you do recordings, there are so many young ladies who like you so much. You even have female fans as well, of course most of your fans are still male or middle-aged, that's a fact."

Zhang Ye, "..."

He really couldn't refute that.

Dong Shanshan glanced at him, "There's still work tomorrow, aren't you tired yet?"

“Nope, I’ve had enough rest for the past two days.” Zhang Ye looked at the time and planned to sleep after 12.

“I’m not sleepy either. After doing chores, I feel more awake instead.” Dong Shanshan pointed towards the TV, “Why don’t we find something to watch?”

“Sure.” Zhang Ye took the remote control to turn on the TV, “Switch off the lights?”

“Turn them off. See what’s showing on the movie channel, we’ll watch it if it’s good.” Dong Shanshan said.

Zhang Ye turned on the TV and switched off the lights. He went back to the sofa and took his seat as they switched to the movie channel. It was showing a romantic movie, probably an old movie from a few years back. It was already halfway through the show with about 30 minutes left.

“Do you want to watch this?” Zhang Ye asked.

“Sure. Let’s watch this. There’s nothing else that’s good at this time anyways.” Dong Shanshan removed her slippers and put her beautiful legs onto the sofa. She took a cushion and hugged it and leaned back to watch the movie.

Zhang Ye also removed his slippers and sat cross-legged.

The atmosphere was quite good, both in the movie and in the living room.

Dong Shanshan was watching very seriously, at times amused by the plot, laughing charmingly.

Zhang Ye quietly stole glances at her from the corner of his eye. From the time in school, Zhang Ye and his classmates used to steal glances at Dong Shanshan all the time. As their seats were all different, some could see the side of her face, while some unlucky fellows would only see the back of her head, but to see her up close like today, this was something none of his classmates had the chance to do. Thinking about it, Zhang Ye not only could look at her this way. He had already seen her all over, except for the breasts. Not only had he seen her, he had even kissed her before!

If he encountered those old classmates, Zhang Ye really could not help but say the phrase, “how life has its ups and downs”. In the past, he was the most

inconspicuous one as he did not have the looks, nor the capability, but with a few months of help from the game ring, Zhang Ye had matured step by step and climbed higher. Truthfully, it seemed like a dream. He still found his current life unbelievable.

It was a moonless night.

It was best type of night for doing the hanky-panky.

The school belle was very beautiful under the faint lighting.

Zhang Ye became sexually aroused once again. Was there a chance for him to kiss her again? In recent days, Dong Shanshan and him were getting closer and closer. Zhang Ye felt that they could get even closer, but was afraid that the school belle did not have the same feelings for him. He was afraid that she would reject him, so he was slightly hesitant.

Under such circumstances tonight, Zhang Ye finally summoned up his courage.

“Shanshan.” Zhang Ye called out to her.

“Hmm? What’s the matter?” Dong Shanshan was still enjoying the movie, so she did not turn her head.

Zhang Ye coughed and then clenched his teeth as he moved to sit next to her. Their legs touched each other’s. At such a close distance, Zhang Ye put his hands around her waist as he lowered his head towards her.

Dong Shanshan was stunned, subconsciously looking at her side.

Zhang Ye did not even need to look as he planted his lips to her lips!

“Oh!” Dong Shanshan was stunned again. Her eyes flashed a sense of bitter laughing or crying laughter with a little awkward embarrassment.

Zhang Ye had kissed her.

Dong Shanshan gently pushed him away, “What are you doing?”

Seeing that she didn’t get angry as she didn’t push him away too hardly, his mind was set.

Dong Shanshan turned her head to avoid, as she reluctantly kissed him, “Hmm....almost...enough...hmm.”

Only then did Zhang Ye leave those charming lips of hers.

Dong Shanshan took several breaths, touched the saliva on her lips and glanced hard at him, “Sneak attacking now? Last time, I lost those bets to you so we kissed, but this time? What did we bet on this time? Why don’t I remember?”

Zhang Ye laughed, “Does it always have to be after losing a bet?”

Dong Shanshan looked at him, “That still does not call for a sneak attack like that. Hey, what’s your hand trying to reach for?!” saying that, she reached behind and grabbed Zhang Ye by the wrist.

Zhang Ye did not listen, but continued to touch her waist two more times.

Perky!

There’s even some elasticity!

“Don’t mess around.” Dong Shanshan said firmly, “Watch the movie!”

Chapter 261

In the living room.

It was already late into the night.

The moonlight was getting brighter as it shone in through the ceiling to floor windows.

“I said, don’t touch!”

“I’m not touching.”

“Then what is your hand doing?”

“I’m just placing it there and not moving it.”

“Then there’s no need to place it at my butt. Take it away.”

“Alright then, does that means I can put it on other places?”

“Did I say that? You can’t do that.”

The two of them bantered a little as Dong Shanshan pushed the responsibility onto him while Zhang Ye played innocent.

After a few moments of that, Zhang Ye finally removed his hand from the back of her yoga pants, but continued to sit next to her. He continued leaning on Dong Shanshan, shoulder to shoulder, occasionally touching. They were still very close together and when the music in the movie stopped playing, he could hear her light breathing beside his ear. He could also smell Dong Shanshan’s shampoo and bathing foam.

Ba da.

A lock of hair came dropping down from her side.

Dong Shanshan’s hair slid down smoothly and landed on Zhang Ye’s shoulders.

Zhang Ye felt an itch on his neck and looked sideways to see the still wet hair draped over his shoulder. He swallowed his saliva, feeling enticed once more.

The movie was still playing, the volume was also very loud.

The male and female lead were now already on the train eloping off, the two of them looked at each other and smiled, holding each other's hands. The scenery outside the train windows showing a landscape in the far off distance.

The mood was at its fullest.

The music was relaxing and the ambiguous atmosphere in the room was getting stronger.

Zhang Ye straightened his neck as his hand dishonestly roamed over again and rested on Dong Shanshan's thigh very naturally. Seeing that Dong Shanshan did not say anything, Zhang Ye's hand continued further, moving to the school belle's soft and tender hand. The touch was cold as ice, her skin clutched within her palms. It was very smooth and Zhang Ye couldn't resist gripping tighter as his heart began to beat faster and faster.

Dong Shanshan looked at him, "Are we watching the movie or what?"

"I'm watching." Zhang Ye coughed.

"Then watch it properly." Dong Shanshan said with a smile.

Seeing her smile, Zhang Ye knew it was not a problem. His hand did not loosen its grip and he continue holding her hand.

Dong Shanshan's hand moved suddenly, but she did not take it away from his hand. Maybe it was not in a comfortable position, she had taken her hand off her leg and put it onto the leather couch instead.

The two held hands, maintaining that position for a while.

In this current situation, Zhang Ye's heart had already melted. He felt extremely fortunate as if he had found his junior high school's first love. He had also touched his landlady's hands before, but this sort of hand holding would really be considered as Zhang Ye's first. There was a difference in context. In kindergarten, the teachers used to make the children hold hands for activities like mass workouts or physical education classes, but those should not be

considered as hand holding. This time, it surely had to be.

The first time being in a relationship is called one's first love.

The first time kissing will be called the first kiss.

What was the first time holding hands called?

First time holding? First hold? Eh, why does this sound disgusting (sounds like first diarrhea)!

The movie was almost ending.

Dong Shanshan said, "Have you not watched this before?"

"Never." Zhang Ye was unfamiliar with the movies of this world.

"Such a classic old movie and you've never seen it before?" Dong Shanshan shook her head in disapproval.

Zhang Ye felt it was quite good, so he asked curiously, "So what happens to the male and female leads in the end? They get together?"

"Of course not." Dong Shanshan was giving a deadly spoiler, she turned her head to look at him and said, "After getting off the train, their parents gave chase to the station and brought many underlings to capture them. In the end, the leads dash across the road to escape, but get run over by a big truck!"

Zhang Ye couldn't accept such an ending and cursed, "Damn it. What the f**k!"

How could such a weak movie be called a classic?

Could this world's movies be going for such tastes?

Dong Shanshan bent forward, still holding onto Zhang Ye's hand to get her cup of water with the other hand. She gulped it down and then placed it back onto the coffee table.

In the movie, the train had stopped.

Zhang Ye was anxiously waiting, but when the movie ended and the credits rolled, he still did not see the ending that Dong Shanshan had told him!

Run over your sister!

Big truck your sister!

I didn't even see a trishaw!

The two of them were still well and f**king alive!

"Shanshan!" Zhang Ye gave her a stare, "You're so wicked!"

Dong Shanshan covered her mouth giggling, her natural charms were all showing, "You'd believe everything I say? I don't give spoilers to anyone ever, this is basic courtesy. Spoilers are disgusting."

Zhang Ye shamelessly said, "No way, you lied to your old classmate and cheated my feelings again. You gotta make up for it, let me kiss you again." Making an innocent face, he went over to try to kiss her.

"No." Dong Shanshan dodged.

But what kind of skills did Zhang Ye have? Pulling her hand, Dong Shanshan's body came back towards him., but possibly from having used too much force, or because the school belle was too slim, with this pull, he had pulled Dong Shanshan a little too hard. She fell onto Zhang Ye's legs with an 'Aiyo'. Zhang Ye blinked and lowered his head to lock lips with her. As she lay at a spot too low, Zhang Ye's posture was also not easy. He had to press down with his back and neck. His body even began to tremble. However, this bit of difficulty could not prevent Zhang Ye. He was willing to stand upside down just to get a kiss!

Smooth. Tender. Sweet.

There's even a hint of tea smell, the feeling was great.

Dong Shanshan twisted around slightly, "Zhang....Ye....hmm...I'm...getting angry."

Zhang Ye definitely was afraid that she would get angry for real. After a few kisses, he did not go any further and pulled away from her lips as a thread of saliva extended between the two of them.

Ta.

The thread of saliva broke off and landed Dong Shanshan's lower chin.

Dong Shanshan glanced at him and reached for a napkin.

“Let me get it for you.” Zhang Ye did not let her get up, but got her a napkin.

Dong Shanshan’s head was still resting on his leg as she took the napkin to wipe the saliva off her chin. Then she threw the napkin at the bin beside them and missed as the crushed napkin rolled around on the floor. Dong Shanshan’s pushed herself up with her hands from the couch, but Zhang Ye pressed her back down.

“Are you going to make me sleep here?” Dong Shanshan gave him a look.

Zhang Ye said, “If you want to sleep then go ahead. It would be my honor to be the school belle’s pillow.”

Laying down, Dong Shanshan could only glance up and look at Zhang Ye, smiling, “You’d like that. Stop messing, let me get up first. I don’t feel well lying down. The couch is too small.”

Zhang Ye was feeling gutsy, “If the couch is too small, then why don’t we go to my room?”

Dong Shanshan rolled her eyes, “...Why don’t we go to my room instead?”

“Your room is good too.” Zhang Ye answered without hesitation as he spotted another opportunity. He immediately put one hand under her knees and another behind her neck, made a grunt and then stood up from the couch with much effort. Carrying Dong Shanshan, their weights added up as his bare feet pounded against the floor with a loud “dong”!

Dong Shanshan face turned pale, “I’m falling, put me down!”

Zhang Ye laughed, “Don’t worry, I won’t let you fall. Don’t you know my skills?” Then he put his feet onto the coffee table and used his big toe to press on the remote control and switched off the TV. At that moment, the room was totally dark. Zhang Ye made use of the moonlight and turned around, his heart full of anticipation as he walked towards Dong Shanshan’s room. He was actually quite nervous.

Dong Shanshan looked at him, “Where are you going?”

Zhang Ye carried her saying, “To your room, that’s what you said, isn’t it?”

“.....Oh.” Dong Shanshan did not say much, but only quietly acknowledged.

Hearing that, Zhang Ye was even more excited now. His breathing rhythm increased as he took a few steps before reaching her room's door. It was not closed, but slightly ajar. He turned sideways and went inside, then used his backside to close the door. The room was filled with the aroma of a woman and it came rushing into his nose.

Dong Shanshan did not say a word.

Then, Zhang Ye gently let her down onto the bed.

They were both silent for a few seconds.

Zhang Ye scratched his nose, not knowing what to say, "Is your dad's illness getting better?"

Dong Shanshan replied, "He stayed in the hospital and was on IV for 2 days. The other day when I called him, he was already discharged. It was acute pneumonia, nothing serious."

"Tell me if you need any help."

"Hur Hur, what can you help with?"

"Your old classmate here at least has some arm strength."

Zhang Ye was embarrassed yet again, but did not bother too much about it. After getting up from the couch, he did not wear any slippers. He walked to the windows barefooted and drew the curtains, leaving just a little gap. Otherwise, he would not be able to see anything at all. Zhang Ye then got up onto Dong Shanshan's bed from there. Since she did not say anything, he took off his socks and crawled fully into the bed.

Dong Shanshan glanced at him, "Are you for real?"

"Ah." Zhang Ye tried to smile, "Yes."

Dong Shanshan played with her hair and asked doubtfully, "Really?"

Zhang Ye acknowledged tersely, pulling aside the blanket and entered. His hands touched her under the blanket as he hugged her from the front and kissed her.

Dong Shanshan did not shirk away from him.

Zhang Ye kissed her for a full minute, feeling really good.

Finally, Zhang Ye straightened his back and took off his clothes. One by one, he hurriedly threw them onto the bed end.

But Dong Shanshan quickly said, “Wait a moment, wait a moment. I’m not ready yet.”

“What do you need to get ready for?” Zhang Ye did not care. After he took off everything, he came up to her again. This time, he got on top of Dong Shanshan’s body, holding both of her long slim legs together with his hands.

Dong Shanshan slapped his hands off and pulled her legs out from between his hands, saying, “Not today.”

Zhang Ye asked speechlessly, “Why?”

“I’m having my period these few days.” Dong Shanshan said.

“Ah? Such a coincidence?” Zhang Ye was almost in tears.

Dong Shanshan smile, “So I won’t keep you around any longer, go to bed earlier.”

Zhang Ye was at a loss whether to laugh or cry, “Then when will be a good time?”

“Not sure, 2 or 3 days more I guess.” Dong Shanshan answered.

Zhang Ye could only muster, “.....Alright then.”

Sigh, isn’t this asking for my life!

2-3 days? Forget it! This bro will wait!

Chapter 262: Talk Show Gets Taken Off Air?

Morning.

It was a brand new day.

Zhang Ye got out of his bed. He did not do anything last night, so he could not suppress the fire in his heart. He initially wanted to sleep in the school belle's bedroom, so he had thickened his skin to chat with her in bed for a long period of time. However, he was still sent out of the room by Dong Shanshan.

Alas, this was life.

Loneliness was where the shoe pinched!

Dong Shanshan had also woken up and was in the kitchen preparing breakfast.

"Shanshan."

"You are awake?"

"Yea, what are we eating?"

"Fried mantou and poached egg."

"Nice, then I'll go wash up."

After finishing breakfast, Dong Shanshan picked up her bag, ready to leave. To avoid suspicion, she and Zhang Ye always left separately. Either she left first or he left first.

Zhang Ye sent her to the doorstep.

"I'm leaving." Dong Shanshan smiled.

Zhang Ye acknowledged and blinked his eyes as he leaned over to kiss her.

However, Dong Shanshan nimbly dodged and opened the door and stood outside the door. She waved her hand, smiling, "I'll see you at work in a while."

Zhang Ye gave a wry smile. Damn, he didn't manage to get a kiss.

I'll endure a few more days. I'll definitely take care of her in two days!

.....

Company.

The moment Zhang Ye arrived, he was informed to go to Wang Xiong's office.

"Director Wang," Zhang Ye said, "You were looking for me?"

Wang Xiong invited him to take a seat and smiled. "The episode of 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' with the highest hits has officially broken 10 million views. Your fame has been increasing too. Now, there are two or three potential sponsors contacting us, hoping to get exclusive mentions on 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show'. As for the details, the company's relevant staff is discussing with them. So I want to ask you, how many episodes can this show of yours last?"

Zhang Ye gave it a thought before saying, "At this speed of daily episodes, it might finish in less than two months. If it's one or two episode a week, then it could last for about half a year or more."

Wang Xiong muttered to himself, "Two months? That's about 60 episodes? Alright."

Zhang Ye asked curiously, "Are the sponsorship fees very high?"

"Hur Hur," WebTV said, "With your program's hit rate, it won't be low. Their bid is already the top price in the WebTV sponsorship fees, and from the looks of it, it can be further discussed."

The amount of sponsorship was an embodiment of his personal worth, so Zhang Ye was naturally very concerned about it.

Just as they were chatting, Wang Xiong's office phone rang. He picked it up, "Hello..." Then after hearing a few words, Wang Xiong's face changed, "I'll be there immediately...Huh? Get Zhang Ye too? Alright, Director Feng, I got it." After hanging up, he said to Zhang Ye, "Let's go. We need to go upstairs."

Zhang Ye was stunned, "What's going on?"

Wang Xiong frowned, "People from the SARFT are here. Director Wang wants

you there too, most likely due to your program. Let's go first. As for the details, I don't know either."

Zhang Ye was perplexed. SARFT? My program?

SARFT was a very famous department. It was not too much to say that it was the department that was in charge of the entertainment industry. For traditional and online television stations, the SARFT was in charge of auditing, punishment, and revocation of all their programs. Basically, they had all the power in their hands.

.....

Upstairs.

Feng Guiqin's office.

When Wang Xiong and Zhang Ye entered, there were already about six people in the office. One of them was Feng Guiqin. One of them was also their Weiwo company's Leader. As for the rest, Zhang Ye had never seen them before. Two of them were middle-aged, while the other two were young adults. There was a total of three men and one woman. The one leading the group was a middle-aged man with a rotund belly. It was unknown if it was a result of drinking, but it was obvious at a glance that he was a Leader.

The pot bellied SARFT official sat on the sofa with a haughty posture. He said towards Feng Guiqin and another company executive, "The directive has been passed, so implement it!"

It could be seen that Feng Guiqin was suppressing her anger as she said, "But the 'Talk Show' has only aired a few episodes. To stop it now would greatly influence our WebTV's reputation. This program is now our signature program. The country has been trying to foster the WebTV industry, but this directive makes us..."

Stop broadcasting?

"Zhang Ye's Talk Show" was to be taken off air?

Zhang Ye's face turned gloomy. He never expected it!

Wang Xiong probably did not expect it either. His face turned cold and

immediately said to the pot belly official, “Leader, why are you stopping Little Zhang’s program?”

Another middle-aged SARFT official glanced at him, saying, “What do you think? Back then when you submitted this program for approval, we had approved it after review. We also gave your program a number. However, what did the document you submitted to us say? That it was an entertainment program with goals of being humorous, but we have already seen the first few episodes, that it is not just pure comedy and entertainment. There were expletives used in the program and unhealthy joke segments. Especially with the second episode has even involved politics, creating gossip that we are ridiculing our neighbors! If you aren’t taken off air, who should? There has to be a bottom line in entertainment! You cannot do such a program as you have crossed the line!”

Zhang Ye stepped forward, “What expletives were used?”

One of the young SARFT officials looked at him, “What is JB?”

“Is JB an expletive?” Zhang Ye responded, “Then would all English alphabets be expletives!?”

“Little Zhang!” Feng Guiqin noticed that Zhang Ye was agitated and immediately warned him, “Hold your words. I’ll talk to you later.” Then she said to the few SARFT officials, “Isn’t the audit over Talk Show too great? If the higher-ups find it inappropriate, we can still adjust it and we can also delete the joke segments from previous episodes that the SARFT finds inappropriate, but to take it directly off the air causes us too great of a loss!”

Wang Xiong added on, “Besides, ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’ does not in anyway address any political issues. It’s just things that the citizens joke about.”

The leading SARFT official said impatiently, “But the ridicule and satire created from your program has seriously affected social order!”

Feng Guiqin narrowed her eyes, “This is too much an exaggeration, right?”

Wang Xiong was also furious, “It’s just an entertainment program, yet you say it’s anti-societal?”

The woman from SARFT cut them off, “Do you know how many people

reported 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' on our official Shanghai SARFT website? There are hundreds of anonymous letters a day! If we carry on letting you broadcast, who knows what mess you will create in the future!"

Feng Guiqin retorted, "Which program isn't reported by people? Just because it's reported means it has to be banned and taken off air? Then the whole country will not have any entertainment programs!"

The leading SARFT official leered coldly at Feng Guiqin, "We came to announce the SARFT's decision. From today onwards, 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' is to be taken off air. You just need to follow the directive. Whatever we should answer has been answered, nor do we have any need to explain anything to you. This is a directive set by our SARFT. Also, now is a crackdown period. For those programs that violated the rules, us from the Shanghai SARFT will be holding a small press conference before 8 PM today. We will announce the punishment dealt to 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' and those programs that recently are also in violation. You just need to show up!" Standing up, he said to the people beside him, "Let's go."

The people from the Shanghai SARFT strutted away.

Wang Xiong hurriedly said, "Director Feng, this..."

"I'll make a call!" Feng Guiqin picked up her cellphone and dialed a number.

Zhang Ye stood in a corner, silent. His face was so gloomy that it looked terrifying. I worked so hard and for so long, putting in so much effort, and you are halting my program just as it was created? And the reason behind it being halted was so baffling? It will affect societal order? Go f**k yourself!

The joke segments and topics he mentioned were all from his world. For example, the content from the episode dedicated to South Korea came from "Tonight 80's Talkshow". And back then, Wang Zijian had no problems saying it on TV. Nor were there any warnings or punishment, so why would it be prohibited here? Besides, as a traditional television program, "Tonight 80's Talkshow" had no problems at all. For WebTV, which had relatively more leeway, it had problems? Furthermore, with "Bao Zou Big News Events", this online Talk Show was filled with expletives and curses, but they were alive and well. At least they were not audited and taken off air! Why couldn't mine work?

Could it be that this world's SARFT gave greater scrutiny than his world's? Almost nothing could be said? Impossible! If Zhang Ye had crossed the line, Feng Guiqin, Wang Xiong, and the Weiwo company Leaders would have informed him early on. Those could have been edited out in post-editing, but them as experienced professionals who were so familiar about the WebTV industry, did not say that there was any problem, so why did the SARFT find problems?

Furthermore, it was not just halting a few episodes!

It was suspending it for an indefinite period of time!

Zhang Ye was perplexed what could have gone wrong.

Feng Guiqin's call connected, "Hello, Head Zheng, It's me, old Feng."

"Ah, Old Feng." A middle-aged man's voice came from the phone as the volume was turned up high. Wang Xiong and Zhang Ye, who were standing by the side, could hear it clearly.

From the conversation, the other party was probably a leader of the Shanghai SARFT.

Feng Guiqin said, "One of our programs had been suspended. Did you know about it?"

"Talk Show, right? I just got wind of it." Before waiting for Feng Guiqin to carry on, the middle-aged man said, "Old Feng, I knew you would look for me, but I really can't help you this time. The person leading the team was Li Tao, right? This matter was audited by them. I can only disclose some insider information that we indeed decided to have a crackdown recently. Secondly, it's not your Weiwo company's problem, but because Zhang Ye provoked public outrage. In the past, he was banned by television stations, and now with his new program being so popular, many people from the television stations can't stand it, so they would definitely do something. Thirdly, to my knowledge, Li Tao's daughter's idol is Lee Parkwoo. Maybe it's due to his daughter that after his team's audit on 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' came up with violations, he directly reported it to the administration. Then it was sent to the SARFT's headquarters, and now they have made the punishment of taking it off air. So whatever I say would be useless for you."

Chapter 263: If the tiger doesn't roar, do you think I'm an ill cat?

Feng Guiqin hung up.

Zhang Ye heard every word from the phone. He had provoked public outrage? Someone did not like him? This halt was targeted at him?

Feng Guiqin waved her hand, "Go back first. I'll think of some other method!"

Wang Xiong was pessimistic, "The directive has been passed down. It's already too late."

"I'll look for someone else." Feng Guiqin knew that there was not much hope, but she had to put in the effort. She could not take this lying down. It was not easy for Weiwo to produce such a good program, and it was not easy for China to produce such an excellent original program format. Before others commented on it, they were already drowned by their own people? They were attacked for some baffling reasons, resulting in their best program being halted! No wonder China's television program industry could not develop well! How was it to develop!? It was sabotaged from within! All because of personal selfish desires that ignored everything else! This was the entertainment industry of China! Feng Guiqin's heart turned so cold that it could not go any lower!

"Director Feng," Zhang Ye spoke.

Feng Guiqin pushed her hand out, "Go back."

Zhang Ye said with a gloomy face, "This matter is my fault. I have jeopardized our company!"

"You heard it?" Feng Guiqin was stunned before saying, "It's not because of you."

Zhang Ye said, "Previously, many television stations contacted me, hoping to

headhunt me to do Talk Shows for them, but I refused. I rejected all of them, and in this industry, I have previously offended a lot of people. Even I'm at a loss how many of them there are. They are deliberately targeting me!"

Wang Xiong patted him, "It's not because of you."

Zhang Ye was very firm in his judgment.

He managed to get caught in a crackdown?

He managed to get used as an example?

That was definitely not the reason. It was just used as an opportunistic reason. Just as the Head Zheng from the Shanghai SARFT told Director Feng on the phone, that pot bellied guy, named Li Tao was the instigator of this matter. There was a web of relations behind the matter. For example, Li Tao's daughter who idolized Lee Parkwoo, for example an old classmate of Li Tao, or a friend of Li Tao from a certain television station. They could have contacted Li Tao to help in targeting Zhang Ye, or it could be Li Tao not liking Zhang Ye. To make a negative example out of someone, they needed someone to answer to their higher-ups. Hence, "Zhang Ye's Talk Show" had become their target. Regardless of the possibilities, Zhang Ye remembered Li Tao as a person. The reason why his program was banned was all because of this person!

This is like sending me to the gallows!

At the same moment Zhang Ye's heart turned cold, another part of his heart was burning with anger!

Feng Guiqin said, "Old Wang, about the sponsorship of Talk Show, hold it off for the moment. Forget it, tell them the truth. Everyone is well-informed. Since the Shanghai SARFT is holding a press conference tonight, there's no way to keep it under wraps."

Wang Xiong sighed, "I understand." A few million Yuan of sponsorship fees disappeared just like that. Not just Wang Xiong felt the pinch, the entire company would definitely feel it!

Their company's most excellent program had not even fully matured in its popularity, but had been stabbed in the back by others. This was a severe blow to their online television station!

.....

Office area.

Zhang Ye returned.

“Has the sponsorship been decided?” Dong Shanshan looked up from her desk and she smiled. “I heard the bid for your Talk Show’s exclusive sponsorship is already higher than the other top WebTV programs. In the future, you will be a famous high sponsorship webhost.”

Ah Qian smiled. “Congratulations, Teacher Zhang.”

“Are you treating us tonight?” Little Yu also joked.

Zhang Ye did not speak a word and returned to his seat.

The surrounding colleagues were surprised when they saw this. What happened? Why was Teacher Zhang Ye acting in such a manner? He was still frowning despite the higher sponsorship rates?

Then, a woman suddenly shouted!

It was the web host named, Wang Bei. She exclaimed, “Hurry and look at Shanghai SARFT’s official website! This crackdown mentions seven programs to be halted! Including...’Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’!”

“What?”

“It can’t be?”

“Teacher Wang, did you see wrongly?”

“Talk Show has been halted? Based on what grounds!?”

The office seemed to explode as everyone gathered over!

After verifying the notice of violation from the SARFT, everyone was stunned!

There really was “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”! It had really been halted! And it was in effect as of today! According to the document’s usual practices, this was a indefinite halt! It could be said that even if it was edited, and they redid the programs from the past, there was no way for “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” to be aired ever again!

Ah Qian stared, “How can this be!?”

“It says here that Zhang Ye’s broadcasted unhealthy information and spread rumors that could potentially disrupt social order?” Little Yu was also extremely angered, “Bullsh*t!”

An old colleague slammed his table, “This bunch of Shanghai SARFT! They are too bastardly!”

“Many industry insiders have evaluated that a Talk Show program format can even go international and develop all over the world. In the end, we got axed by the SARFT?” Zhang Han, who had a good relationship with Dong Shanshan, felt injustice for Zhang Ye. This matter was disgusting!

Dong Shanshan hurriedly asked, “What other programs are halted? Are all the Talk Show programs also halted?” Now, other than “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”, there were already three other television programs on the market springing up to emulate Zhang Ye’s talk show. Two of them were WebTV programs, and another was a provincial television station from Shanghai. Furthermore, none of them bought the copyright from Zhang Ye.

Wang Bei sat before the computer and pointed to the screen with gritted teeth, “Look at the other programs yourself. Other than Zhang Ye’s, there’s not a single talk show on this list!”

“Old Chen’s Argument”.

“Web Bikini Show”.

“Children’s Stories—The life of a Rabbit”.

Even a children’s story channel had been placed on the blacklist. However, despite checking the list a few times, there was no other talk show program to be found. That meant that only Zhang Ye’s program had been halted. The other knockoff Talk Show programs that plagiarized Zhang Ye were completely fine! One had to know that those pirated programs were identical to Zhang Ye’s! As they were still not familiar with a talk show’s core values, they were still unable to create independent works. They could only emulate Zhang Ye’s style. When he cursed the Koreans, or the Japanese, or the Americans, they would do it in Zhang Ye’s language mannerism, but now, they were still completely fine!

Why?

Why are they are only targeting Teacher Zhang Ye!?

Many people, who had good relations with Zhang Ye, could not find something to vent their anger!

As Zhang Ye heard everyone speaking, his anger rose to his head! Li Tao! If you really don't like me, then do it openly. Do it cleanly, but now? You turned a blind eye to those bad quality copies of my programs, but banned my original program? What did this mean? Are you legitimizing those knockoffs and plagiarized copies? Banning my program and then letting those Talk Show programs not pay me a single cent in copyright royalties? Are you trying to aid the bootleg programs? With "Zhang Ye's Talk Show" going down, if people wanted to watch Talk Show programs in the future, they could only go to other traditional or web television stations to watch?

This was filled with tremendous amounts of interest!

Zhang Ye could tell that this matter was complex and felt nauseous just thinking about it. A lot of benefits and interests were involved in the halting of "Zhang Ye's Talk Show"!

Indeed, a phone call was suddenly made to Zhang Ye.

"Who's this?" Zhang Ye picked it up.

"Hello, Teacher Zhang. I'm from Shanghai Television Station. Previously, one of my colleagues contacted you. I wonder if you have any impression." It was a middle-aged woman's voice, "We just received news that your program has been halted?"

Zhang Ye said in a lukewarm manner, "Just cut to the chase."

The woman said, "It's this. We still have the same intentions. We wish for you to come to our television station and let you create a new Talk Show program."

Zhang Ye said, "I've been blacklisted by SARFT, so even with a name change, would they approve it?"

The woman chuckled, "You can rest assured about this. We will communicate with them to approve of your program. Since we are inviting you, we definitely

have some confidence. As long as you come, your new program will be approved as early as next Sunday. You can carry on with your Talk Show, how about it?"

Zhang Ye sneered, "Sorry, not interested!"

The woman was dazed and was just about to carry on speaking, But Zhang Ye had already abruptly hung up. He did not even want to say another word to her! With this phone call, Zhang Ye already understood some things. He did not know if the Shanghai Television Station had played a dishonorable role in this matter, but he was sure that it was a result of a television station or some other online television station. With Li Tao banning Zhang Ye's program, only the Weiwo company and Zhang Ye suffered, as for the other entities, they only stood to gain.

Another phone call.

This person was someone from a television station that had previously called him.

"Zhang Ye, are you interested in our television station? The contract's perks are the same as the last time. With your program halted, Weiwo WebTV definitely cannot broadcast anymore. You might as well come here to develop yourself. You are free to make the decision." Zhang Ye remembered this person clearly. When he previously called him, he had been very courteous, using terms like "Teacher Zhang", but now, his attitude had changed. He had directly called Zhang Ye by name. His tone was also not as friendly, as if Zhang Ye had to plead with him.

Back then, they were inviting him, so they were courteous. As such, Zhang Ye was naturally courteous too, although he was adamant about not joining them.

But to not speak politely to me?

Then why the f**k would I be courteous to you!?

Zhang Ye immediately responded, "Get lost to as f**king far you as your learning goes!"

"You..." The person was stunned from being cursed at. He was also extremely angry and was about to retort back.

Toot, toot, toot. Zhang Ye had already hung up. He was now suspicious of multiple parties involved in this matter. They were all trying to obstruct him. After being low-key for half a month, Zhang Ye suddenly returned to his form back in Beijing. He had transformed back into a “fighter”!

If the tiger doesn't roar, do you f**king think I'm an ill cat?

Chapter 264: The SARFT's Press Conference!

At the same moment.

The news had spread online!

“Look at the Shanghai SARFT’s penalty notice!”

“Holy sh*t! Why is ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’ halted?”

“Broadcasting of unhealthy information? What did Zhang Ye say that was unhealthy? Those are just contemporary social issues! They were all just cases that have happened before! F**k! If News Simulcast could broadcast that, then why can’t Zhang Ye talk about it? He can’t even mention them?”

“The SARFT is going more and more overboard!”

“Do they even reason things out! I’ve been watching ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’ everyday!”

“He just poked fun at the Koreans a little! What do they mean by disrupting social order?”

“Such ridiculous charges can be just brought up like that? There’s definitely a conspiracy!”

“Everyone, look at the halted programs list, even a damn children’s story program is included! What year is this even? Are they planning a literary inquisition? I’m numb, I’m so angry that my lungs are going to explode! How can such a thing happen? How can this not be a deliberate act! I know the SARFT’s authority is wide and that the SARFT’s rights cover a lot, but taking Teacher Zhang Ye’s program to set an example to others? That’s too despicable! How can that program have problems! It just reflects all the societal issues and it even has a positive effect. The commoners all have expectations and desires because of this program, yet you all want to kill it off? Are you really part of China or the

lackeys of the Koreans! Lee Parkwoo publicly questioned our host, bringing fans to publicly scold our entertainment program colleague, yet you didn't care. You didn't even ask which program should Lee Parkwoo be allowed to appear on, yet when Teacher Zhang Ye rebuked with facts, you guys from the Shanghai SARFT turned nasty? And brought along the Koreans and their celebrities to kill off our country's host? I would like to ask, are you all crazy? Are you still humans? Are you still people of China?"

"I blew up too!"

"F**king pushing it too far!"

"With the halt of the program, Teacher Zhang Ye has suffered injustice!"

"There's injustice to all the programs on that list, didn't you all realize? Those bootleg programs that copied 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' didn't even purchase the copyrights and yet they present their shows in the exact the same format as Teacher Zhang Ye does. Some of the joke segments were even fully copied over, but yet they did not appear on this list. I knew something was wrong! The programs that ought to have been halted did not get halted! What's the meaning of this?"

"SARFT's notoriety has been known for a long time, but this time it's really too much. They should have halted those copycat Talk Shows as well!"

"They are targeting Zhang Ye!"

"Right, they're deliberately repressing Teacher Zhang!"

There were many nationalistic youths and fans of Zhang Ye who started their scolding online!

Some people even took advantage of the situation. When the order from the Shanghai SARFT was released, a lot of baseless rumors began too. This included those industry insiders and professionals who wanted to scold Zhang Ye but didn't dare to as his program was enjoying a very high popularity. Seeing that this was the end for Zhang Ye as his Talk Show was halted, they all jumped out to attack and blame Zhang Ye!

"Zhang Ye deserves it!"

“Hahaha! What good news!”

“Banning is very good! Who let him scold our Lee Parkwoo!”

“Have you learned now? Some people cannot be scolded by people like you! What kind of fame do you have and what kind of fame does our Lee Parkwoo have? You shouldn’t overestimate yourself, now you know what trouble you’ve gotten into? It’s too late!”

A Weibo verified expert commentator posted: Zhang Ye’s program really went too far. It crossed the line. It looks like he was just poking fun at the topics, but in truth, that was disrupting social order. What’s the point of scolding Korea? It’s just a few words, but the effects are grave! It might even get to the point that the relationship between the two countries gets messed up. If this sort of program is not handled strictly, then what programs should be handled strictly!?”

Someone rebuked. It was Zhang Ye’s old actor buddy, Yao Jiancai, “There’s the few bad quality Talk Shows that talked about things that crossed the line further than ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’ and that didn’t disrupt any social order. Yet the original by Zhang Ye is not allowed? What kind of reasoning is that?”

That expert commentator answered, “To handle such cases, the first to be clamped down on would be the leader. We have to remove the biggest tumor. The SARFT handled this issue well and without any problems!”

Yao Jiancai answered, “You’re distorting the whole concept! The original needs to be cautious and careful while the thieves can just be so arrogant? Plagiarizing actually gets the stamp of approval from SARFT? What sort of logic is that!?”

On Weibo, Hu Fei also made a post, “I’m wondering, why a rare, original format program in our country that’s doing so well, has such problems? Zhang Ye’s Talk Show is an online television program, but even if we air it as a traditional television program, it’s possible to make the cut. Zhang Ye is a very professional host who graduated with professional training. He has worked for so long too and has several highly rated programs to his name. Why would anyone doubt his professionalism such an experienced and talented host? All of the joke segments he said could be said in public! So you’re saying he’s spreading unhealthy information? All right! Which segments spread the unhealthy

information? Could the expert commentator from before point it out to me? I would really like to hear your views!”

Another expert jumped out. He obviously knew Hu Fei in person, but he posted, “Old Hu, Zhang Ye’s walking on a thin line. This kind of thing is like swimming alongside the regulations. Now that he had been used as a classic example because of what he had said, Zhang Ye’s just paying the price.”

Then a few television station personnel also criticized Zhang Ye. They included a few online television station people, there was even the company that plagiarized “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”. They had picked up on Zhang Ye’s show and copied it without paying a single cent. Seeing Zhang Ye having fallen, they stood up to scold him, the founder of Talk Shows. Their ugly faces and mouth was for all to see!

“Zhang Ye is getting what he deserves!”

“His program should have been halted long ago!”

“In the future, everyone should watch our WebTV Talk Show instead! We can guarantee that we won’t spread rumors or negative news. We will fairly judge the problems in our society!”

There were even some who took the opportunity to advertise.

As the saying goes, a wall could be pushed down by many people, Zhang Ye had suddenly become the target for everyone!

Some were scolding Zhang Ye and some were supportive of him. The internet broke out quickly into a fierce debate discussing whether ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’ should be halted. Everyone had their own point of view on this matter. However, this was only the internet. They were only words and discourse. In actual fact, the meaning behind the halting of the program was known to industry insiders and the common people. There was definitely something fishy about it. As someone in the Shanghai SARFT had not done his job cleanly. They did not investigate the plagiarizers nor pursued the matter of plagiarism, yet they banned Zhang Ye. It was very obvious who they were targeting!

Did they think everyone was dumb?

How much smarter could anyone be than the others!

To say that no one had gained incentives or no existence of a personal rivalry, even a dumbass would not believe!

Especially those fans who liked Zhang Ye all this while knew it extremely well. Teacher Zhang Ye had a bad temper because he was frank with his words, causing him to offend many. Other than the television circles, in the broadcasting circles, or literary circles, Zhang Ye had already offended them. There were many who hated him to the bone, and since China was a society where interpersonal relationships mattered a lot, a few phone calls and using one's ties could cause Zhang Ye to have difficulty moving. Just like today's matter, there were too many people trying to give Zhang Ye trouble. He had a full range of enemies, so it was impossible to know who set up the obstacle for him!

.....

Evening.

Shanghai SARFT.

At the press conference hall.

The reporters had all arrived, but were made to wait outside. The staff did not allow them to go in as it wasn't near the scheduled time yet. Only staff from SARFT and people whose programs were halted were allowed inside. This was a press conference, as well as a "reflection meeting" directed at the public. After SARFT sent the directive, all relevant personnels that had programs that breached protocol would have to be present at the press conference to express their heartfelt regrets. Usually, such press conferences were rare, but this was a crackdown period. So those who were banned were used by SARFT to serve as a warning to others as well as to emphasize their importance. They made every disobedient television station or related entertainment industry know who was boss!

Zhang Ye's understanding of the SARFT was rather deep. In his previous world, there had been many similar cases before. For example, the movie "No Man's Land". Was its director, Ning Hao, a big shot? Was he famous? He was the publicly acknowledged #1 director in that world, and the actors for this movie? Xu Jing, Huang Bo, all of them were A-list celebrities. They were even the kings of

movies. With such a big name cast and the production company was also one with the most network of contacts, yet this film had been dragged on for a full few years before it finally screened. The losses were huge, but what was the cause of it all? It was simply because of a word from the SARFT. The film did not pass the checks, so just wait along. If the SARFT says you can't screen it, then you can't screen it!

Was there any other way?

There was no other way! The opponents were the SARFT!

And in this world, Zhang Ye realized that the control of the SARFT towards the entertainment circles was even greater. Zhang Ye's understanding from his world was that if a program had problems, all they had to do was submit a report, admitting their regulatory negligence. If not, there would be a closed-door review by the SARFT. It was nothing like doing the reflectance in public! And even organizing such a large scale press conference? This was driving them into the depths of hell! They could halt a program as and when they wished, without providing a reason. They could just arrange for any charge against them and all one could do was obediently wait to be banned. They even wanted to make Zhang Ye confess his wrongdoings in front of cameras, without giving him a chance to fight back. What sort of authority was this!

.....

Outside the venue.

Zhang Ye had arrived. Wang Xiong and another colleague had accompanied him here.

The reporters had all been waiting outside. When they saw Zhang Ye, they all rushed up with their long lenses and cameras!

"Zhang Ye, what do you have to say?"

"Your program has been halted and this attracted a lot of discussion it. What is your view on this matter?"

This matter was not trivial. Shanghai Television Station and several Shanghai newspapers numbered about eighteen. There were about 20-30 reporters and cameramen!

Zhang Ye looked at them.

What do I have to say?

I only wish to say this to Li Tao— If you don't let me live life smoothly, then don't f**king expect me to let you live your life smoothly! The price of making me, Zhang Ye, fall....is very high!

Chapter 265: During the Live Broadcast!

At the venue.

At the hall on the first floor.

Wang Xiong, Zhang Ye, and company dodged the hounding reporters. After flashing their work passes to the SARFT staff, they were let inside. There were already a few television station staff members and hosts, who had their programs halted, in there. On the podium, Zhang Ye immediately noticed the pot bellied Li Tao and the few Shanghai SARFT officials who had shown up to pass down the directive at his company.

Li Tao was giving instructions.

“Check the microphone.”

“Chief Li, it’s fine.”

“The press conference will be half an hour long and will be fully broadcasted live on a provincial Shanghai station. This is the closure to us making an example out of them. It is extremely important and no mistakes will be allowed. Or else, even if we did well at the beginning, problems at the end would definitely not allow us to pass!”

“We understand.”

“Don’t worry Chief Li.”

After finishing speaking, Li Tao saw Zhang Ye and company in the distance. He ignored them and found SARFT staff who was presiding over the press conference, “Little Zheng, when you are doing the moderating, when it’s Weiwo Video and Dongchu Video’s turn, you can allow the reporters to question them. As for the rest, there’s no need to after they do their reflections. It is also to save on time. We need to guarantee that it can be done in half an hour.”

The one called Little Zheng was stunned before saying, “Yes, Leader.”

Li Tao nodded and left satisfied.

Little Zheng did not ask any superfluous questions, because he knew deep down. Dongchu Video? This was a new WebTV company established just this year. Back then, it was said amongst the Administration that this company “did not play the game”, did not concern themselves with personal connections, nor did they send gifts to the SARFT, hence they were deliberately held in review for a few months by the Shanghai SARFT. Finally, the Dongchu company wrestled with them and passed the application material directly to headquarters before managing to pass the review. Little Zheng believed Chief Li was definitely trying to make it difficult for them. As for Weiwo Video? Little Zheng was not very sure of the situation, but he knew that they had definitely offended Chief Li Tao, or it was due to interests. It could be anything else too, but it was not something a person of his level could understand. He just needed to execute the Leader’s orders.

.....

Zhang Ye did not hear their conversation. He and a few hosts met each other and got to know one another. Maybe they had seen each other’s programs, but did not know each other, nor had they ever met face to face. Now, with them in the same boat, their relationship naturally grew closer.

“Teacher Zhang Ye?”

“Teacher Zhou Hao.”

“Teacher Chen, you came too?”

A few of them stood together to talk, but their tones were full of sighs.

Host Zhou Hao whispered, “What do you make of it? We were doing our programs prim and proper and in accordance with the regulations, yet we were stopping just because they say so.”

Teacher Chen looked at him, “You must have offended someone, right?”

Zhou Hao turned silent, “Hai, don’t mention it.”

Teacher Chen said agitatedly, “I’m the most wronged. My program is a f**king

children's online program, yet it got axed by them. Aren't they forcing me to the gallows?"

Another host said, "Wasn't there some friction with the Shanghai SARFT back when your Dongchu Video submitted the WebTV application? They are probably using this opportunity to settle scores."

None of them would dare say these words to others, but they were now compatriots in the same war trench, so there was nothing to hide. Furthermore, even if they didn't say it out aloud, everyone knew it in their hearts.

Zhou Hao said angrily, "The programs that should be halted aren't, but a large number of those that shouldn't are halted. Teacher Zhang Ye, you must be feeling aggrieved too, right? I've seen your program before. It's really good. However, there are a large number of programs plagiarizing you, yet what was the result? Those programs are all fine and dandy, but only yours has been taken off the air!"

Zhang Ye asked, "Why aren't the other Talk Shows taken off air?"

Teacher Chen sighed, "I've only heard rumors, so it might not be the truth. Apparently, the two online television stations that plagiarized your program have very good relationships with the SARFT official, Li Tao, who is in charge of this crackdown. It seems they paved their connections well when they first applied to be online television stations. Also, recently, there is to be some adjustments to the Shanghai SARFT chiefs, and I heard that Li Tao is definitely going to be promoted. Hence, his power in Shanghai is growing. Whatever he says is the law. Our company had previously worked with a few other Shanghai SARFT Leaders, but it ended up useless. Well, these words should not be said to outsiders. Just us knowing is fine. Hai, anyway, it's such a world!"

There was another female host who said, "Have you all prepared the reflection piece?"

"What's there to prepare?" Teacher Chen said, "Just say a few lines would do. We are all in broadcasting, don't we have that tiny bit of skill?"

Zhou Hao said furiously, "I really don't f**king wish to go up there!"

"What can we do other than going up?" Teacher Chen said, "We have already

spoken to Li Tao, so if you resist him, are you planning to carry on working in Shanghai in the future? As long as we are in this industry, we are under their control.”

Zhou Hao said, “But my program has no problems at all! It has been aired for half a year! Why didn’t they say it was inappropriate during the review? Why didn’t they tell us to change?”

Teacher Chen looked at him, “Even a children’s program like mine was banned. The reason was spreading negative influences to youth. So go have fun at it.”

Through everyone’s exchange, Zhang Ye got a clearer picture of the situation. This crackdown was said to be making an example out of people, but it was actually Li Tao removing people he disfavored or those who did not benefit him! Whether their programs abided to the regulations or not was not Li Tao’s concern. He only focused on the benefit that was brought to him. Clearly, Zhang Ye and the hosts present were abandoned or used as pawns in Li Tao interests’ chessboard!

Suddenly, the reporters surged in. They were allowed in!

The SARFT had arranged everyone’s seats. Zhang Ye and company sat in their respective seats.

Five minutes later.

Little Zheng from SARFT sat at the podium and announced, “Next, the press conference will officially commence. Let us invite Chief Li Tao to announce the outcome of the recent investigations on programs that violated regulations.”

Li Tao strode up the stage high-spiritedly, “Hello dear reporters and friends.”

Then, he announced each program that had been halted. “Web Bikini Show”, “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” ...

The cameras were already rolling and the live broadcast had already begun. Many of the audience, who were paying attention to this massive crackdown on TV programs, were waiting in front of their TV sets. Those who could not receive the signal of the Shanghai’s small provincial station watched it online. The broadcast online was synchronized and at most had about 10 seconds of delay.

Under the stage.

Wang Xiong leaned his head, “Have you decided on what to say?”

“Yes, I’ve already thought of it.” Zhang Ye nodded while replying.

Wang Xiong patted him, “It has been hard on you, but...there’s no other way.”

SARFT—In their eyes was a machete hanging above all their heads. With the directive coming to slash down on them, they did not dare disobey it.

The announcement finished.

Li Tao did not carry on staying on stage as he stepped off stage and sat in the first row, while hugging his shoulders to spectate.

Little Zheng took over the microphone and began the next item on the itinerary, which was to let reporters question as well as the reflections of the relevant staff that had failed to meet regulations.

The first person up was Teacher Zhou Hao and a middle-aged man. The person who spoke was the middle-aged man. He was the Executive Producer of the program that was halted, “As a public television media, we have the obligation to....” After saying a long piece, he finally ended, “Here, I want to represent my program team and my online television station to apologize to the public.”

Li Tao smiled and gave a satisfied nod of approval.

The second person up was Teacher Chen and a few people from his program team.

However, just as Teacher Chen was about to speak, Little Zheng, who was in charge of moderation, said to the reporters, “Everyone can feel free to ask questions.”

The reporters’ mouths were all rabid. The moment they heard this, they began bombarding!

“Teacher Chen, why did you do such a children’s program that violates regulations!”

“Children’s programs are extremely important in a child’s education. Spreading unhealthy information can cause great psychological impact to children, and

might even cause mental scars to them. What do you have to say?"

More than ten questions came!

Teacher Chen's face turned increasingly ugly and was nearly going mad from the questions. However, with his program colleagues reminding him, he still endured it, "I want to express my sincerest apologies. Sorry." Saying that, he gave a slight bow, but his eyes were filled with humiliation and anger! He only had a normal children's program. Just because Little Rabbit's elder sister had been eaten by a bear, they were labeled to be spreading unhealthy information? Teacher Chen had worked for decades and had never been so wronged before. Furthermore, he had to bow to everyone to admit his mistakes! He had to admit to mistakes that weren't mistakes!

Why?

Just because he was up against the SARFT!

Teacher Chen and the other broadcasting hosts did not dare to say or word, nor was it their place to say anything. All they could do was follow what Li Tao had for them. There was no room for discussion. If they blurted something out, it might not be their program getting banned, but being banned in the entire Shanghai entertainment industry from then on. Even if you left Shanghai to work elsewhere to dodge Shanghai's SARFT, as long as Li Tao sat on the seat of power, you would not have a pleasant life. The SARFT from other regions were in cahoots with each other. Did Li Tao lack this bit of connections?

Next was the female host going up on stage. She did not look that much older than Zhang Ye. She was probably a recently graduated college graduate. After she apologized, aggrieved tears began falling when she saw the reporters taking her pictures and Li Tao's smirk on the corners of his mouth!

She cried!

She could not handle it!

Wang Xiong turned his head to avoid the scene. His fists were clenched. The other hosts who shared the same enemy gritted their teeth. This bunch of people from the SARFT were too much a bully!

When the reporters saw the female host crying, they looked at each other

momentarily. They wiped all sorts of expressions from their faces and sighed in their hearts. To speak the truth, all of them knew that that many of the programs these hosts did had no major problems. There were many other programs that had bigger problems in the Shanghai region, but they were fine, while these bunch of hosts were used to set an example!

Was there any other way?

This was the entertainment industry!

Chapter 266: Zhang Ye's "The Answer"!

At the press conference.

The atmosphere had turned gloomy.

A woman's tears was extremely distressing. However, some people were an exception, for example Li Tao. When he saw the female host crying on stage to no end, he frowned coldly and waved towards Little Zheng and then at the female host.

Little Zheng figured out what he meant, as he said to everyone, "It looks like she has already realized the seriousness of her actions. Let's have the next person. Is Weiwo Video here?"

The female host was "helped" down the stage by the SARFT staff.

Wang Xiong was about to stand up.

Zhang Ye held him down, "Me going alone will do."

"How can you bear the responsibility alone?" Wang Xiong insisted.

"One going is no different from two. It's the same, so don't argue with me." Zhang Ye forcefully pressed on Wang Xiong's shoulder to prevent him from getting up.

Wang Xiong hesitated, "...Alright."

Only then did Zhang Ye stand up and adjusted his suit before striding up on stage.

.....

At the same time.

Staff of Weiwo company were watching the live broadcast.

"Hai, Teacher Zhang Ye is going on up!" Little Yu exclaimed.

Dong Shanshan had a deadpan expression. Wang Bei, Ah Qian, and other colleagues, who had good relations with Zhang Ye, all had bad expressions. They were all feeling angry for Zhang Ye! One shouldn't kill after one has apologized! If Teacher Zhang Ye's program had really violated the regulations, then so be it, but he didn't! You were banning his program! And you even want him to follow your requirements to give an apology? This wasn't just bullying! This was sending him to the gallows!

"If it were me, I wouldn't go!"

"Not go? Does Teacher Zhang not want to carry on in this line of work?"

"By taking humble pie and apologizing this time, he can at least carry on working in this industry. If he doesn't even go on up at this point, then he can forget about working in this line."

"The SARFT has always been that tough!"

"Hai, Teacher Zhang has suffered greatly this time!"

Only a few people in the office were smiling in their hearts and happy to watch the fuss. For example the web hosts, who had average relationships with Zhang Ye. Previously, they were envious of a rookie like Zhang Ye having such good results. Now with his program halted, they were naturally gloating.

.....

Online.

Zhang Ye's fans had already exploded!

"Bastard!"

"SARFT is a bunch of grandsons!"

"Did Teacher Zhang kill your father or your mother?"

"Take a look! Even that female host from before cried! Are the Shanghai SARFT people sick? F**k!"

Another bunch of people cursed again.

"Haha, finally I can see Zhang Ye suffering!"

"It's best if he apologizes in a more contrite manner! Show your deep

repentance for scolding my Lee Parkwoo!”

“Zhang Ye, to think you have such a day. Back when you were cursing us Koreans, weren’t you having a great time doing so? Now do you know your faults? Serves you right!”

Another Korean exchange student sounded out!

“Let’s see you curse us Koreans! KeKeKe, you are dumbfounded already, right!?”

“Your China’s SARFT is too good! In our country, as long as cursing China doesn’t go too far, they can be put on TV, and might even get the full support of the television station. Here, sure is good. Not only do you not support your own people, you even kill your own people? I like it! Haha! Well done! This person in charge is called Li Tao, right? I represent the people of Korea to give you a Like!”

The moment a few exchange students said this, a new round of insults began!

How could the Chinese nationalists stand for this? They surged forward with curses!

However, the Korean exchange students’ words made these people feel gloomy. They could only admit that what they had said was the truth. Li Tao, as well as the people from SARFT, not only did not support their own country and even helped the Koreans ban an excellent program bred by their own country. It was really aggrieving those near to us and gladdening the enemy! What was the Shanghai SARFT thinking!? What was that Deputy Chief, Li Tao, thinking!?

.....

At the studio.

The first row off-stage was filled with the Leaders from the SARFT and civil servants.

Li Tao looked up on stage at Zhang Ye with a smile. He was waiting for Zhang Ye’s reflection. He naturally had his considerations on this matter. As for what the outcome was, as for if the program should or should not be halted, Li Tao did not care. If he felt it should be halted, it would be halted. There was no need with any more nonsense! You have your opinions? So what? Ever since the

SARFT merged with the press and publication sector, then all the powers was theirs!

Zhang Ye sat down.

Little Zheng glanced at him, and without waiting for Zhang Ye to speak, he interjected and said to the reporters, "You may begin asking your questions."

Many people noticed that the other program teams, that had violated the regulations were not allowed to be questioned. However, the moment Teacher Chen and Teacher Zhang Ye went on stage, the SARFT staff would immediately allow the reporters to ask their questions. The targeting was too obvious!

Wang Xiong's face turned gloomy!

Teacher Chen, Zhou Hao, and the other hosts were by the side were comforting the tearing female host. She might never have encountered that much injustice before as she was still crying.

The reporters began questioning!

"Zhang Ye, why did you use such gimmicks to attract an audience?"

"Is your program's continuous insult at Korea your personal intentions or the company's intentions?"

"With your program halted due to violating regulations, if you were to start another talk show, how would you do it? Would you carry on making this same mistake?"

"There are many people reporting your program now. There has been a lot of criticism on the internet. I want to know your thoughts on the matter."

"Zhang Ye..."

"Teacher Zhang..."

"Why aren't you speaking?"

"Zhang Ye, please answer us!"

The reporters asked one after another, but Zhang Ye did not say a single response!

Li Tao coldly looked at Zhang Ye. Not speaking? Do you think it's fine if you

don't speak?

Little Zheng frowned at Zhang Ye and said to him, "Zhang Ye, please answer the reporters' questions!"

Everyone believed Zhang Ye would apologize and would then hurriedly get off stage after doing so because his opponent was the Shanghai SARFT! It was because they were an existence that no one in the entertainment industry dared to offend! In everyone's impression, even the most irascible person in the industry was not dumb enough to fight the SARFT, but they were wrong. This world had to have that one exception!

Others did not dare to do such a thing? Zhang Ye dared to do!

Others don't dare to speak? Zhang Ye dared to speak!

Maybe everyone did not have such a concept or had long forgotten that Zhang Ye was not only a professional and dedicated host, he was also a person who dared to curse his unit at the Silver Microphone Awards and his Leader on a live television broadcast! There was no such word as "fear" in his dictionary!

"Zhang Ye!" Little Zheng from the SARFT rebuked him, "Do you have anything to say?" Even an ordinary employee of the Shanghai SARFT dared to speak to Zhang Ye in such a manner. And based on what? It was because of the power that the SARFT possessed!

Question me? Scold me? Entrap me? Wrong me?

You still want me to apologize? You even want me to go according to your wishes and scripts to answer?

Zhang Ye smiled and he appeared extremely calm. He did not have an expression that was preparing to show his remorse. You want my answer? All right! I will give you SARFT "The Answer"! This was a live broadcast, right? Just to my liking. I've said it before. As long as you don't let me live comfortably, I will not let you live comfortably too!

Trying to compare in ability to cause trouble?

Ha! No one in the entertainment industry can compete with me!

At most, I'll just quit! At most, I won't work in the entertainment industry, but

you want me to swallow this today? You guys are too naive!

I'm afraid of all of you?

Go f**k yourself!

The moment Zhang Ye grabbed the microphone, the reporters simmered in their words. Wang Xiong, Teacher Chen, Zhou Hao, and company were all watching Zhang Ye. There were numerous people before the TV either supporting him or watching to see him being ridiculed. They wanted to see how Zhang Ye apologized.

Li Tao chuckled. You couldn't hold on anymore? Weren't you remaining silent? In the end, you still have to apologize.

Then, Zhang Ye spoke. However, the first words he said made everyone present or those in front of their screens dumbfounded!

Zhang Ye indifferently glanced at the SARFT staff and at Li Tao, "Debasement is the password of the base. Nobility the epitaph of the noble!"

Ah!

What?

This was a poem? A modern poem?

No one expected Zhang Ye to start with this! What did it mean? Debasement is the password of the base. Nobility the epitaph of the noble? The derision in those words were too intense! And anyone who knew a bit of literature knew that this poem was not simple from its opening lines!

Li Tao's expression changed!

The staff of the SARFT were stunned by what Zhang Ye said! This was a live broadcast program!

Zhang Ye ignored it and raised his head to look high up, "See how the gilded sky is covered, with the drifting twisted shadows of the dead. The Ice Age is over now. Why is there ice everywhere? The Cape of Good Hope has been discovered. Why do a thousand sails contest the Dead Sea?" A few questions were thrown off stage!

The entire scene turned silent!

Even the cameramen were dumbfounded. They did not know if they should cut off the live broadcast signal!

Zhang Ye smiled. “I came into this world, bringing only paper, rope, a shadow. To proclaim before the judgment, the voice that has been judged.” Upon saying this, Zhang Ye’s tone suddenly changed. He wiped away his smile and deepened his voice, “Let me tell you, world, I—do—not—believe! If a thousand challengers lie beneath your feet, count me as number one thousand and one!”

“I don’t believe that the sky is blue!”

“I don’t believe in thunder’s echoes!”

“I don’t believe that dreams are false!”

“I don’t believe that death has no revenge!”

The moment these words were out, they reverberated in the entire hall!

Zhang Ye smiled once again, “If the sea is destined to breach the dikes, let all the brackish water pour into my heart. If the land is destined to rise, let humanity choose a peak for existence again. A new conjunction and glimmering stars, adorn the unobstructed sky now; They are the pictographs from five thousand years.” Zhang Ye raised his head once again, and looked towards the camera and pointed high up and said in a determined fashion, “They are the.. watchful eyes of future generations!”

What people did, the Heavens were watching!

History will give me my justice!

This was Zhang Ye’s “The Answer”!

It was Bei Dao’s work from Zhang Ye’s world!

Chapter 267: That familiar Teacher Zhang is back again!

The scene at the live broadcast turned silent!

Zhang Ye had answered them!

He used a method that was exclusive to Zhang Ye alone!

He used an answering method that would astound everyone!

After the poem finished, the reporters off-staged gasped. Some stared in disbelief at Zhang Ye, while others wiped the cold sweat from their foreheads. The first row of Shanghai SARFT staff nearly coughed out blood. They were nearly infuriated to death by Zhang Ye's poem. Especially with Li Tao as the highest ranking official in charge of this press conference. Li Tao's face had turned red with anger. Veins bulged from his neck and he looked like he was going to rush up on stage to gnaw Zhang Ye to death. He hated him to the bone!

The others had not reacted in time yet!

A few seconds later, there was an uproar!

"Holy sh*t!"

"This poem..."

"Zhang Ye has gone mad!"

"How is he so daring!? Why is he so daring!?"

"He's cursing the SARFT? Does he plan not to work anymore?"

Many reporters stood up with a rush. They had previously been gathered here by the SARFT. The questions they asked mostly followed the core context of the SARFT's press conference, but at this moment, their attitudes changed. What

replaced their expressions was that of great excitement and interest. The professional love of chaos as a reporter immediately surged up!

What did being on stimulants look like?

It was what they looked like now!

Click! Click! Click! The reporters began to barrage Zhang Ye with camera flashes. Some of them hurriedly used their memory to record down the stirring poem!

It was big news!

This time, the news was major!

Comrade Zhang Ye! Why are you always...so cute!

When the reporters came, they believed that they were here to go through the motions and report according to the usual patterns. They never expected such a shocking scene!

“Zhang Ye is infuriated!”

“Zhang Ye is infuriated once again!”

Some Shanghai reporters were no stranger to Zhang Ye. The airplane hijacking was the first time Zhang Ye appeared in Shanghai, catching the attention of the people. Hence, many reporters had investigated Zhang Ye’s past. However, there were many reporters and SARFT staff who did not understand him.

A young reporter said in surprise, “What does this mean?”

Another female reporter said in a daze, “Why do you mean infuriated once again? Has he done something like this in the past?”

“Far more than that.” An old reporter chuckled, “It’s not only once. This Zhang Ye is extremely notorious in Beijing. Once, at an awards ceremony, he did not show his gratitude after receiving the award, and instead scolded his unit in public. Later on, when he went to a television station, he disrupted a live broadcast at a funeral wake. He cursed his superior in front of the cameras. What newspaper are you from? You haven’t even heard of this matter? Back then, this matter caused quite a hubbub. Later, that Wang Shuixin was arrested. When some people live, they are already dead. When some people die, they are

still alive. Have you never heard this poem?”

The young reporter said, “I’ve heard of it! That poem is so famous!”

The old reporter said, “This poem was written by Zhang Ye. And he had written it out of inspiration on a live broadcast.”

A middle-aged female reporter, who had heard of Zhang Ye before, was recording down “The Answer” and speaking to them at the same time, “When the SARFT held a press conference, I already knew that the name list had Zhang Ye. Later on, someone told me in the afternoon that it was a live broadcast. Then, I was very surprised. I was wondering why the SARFT dared to let him go on live broadcast with his notoriety in Beijing. I was extremely curious and wondrous at how daring the SARFT staff were. I even thought that they had communicated with Zhang Ye to ensure that Zhang Ye behaved and did a honest apology, but who knew that it did not happen! Did they not communicate at all?”

The old reporter was also at a loss whether to laugh or cry, “Yeah. When I heard that it was a live broadcast, I was stunned. I have quite a number of friends in the Beijing television media circles. From what they say, Zhang Ye has long been banned from appearing on live broadcasts there. It’s no different than trying to shield themselves from thieves. The Shanghai SARFT didn’t know?”

A few of the reporters spoke quite loudly.

The first row of Shanghai SARFT staff heard it and turned back in surprise. What? Zhang Ye had previously done this before? And more than once? Holy sh*t! How didn’t we know about it!? Why didn’t anyone tell them? They were the Shanghai SARFT and their scope was only in Shanghai. There was not much interests that intersected with Beijing, and since they were not in the media industry, they could not follow up with so much provincial news every day. Hence, many of them really did not know of Zhang Ye’s notoriety. They subconsciously believed no one in the industry would dare openly challenge them!

“Hurry and stop the broadcast!”

“It’s already too late!”

“Do we stop the live broadcast now?”

“There’s no way to stop it. We can’t end it like that. The effects would be disastrous!”

The SARFT staff were all panicking. They had never encountered such a matter! They had no experience in dealing with such matters! They were in a mess!

“Chief Li!”

“Chief Li, what do we do?”

The SARFT staff looked towards the backbone of the administration, Li Tao.

Li Tao ground his molars so loudly that even the people beside him could hear it, “Carry on broadcasting! We can’t stop it now!”

How could he end the broadcast with a poem that scolded their Shanghai SARFT and him? The negative impact would be even greater! Now, whether he liked it or not, he had to bite the bullet and allow the broadcast to carry on. He had to turn the situation around before the end of the live broadcast. He needed to save the reputation of the Shanghai SARFT!

When Wang Xiong saw the chaos, sweat was dripping down his head. He nearly felt like fainting in his chair. He only had a thought — “We’re doomed!”

The eyes of the other program team staff and hosts, who had been punished, lit up. The female host, who had been crying because of the injustice, stopped crying. She clenched her fist tightly in excitement as she cheered on Zhang Ye in her eyes! The other people like Teacher Chen and Teacher Chou wished they could applaud Zhang Ye! Well said! It was so well f**king said! Debasement is the password of the base! Nobility the epitaph of the noble! The first line of the poem was enough to penetrate straight into their hearts! The shock they experienced was indescribable!

Zhang Ye was speaking up for them!

Zhang Ye was shouting out the rage in their hearts for them!

The female host and Teacher Chen did not possess the courage or guts that Zhang Ye had. They could not go up to say anything. All they could do was stand silently to support Zhang Ye with this gesture!

.....

Weiwo Company.

It was unknown when Feng Guiqin had arrived at the WebTV department office. She was watching the live broadcast of the Shanghai provincial television station!

Feng Guiqin seemed to be in a daze as she stood motionless.

Dong Shanshan covered her eyes, and was at a loss as to what to say!

Wang Bei was holding a bottle of mineral water, as if she was about to drink it, but now, the water in the bottle was splashing on the ground. She wasn't even aware or conscious about it!

Ah Qian said stunned, "I never knew...knew that Teacher Zhang was so fierce!"

The entire WebTV department all knew Zhang Ye was quite a fierce person. From the first day he joined them, he had already cursed out a Human Resources staff member. Later on, while doing talk shows, he would curse anyone he wished on the program. Everyone knew this matter, but, but none of them believed that Teacher Zhang Ye could scold so god damn fiercely!

Cursing the SARFT?

Challenging the SARFT?

And all during a live broadcast!?

For example, the web hosts, Teacher Han and Teacher Gong never liked Zhang Ye. Seeing Zhang Ye on television, scolding the Shanghai SARFT without a fear through a shocking poem, they felt their wits escape them. This was a ruthless person! This sort of person was best not to offend in the future. If they could endure, then endure. They were afraid of his tough measures! As his opposites, they feared him!

Little Yu wiped his sweat, "I heard Teacher Zhang was just like this back in Beijing!"

Feng Guiqin, "I shouldn't have let him go on a live broadcast! Great! Now, this matter is getting serious!"

.....

At the same time.

There was a sensation on the internet!

Zhang Ye's "The Answer" blinded numerous pairs of eyes!

"Hahahaha! Where are those brainless fans of the Koreans? Come on out!"

"Who said Teacher Zhang would apologize? Who said it?"

"That's right! Just now, who was the one who wanted to watch Zhang Ye being ridiculed? You are too naive! Who is Teacher Zhang Ye!? He is the most outspoken person in the entertainment industry! He will apologize? Bull-f**king sh*t!: "I'm really silly. Seriously. I actually believed Zhang Ye would reflect on his actions! I should have guessed! With Zhang Ye's terrible temper! How could he possible bow down?!"

"Aiyah, I'm dying of laughter!"

"Teacher Zhang, you cursed so nicely!"

"I didn't laugh. My blood was boiling with excitement!"

"Teacher Zhang Ye did not disappoint us! Too awesome!"

"What a good 'debasement is the password of the base'! Teacher Zhang Ye is still that Teacher Zhang Ye! You want Zhang Ye to admit his faults? You found the wrong person!"

"Right! The SARFT must be dumbfounded now! They wanted to squeeze a soft persimmon, but haha, they ended up kicking a metal plate!"

"I'm really full of admiration towards Li Tao's intelligence. Didn't you check what sort of person Zhang Ye was for you to decided to ban his program? You even dared to let him go on a live broadcast? Aiyo, damn! I can only say Li Tao, you've won. You have the greatest guts! I still remember back when Teacher Zhang Ye left his job to go to Shanghai for work. We, as the troll army, had reminded you Shanghai counterparts! We already repeatedly reminded you to be careful! Teacher Zhang Ye has gone to your place—This was the sentence we, the troll army, sent to the top 100 places on the internet buzzwords ranking. There was also a translation behind this sentence. It was the same meaning as

the devil entering the village! Why! Why didn't you believe us!? Why didn't you have the most basic vigilance!? No one can save people of such low intelligence! Have you seen it now? Have you learned now?"

"Zhang Ye the mighty!"

"Forever supporting Teacher Zhang Ye! We have to expose the conspiracy!"

"It's been awhile since we've seen Teacher Zhang Ye's anger and prowess. Today, we have seen it once again. I find it so warm and fuzzy. That familiar Teacher Zhang is back again!"

Chapter 268: “The Last Speech” of Zhang Ye!

“Support Zhang Ye!”

“Standing in solidarity with Teacher Zhang!”

“Everyone band together! We must support Zhang Ye!”

“Right, strongly supporting Zhang Ye! Lift the ban on ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’!”

“Return my Teacher Meimei! She cried while apologizing just now!”

“Supporting the return of Teacher Chen’s children program! In the past, I couldn’t understand Zhang Ye, now I understand what he stands for. I’m supporting Teacher Zhang Ye at the same time. Well done!”

“That’s right! Teacher Zhang, well done!”

“Zhang Ye is sacrificing himself to die with the SARFT!”

“Zhang Ye is a person of high morals! He demands justice, even if he dies!”

In the past, whenever Zhang Ye caused trouble, there were many of his industry peers who would comment on it. There would be both praises and curses. However, today, not a single person in the industry said a single word. It was as if everyone had agreed before hand to maintain silence. There was no other reason, other than the fact that this matter was extremely sensitive! No one dared to speak out when it was related to SARFT! If it was not done well, they could end up being banned!

However, a VIP account on Weibo, with a million fans, made a statement. He was not a member of the entertainment industry, but someone who specifically released breaking news or did consumer advocacy. His Weibo name was “A Mouth”. He had exposed many fake merchandises and was known in the industry as one who dared to speak voice his opinion. He said, “In the past people called me ‘A Big Mouth’, saying that I dared to speak my mouth, but only

I know that some words are not meant to be said by me. Today, while watching Shanghai SARFT's news press conference live broadcast, I want to say...Teacher Zhang Ye, you've won. You dare to speak your mouth more than me!"

"Who is Zhang Ye?"

"Ah, Zhang Ye is in trouble again?"

"What's going on? Brother Big Mouth actually admitted that he's inferior to someone? I must take a look!"

The online world was ever so buzzing with excitement. People were more spontaneous online, and they seldom had scruples about speaking their mind. If they liked it, they liked it. If they hated it, they hated it. The reputation of the SARFT wasn't good in the industry. They also suffered a bad reputation in the eyes of the common people. There had been countless times the SARFT banned celebrities that were well-liked. Hence, many commoners had emotions of conflict and resentment deep down!

"The Answer" ignited the emotions of everyone who read it!

"The Answer" pushed the Shanghai SARFT to the forefront!

However, Bei Dao's "The Answer" was a profound poem. Its meaning was not clear like the literal meaning of the words used. It was different from "My Confession" or "Prisoner's Song", which could be understood at a glance. Many people could understand it, but there were also many who could not understand the meaning behind it. They only found the scolding very liberating!

"What's the meaning of this poem?"

"Yes, looking for an expert's interpretation and analysis!"

Finally, someone from Zhang Ye's fan club stepped forward to analyze it. He posted on Zhang Ye's fan club's Tieba, "Many people are saying they can't understand Teacher Zhang's new poem. Let me explain it simply to everyone. I'm limited and my literary standard is far from Teacher Zhang Ye's, so I may not be able to completely interpret what Teacher Zhang wants to express. What I say can only be used as a reference for everyone. Let me first say that the line, 'debasement is the password of the base. Nobility the epitaph of the noble' is the core premise of the entire poem! It is also the most powerful line! Teacher

Zhang Ye is mocking the Shanghai SARFT as lowlife scum who use underhanded tactics to make their lives better, and even to the point of promotion and riches. For gentlemen like Teacher Zhang Ye and others, they have to carry the noble banner to their grave. The good are not rewarded!”

“See how the gilded sky is covered, with the drifting twisted shadows of the dead? Those shadows are an analogy of those nobles! The Ice Age is over now. Why is there ice everywhere? The Cape of Good Hope has been discovered. Why do a thousand sails contest the Dead Sea? Were these two lines a question? No, I believe this is Teacher Zhang Ye’s interrogation! He was interrogating the SARFT, as well as everyone. Then the next few lines push the poem to its climax! Even if a thousand challengers lie beneath your feet, count me as number one thousand and one? Zhang Ye was saying no! And he was saying no to the entire world!”

“I don’t believe the sky is blue!”

“I don’t believe in thunder’s echoes!”

“I don’t believe that dreams are false!”

“I don’t believe that death has no revenge!”

“This was the charm of literature! This was the literary prowess of a top poet! Some people might not understand the profound meaning behind the poem, but I believe when people hear those few words of ‘I don’t believe’, your hearts were be filled with heated blood! Filled with anger! The climax wraps up here too. If it were me, I would have definitely chosen to cut the poem off here, as I would have thought that it was already sufficient. However, Zhang Ye did not do so. He actually became peaceful next. This is the difference between a great poet and a normal literature hobbyist. After I listened to the following lines several times, which I felt were originally not needed, I was suddenly stunned. I then began to realize the ending stanzas were the crowning touch of the poem. If there’s only the earlier portions, the poem would only be considered excellent, but with the final stanza, this poem has personally made me give it an additional ‘great’ label! Let all the brackish water pour into my heart? What sort of feelings are these!? The star-filled sky and an unobstructed sky are the watchful eyes of future generations? What sort of faith is this!?”

“I do not know what feelings Zhang Ye harbored while creating this poem at the moment, whether it be him carrying pangs of anger or him refusing to submit, I know, at least in my heart, this poem is Zhang Ye’s best work! Zhang Ye is China’s greatest poet! His ideals, rage, beliefs, resolve, and unyielding attitude are all so vividly reflected in his works! I cannot comment on whether there are shortcomings in what Zhang Ye does as a person, nor do I have the qualifications to judge if Zhang Ye is a good man or a bad egg, but I can evaluate his works! In the literature development in China, no one can deny Zhang Ye’s outstanding contributions towards it!”

This person was done speaking.

This post had more than a thousand replies the next few moments!

“So that’s how it is!”

“I finally understand it!”

“Teacher Zhang wrote it too well!”

“F**k! This SARFT bunch of grandsons! I want to be like Teacher Zhang! I don’t believe that dreams are false! I don’t believe that death has no revenge!

“The SARFT has really been cursed badly this time!”

“However, hai, Teacher Zhang might really be in big trouble now.”

The moment this was said, many of Zhang Ye’s fans became silent.

.....

There were still brainless fans of the Koreans that carried on cursing Zhang Ye!

“You just needed to apologize and admit that you shouldn’t have commented on our Lee Parkwoo. You even scolded the SARFT? You really don’t know how the word death is written! Who @ us just now? Alright, I admit that I never expected this outcome. I never expected Zhang Ye to use such a method, but Zhang Ye is finished. He’s really finished. This is the outcome. This is also something we would love to see. Hai, you can only blame Zhang Ye for being so foolish!”

“Zhang Ye is really dumb!”

“This is him sending himself to his death!”

“Hahaha, we have finally succeeded at getting revenge for our Lee Parkwoo!”

“The live broadcast is still carrying on. Let’s hurry and see how the SARFT punishes Zhang Ye! He disrupted a press conference. It definitely won’t be light! He can stop thinking about working in the entertainment industry in the future!”

.....

At the press conference, everyone began discussing.

Many people were also concerned about the development in front of their television sets.

Everyone knew that under the situation of the live broadcast carrying on meant that the SARFT would definitely not sit idle!

Wang Xiong winked at Zhang Ye from offstage, motioning for him to stop sitting there and to hurry up and get down!

However, Zhang Ye seemed to not see it. After he finished reciting the poem, he still sat there motionless, as if he was waiting for the SARFT officials to say something. It seemed like he still had words to say.

Li Tao fiercely said, “Microphone!”

A SARFT official quickly brought one to him.

Li Tao stared at Zhang Ye as he held the microphone saying, “Zhang Ye, from what you said just now, I understand it that you are disobeying instructions from higher authorities, while you persist on acting wilfully and arbitrarily as you wish, bent on repeating your mistakes to the end? About the investigation of your program, it was carried out by several departments. It was investigated very thoroughly. The relevant violations and penalties have been made public. Anyone can look it up. You are not satisfied with the directives?”

Another Shanghai SARFT minor official looked towards Wang Xiong, “Wang Xiong, he’s your own man! Take care of him yourself!”

Li Tao began speaking again. At this point, he had already stood up and his face was fierce. It was as if he was gonna barrage and point out the many sins Zhang Ye had committed. He wanted to save the situation and not affect the SARFT’s

reputation. If he did not speak after being scolded by Zhang Ye, then what would happen to their authority as the SARFT!?

However, Zhang Ye did not give him a chance to speak. He too stood up and held the microphone and looked offstage with his eyes narrowed, “Today, I will make a speech, and it can also be “The Last Speech” of mine. We all know that, only a few days ago, the most despicable, the most shameless incident of history occurred in Shanghai. Many of our programs were halted for no reason at all. What crime have we committed to deserve such an ending in unconscionable hands!? I merely used a pen to write a few articles, used my mouth to speak out, and what I said and wrote was nothing more than what any Chinese citizen with a conscience would say!”

Foreigners can scold us?

Foreigners can obstruct us?

We just made fun of them casually with a sentence, with not a single expletive, yet we are blamed by our own people and repressed for it? And instead want to kill us? What the f**k reasoning is that!?

Everyone could read between the lines of what Zhang Ye said!

The reporters also nodded slightly. Many people began to pick up their pens to record it down, recording “The Last Speech” of Zhang Ye!

Zhang Ye stared at them, “We all have pens and mouths. If there is a reason for it, why not speak out!? Why must we be shut down and ban the programs we put our tears and blood into? Why is whatever you say the truth!? To not dare speak openly, but to hide in the shadows to do evil! Setting up tricks to harm us in devious ways! I do not know your intentions, or what your mental state is, or how your hearts grow! Do you think that banning programs and a few people would scare us off? I’m telling you, justice can never be massacred, because the truth will always exist!”

Wang Xiong was stunned as a surge of warm blood rose up!

A few hosts, who were in the same boat as Zhang Ye, stood up one by one. Everyone clenched their fists as their fists trembled!

Zhang Ye said loudly, Maybe today, I would fall, but bright days are coming for

us. Look, the light is before us. Now is the darkest moment before dawn. We have the power to break through this darkness and attain the light! The coming of our light marks the final moment for you! Flip through the history books and take a look! You can take a look! Dark clouds will pass! The light will come!”

Too ruthless!

These words were precise in their ruthlessness!

Li Tao and the SARFT staff panicked!

“Quick stop the live broadcast!”

“Holy sh*t! Don’t let him carry on!”

“Your sister! I’ve seen what an asshole is like!”

“Us shutting you down? It’s more like you f**king shutting us down!”

“Who said we should carry on the live broadcast? What situation is there to f**king save now! Isn’t this Zhang Ye still the only one speaking!?”

“Hurry and interrupt him!”

“We can’t cut him off! He does a talk show! Who can beat him with words!”

Li Tao suddenly stood up and shouted, “Zhang Ye! Do you know what you are saying? You can step down! To smear your superior departments! Misleading the people in a live broadcast! I now announce! From today, your broadcasting host qualifications shall be revoked!” He looked towards Wang Xiong angrily and said, “Your company has to execute the directive!”

The SARFT staff on stage rushed over!

One of them wanted to grab Zhang Ye’s microphone, while the other tried to pull Zhang Ye off stage!

But just as they ran a few meters, Zhang Ye was still speaking, “Today for me to stand here to lecture on stage, I already have nothing to fear. I already have a sacrificial spirit! This morning, the moment I stepped out the door, I didn’t think of stepping back!*”

F**k!

That can’t be necessary, right?

Do you think this is an execution ground!?

The people from the SARFT who came to stop him sped up their pace!

Li Tao also immediately gave the order to stop the live broadcast.

However, at the moment the signal was to be disconnected, Zhang Ye said a sentence that previously shocked and infected his world. It was also the core of “The Last Speech”. Zhang Ye narrowed his eyes and bolstered his chest and neck, as he said coldly word by word to the SARFT staff, “Look and see! Open your eyes wide and see! With one Zhang Ye sacrificed! Thousands and thousands of Zhang Ye will stand up!

The moment this was said, the entire house was stunned!

Li Tao stumbled and nearly fainted!

The female host, who had cried, looked excited. She was no longer herself!

Many reporters clenched their fists as they felt the blood boiling in their hearts!

The other people from the SARFT nearly vomited blood! We cannot let him carry on! If this f**king goes on, it will become a further mess! Them as members of the Shanghai SARFT finally at this day and moment, learned of Zhang Ye’s mouth! It was f**king ruthless!

With one Zhang Ye sacrificed!

Thousands and thousands of Zhang Ye will stand up?

Zhang Ye finished his speech and the live broadcast signal was cut off. However, there was not a single applause for the speech right there and then! After Zhang Ye, who was ‘invited’ down the stage by the SARFT officials, looked at the reporters’ stunned expressions and the gazes of his peers, who had been repressed, he knew and could even hear a heated applause from deep within everyone’s hearts!

This was a perfect speech!

This was the extremely famous “The Last Speech” from his world. After some cuts and embellishment by Zhang Ye, it had been used in this world today!

As a farewell to the entertainment industry, Zhang Ye no longer had any regrets!

He had already told the world what sort of person he, Zhang Ye, was as a person!

Chapter 269: Solidarity from Everywhere!

The live broadcast halted!

The image on the television was interrupted!

After a few seconds of interrupted signal, an advertisement was played at the last moment. From the looks of it, the Shanghai provincial channel was completely caught off guard!

What a great speech!

What a great Zhang Ye!

The people in charge of the live broadcast and cameramen were basically all employees of the television station. When Zhang Ye's "The Answer" came out, they already knew that an incident had happened. The television station's headquarters immediately ordered the site-in-charge and SARFT officials to discuss, but the SARFT officials decided to go ahead with the live broadcast. The officials of the television station knew that the SARFT wanted to salvage the situation, probably by revoking Zhang Ye's status as a host and then reprimand him. It had suited the press conference's theme of having a review anyway. They would then cut the live broadcast off and the whole plan would have taken just a few minutes.

But what they did not expect was that Zhang Ye did not even give the SARFT officials a chance to speak. From beginning till the end, the speaking authority was with him. No one could manage to cut in! The people from SARFT did not know why it turned out this way, but Shanghai Television Station knew. This was because of an extremely talented host's basic qualities and charisma! Zhang Ye had all these abilities. As long as he stood there, as long as he had a mouth, he would be able to control the right to speak. In the world of broadcasting, this ability was called stage presence. In a Karaoke, this ability was called—Mic Hog!

No one could cut in to say anything!

No one could stop Zhang Ye!

Of course, the most critical point was still “The Last Speech”. This was such an earth shaking speech. Every sentence was like a knife, as if it could kill. Whoever heard this speech today was shocked by Zhang Ye’s imposition and words!

.....

Outside.

Those who were watching the live broadcast of the press conference on television! Those who were watching the live broadcast of the press conference online! They were frozen at this moment!

Justice can never be massacred, because the truth will always exist!

When I stepped out of the door this morning, I was prepared never to step back in again!

If I fall! Thousands and thousands like me will.....rise up!?

Zhang Ye’s fearless, impassioned speech laced with anger echoed in their ears. Some people did not even realize they had already dug into their chests with their nails, while others had their eyes turn red without knowing why!

The internet was abuzz with commotion!

As if a grenade had been thrown!

“Zhang Ye! You’re the best!”

“Teacher Zhang! Good one!”

“I will support you for the rest of my life!”

“Teacher Zhang! We stand together with you!”

“F**k your grandpa Shanghai SARFT! I will fight it out with you!”

“Count me in! I will go to SARFT’s website and scold them everyday from now on! Bullies! Such bullies! They can’t do things like that!”

“I’m filled with anger! Why do good people not get what they deserve? Why do they have to oppress Teacher Zhang Ye? SARFT officials! I want to ask why!

When a fan was diagnosed with terminal illness, who was the one who became broke to help his fan? I want to ask why! When our country was insulted and provoked, who was the one who withstood the pressure and fought back through his program! I want to ask why! When a plane was hijacked, who was the one who selflessly fought with the criminals, landed the plane, and saved hundreds of lives? Who? Tell us! Where were you all back then? What are you all doing now? Has your conscience been eaten by dogs?”

“Why does ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’ need to be halted?”

“You’re even revoking Teacher Zhang Ye’s status as a host?”

“Bastards! You guys are too harsh! Are you still humans!”

“When has Teacher Zhang Ye ever offended you? Ah!”

After Zhang Ye’s speech, many neutrals could no longer sit idle. Their anger had been lit as “The Last Speech” of Zhang Ye touched countless people!

“Vindicate Teacher Zhang!”

“How can anyone look on just like that? I can’t watch silently anymore!”

“This might be the last time Teacher Zhang speaks, the last time being on stage. Shouldn’t we do something?”

“I didn’t used to like Zhang Ye much. I didn’t like his temper, his character, nor his works, but today, his speech really grabbed my heart! Hit me right in the feels! When my girlfriend walked into the room just now, she asked me why I was crying. I touched my face and then realized that I was crying! Zhang Ye is right. He’s saying what any Chinese with a conscience would say! Based on what should he be targeted time after time? What did he say that was wrong? What laws did he break? As long as it’s a word from the SARFT, everyone has to carry it out without any complaints? Who do you think you are! The emperor!?”

“SARFT, you are too arrogant!”

“That’s right! You can remove Teacher Zhang Ye! You can also dismiss Teacher Zhang Ye’s host qualifications, but let me use Teacher Zhang’s words against you! The truth will always exist! Zhang Ye may have fallen, but thousands and thousands of Zhang Ye will stand up! Those thousands of people now.... includes

me!”

“F**k! Me too!”

“F**k! Count me in too!”

With this, countless people responded!

Some people clicked ‘Like’, some replied with ‘Count me in’. In just a blink of the eye, this Weibo post had already gathered over 3000 replies!

Soon, Zhang Ye’s speech from the live broadcast had been edited out and was making its rounds on Weibo.

The masses were all gathered to this Weibo post and forwarding it. The number of people who supported Zhang Ye was now 3-4 times more compared to when Zhang Ye replied with “The Answer”.

Suddenly, something happened that no one had expected!

Hunan Television Station’s official Weibo had liked Zhang Ye’s “The Last Speech”. It was indicated clearly!

“Hunan Television Station liked?”

“Is this the official Weibo? F**k!”

“Was it a mistake by a staff member?”

“Doesn’t the official Weibo just announce official news? Isn’t it just an announcement platform? But to give Teacher Zhang’s scolding of the SARFT a Like?”

“This is in support of Zhang Ye!”

“Hunan Station, you are too supportive!”

“We thank you on behalf of Teacher Zhang Ye!”

Not long after, the Weiwo verified account of WebTV host Dong Shanshan also gave Zhang Ye’s video a Like and forwarded it!

Followed by a female host from Hunan Station!

Then followed by a Deputy General Manager of the online television station of Teacher Chen!

Finally, a total of more than a dozen hosts from the industry had Liked the video. Some of them were people whom Zhang Ye knew, like his friends and old colleagues, but it was mostly people he did not know in person! They did not say anything, but just used this way to show support for Zhang Ye! When these hosts did that, their fans also came along and followed the incident!

Finally, a old host, who had since retired from the television industry, called Meng Yixu said something. He was considered a rather well-known person in the circle. Although not a top host, he had a lot of experience hosting many programs before, “Zhang Ye, I’ve paid attention to this young man’s program, but it was just some attention, but after his speech today, I feel that I have to say something. Whatever Little Zhang’s character is like, whatever temper he has, I won’t comment, but his personality and qualities definitely have no problem! A person who can speak like that, how could he be a bad person? He’d rather sacrifice himself to demand an explanation! To seek justice for himself and the others! Just based on that alone, I am inferior to him. I also admire him! What I really want to know now is, who groomed a person like Zhang Ye? With that ‘If I fall, thousands and thousand like me will stand up?’ I suddenly wish to meet Zhang Ye. I want to see what kind of a talent can give a speech that excites the people!”

“Teacher Meng has appeared too!”

“F**k! Teacher Meng is giving his support to Teacher Zhang Ye too!”

“The masses have sharp eyes! SARFT is done for!”

“SARFT’s authority is given to you by the masses! With the masses, having lost our trust, what are you? What are you? You all are damn fucking nothing!”

Beijing Television Station’s Hu Fei also made a stand despite the risks, “I had thought that Zhang Ye could only recite poetry and write some novels and couplets, but who knew that he could give such an earth-shattering speech too! There are many famous speeches in the world, most of them coming from times of conflicts. These years, there have been many speeches and many of those had been commended as outstanding speeches, but to be known as a famous speech, to be labeled famous, there has never been any. Today, after listening to “The Last Speech” of Zhang Ye, I insist on saying that the world of famous

speeches....should include “The Last Speech”! It is that great! He is also that great!”

Online, it was now in a mess!

Some were scolding the SARFT, some openly supported Zhang Ye, some covertly supported him!

To sum it up, Zhang Ye’s speech had put both himself and the SARFT on the cusps of the news!

“The Last Speech”. This was from Zhang Ye’s previous world and was the last work of Wen Yiduo. It was a speech that Mr Wen used to denounce political reactionaries. As to why it was called “The Last Speech”, it was actually not named as such by Mr Wen himself. The people gave that title to it afterwards, because on the day of giving that speech, Mr Wen was assassinated by political secret agents! Zhang Ye’s previous work “Dead Water” at the the Silver Microphone Awards was also a work of Wen Yiduo!

With such a background!

By such a great literary person!

Such an earth-shattering speech that had influenced Zhang Ye’s previous world!

For Zhang Ye to use it to scold the SARFT, it was really overkill. It was as if he had bullied them, but it was the SARFT that had wanted him dead in the first place! Zhang Ye naturally did not hold back! Even if it’s a case of using a cannon to kill a mosquito, so be it! It’s all of you who I want to kill!

You aren’t convinced?

Then bite me!

Chapter 270: A Carefree Soul!

SARFT.

In the press conference hall.

A few SARFT staff members found Li Tao chattering away.

“Chief Li! It’s a total mess online!”

“Right, right. Everyone is scolding us!”

“That Zhang Ye is such a jerk! He’s trying to get us killed!”

“What should we do now? It’s blown up so much that if higher management has any opinions on this, it would be bad!”

“I understand now. Zhang Ye was completely ready to abandon the entertainment industry when he came in here today. He’s planning to go down together! What the f**k! How can there be such a person in the entertainment circle? This is an act of hooliganism! Now everything has been broadcasted live and it was nothing but him scolding us! This incident has too much against us! Where did he get such courage? It won’t be easy for us to handle either!”

The live broadcast was ruined!

The incident had happened!

The SARFT’s plans had all be disrupted by Zhang Ye alone!

Just as Zhang Ye had thought to himself, he was such a person who might not excel at other things, but his skills in blindly causing chaos were godly. No one could do it better than him! The staff of SARFT had guessed right. Zhang Ye had come with the mindset of perishing together. You all want to get rid of me? Want to leave me for dead? You even want me to apologize and reflect on myself? Get the f**k off! If you want me to go down, it won’t be that easy! Even if I were to go down now, this man right here will take a piece of you down with

me! Don't expect either of us to sail off smoothly! No one will get any comfort!

Some people were fearless like that. Those who were barefooted would not be afraid of those with shoes. but once you became famous and temptations increased, with credit to your name, then you would have much more to defend. You would be too careful with things and would no longer be as carefree as before!

But Zhang Ye was an exception!

Even if he had a little fame now, had more fans, and had a promising career to fight for, but when forced into a corner, he could still throw everything down just to fight for what he believed in! He had always been this carefree about things! This was why everyone called him a hooligan and people became more and more wary of him. No one knew when or where Zhang Ye would do something, like the SARFT scandal today. If it were any other person from the entertainment circle, they would not possibly do such a thing at such a place, right?

But Zhang Ye dared to!

And that was what he did exactly!

Li Tao looked at Zhang Ye, who was escorted off stage with hate in his eyes. The darkness was heavy in his eyes, as if he had a killing intent.

But instead, Zhang Ye smiled while he looked back at him. He no longer had the same anger when he gave his speech, "Chief Li, if there's nothing else, I'll excuse myself."

Li Tao pointed at him, "You're done for!"

Zhang Ye asked, "How am I done for? Are you thinking of getting me killed? Sure, I'll wait. I will take on whatever you intend to hit me with!"

Li Tao said, "Don't even think of staying on in the entertainment circle anymore....."

Before he could finish, Zhang Ye interrupted, "That's exactly what I had in mind, so what! Don't threaten me with banning. It won't work. I will just become an honest commoner in the future, but I don't think you will have it good from

now on either. Besides, even if I become a commoner, isn't Weibo still around? The discussions forums are still around? Tieba is still accessible? I will just scold all of you everyday, then I would be stress free after that. I believe that many people like to see me scold you guys. I might even get famous that way." Zhang Ye grinned, "So I intend to make it my job to scold you all, a poem each day, just 5 minutes of mytime every day."

The SARFT's staff panicked!

"Holy sh*t!"

"Zhang Ye, you...."

"How can you be like that!"

"Do you have any sense of virtue!"

"If you scold us, it can considered a crime!"

Zhang Ye looked at him and waved, "Thanks for the reminder, you can rest assured that I won't scold you with any profanities. Just like today."

The people from SARFT nearly fainted!

If it was said by anyone else, they wouldn't have minded. It was just scolding anyway. It wasn't as if they had never been scolded before. To them, it did not hurt or itch them in anyway, but this was Zhang Ye that they were talking about! Zhang Ye's mouth was so wicked. They had just had a taste of it and if they were to be scolded everyday like they had been today, wouldn't it be agonizing to death!? Zhang Ye's poetry and speeches were at the level of them being hallmarks! Even if it were not a poem, a classic sentence like "Debasement is the password of the base" would cause a commotion online, but yet somehow, they could do nothing about it. The SARFT was the greatest authority in the entertainment circle. They had a sword that could silence anyone they raised it upon. However, a wonder like Zhang Ye had appeared today. He was obviously a carefree soul who did not care about consequences, unafraid of the SARFT's authority. Even if the sword were to be swung, he would not blink. He might even stab back at the SARFT. In fact, it looked like he would be stabbing at them everyday from now on!

Having encountered such a carefree soul, the people of SARFT were almost in

tears. What could they do about him? They no longer had any ideas on how to handle Zhang Ye! His program had been halted, his host qualifications were revoked. He had also been banned from the entertainment circle, but.....Zhang Ye did not seem to care at all!

If it's halted, so be it!

If it's revoked, so be it!

If I'm banned, so be it!

As long as you don't kill me! As long as this bro is still alive another day! As long as this bro still has a pen and his mouth, I will play with you all!

Li Tao was extremely angry, "Zhang Ye, don't force me!"

Zhang Ye laughed, "Are you the ones forcing me or am I forcing you all? You've cut off my path and have pinned the falsified charges on me! To even force me to reflect on my actions. Oh, yet you don't let others talk about you? When I said something, it became me forcing you all? You are even fighting back against me in the name of truth?" There wasn't anyone around, so they were not worried about what they were saying. It was already down to this, who's afraid of who!

"Alright! You're good!" Li Tao stared at him coldly.

Zhang Ye shrugged, "I'm flattered, but I'm not as good as you all. You were all born into a higher class than me while our lives are cheap!"

A youth from the SARFT angrily said, "What the hell are you saying!"

Another middle aged man from the SARFT said, "Who says we are of a higher class? Don't label us anyhow!"

Zhang Ye said helplessly, "Alright then, you guys aren't of a higher class, you are all cheap and lowly."

"How dare you scold us!" That person said furiously!

Zhang Ye threw up his hands helpless again saying, "I did not scold anyone. When I praised you of being of higher class, you didn't accept it. I was just speaking according to your wishes!"

There were still a few reporters not too far away.

The few from the SARFT also did not bother arguing with Zhang Ye anymore. They knew that if they kept on arguing with this professional Talk Show host, they couldn't out-speak him, even with 10 mouths!

“Let's go!” Li Tao commanded!

The people from SARFT followed their Leader and left. They did not bother trying to reason with Zhang Ye anymore, but in actual fact.... it was because they couldn't f**ing out argue him!

Chapter 271: A man answers for what he does!

The sky was not dark yet.

The sunset had dyed the sky red.

After Zhang Ye had scolded Li Tao and his SARFT subordinates, he didn't stay for long. He slipped away and walked towards the outside. He did not actually have any prejudice against SARFT as he clearly knew that the person behind all this was actually Li Tao and some others with ulterior motives. Their target was clear to him.

At the door.

The other hosts were all waiting for him there.

Teacher Zhou Hao nodded to him, "Teacher Zhang, it's been hard on you!"

"Teacher Zhang." Teacher Chen looked at him with heartbreak. He gave him a thumbs up, "You're like this!"

The female host, who had cried earlier, also looked deeply at Zhang Ye, "Thank you Teacher Zhang Ye. Thank you for standing up for us, for everyone!"

Zhang Ye waved his hand, "I didn't do this for everyone, I did this for myself. It does not have anything to do with anyone else." After saying that, Zhang Ye did not bother speaking to them anymore. He left them behind and walked away, he did not even wait for his leader, Wang Xiong to leave the place together.

The female host was stunned, "What does that mean?"

Teacher Chen watched the back of Zhang Ye began to shrink in the distance. He couldn't help but feel awed, sighing, he said, "Teacher Little Zhang does not want to implicate us. He wants to shoulder the responsibility for what he said out there. Since he has offended all the people that he could offend, he does not want to drag anyone else down with him. Besides, if this matter reaches the

SARFT headquarters and they order an investigation, who knows if our programs will be restored again. Because there's such a chance, Zhang Ye deliberately avoided us to draw a clear line. He wants to take the blame and leave that possibility for us! Look, Teacher Zhang did not even wait for his company's leader and left. He does not want to implicate Weiwo Company either."

So that's how it is!

So Zhang Ye had such thoughts!

The female host was stunned, "If there's a chance, if there's really a chance that they could order an investigation, would Zhang Ye's program also have a chance of being restored back to broadcast?"

Teacher Chen said, "For us, it's possible. but for him...the chances are close to zero."

Zhou Hao also said, "As long as Li Tao is in charge, Teacher Zhang Ye will never be able to stand again. Although he targeted his speech directly at Li Tao, this was still a slap to SARFT's face. To mess up a live broadcast, would their top management have positive impressions of Zhang Ye? Anyone's program could be restored, but not his."

Another host exclaimed, "We have to accept benevolence!"

"Right." Teacher Chen said, "No matter what the outcome is... no matter whether our programs have a chance of reversal, we all owe Teacher Zhang Ye our gratitude."

.....

Outside.

Zhang Ye exited the Shanghai SARFT building. His cellphone had already been set to vibrate earlier and had been vibrating in his pocket for a long time. He did not know how long it had been vibrating or how many calls he had received. When he took it out to check, there were over a dozen missed calls. There was a missed call from his parent's home, so he called them back first.

"Son!" the call had just connected, but his mother's voice already rang out loud!

Zhang Ye laughingly put the phone far from his ear, “Mum, can you be less loud? My eardrums almost burst because of your shouting. Why are you looking for me?”

His mother said angrily, “What else do you think?! You’ve only been to Shanghai for how many days! Your program has only aired a few episodes! Why did you cause such trouble again? If your eldest young sister and second sister did not call to inform me, I would not have known! Did you.... you really scolded the leader of the Shanghai SARFT? Do you not want to work anymore? The SARFT has merged with the news and publication board already. As long as it’s any job that you can do, it all has to do with SARFT! You rascal! You’re driving me to the grave! Even if you want to scold, do it quietly. Why did you scold him on a live broadcast!”

He listened to his mother’s nagging criticism.

Zhang Ye was not bothered by this, so he said, “Mum, I’ve already scolded anyway, so don’t bother yourself with this and tell Dad not to worry either. At most I will go overseas to develop my career. At most I won’t work in the entertainment industry anymore. I can go back to university and be a lecturer, teach students about history and literature. I won’t starve to death.”

His mother brushed him off, “How much glory can a teacher get compared to a celebrity?”

On the other end, his father’s voice could be heard, “If there’s really no way out, let Little Ye come back. Why should he suffer their wrath over there!”

His mother passed the message, “Your dad wants you to come back.”

“I heard it.” Zhang Ye laughed, “Sure, let’s see how it goes in the next few days.”

After hanging up, Zhang Ye saw that he had too many missed calls. They were all from his friends, but he did not really want to respond to them now. He knew they all meant well and were concerned for him, but he did not know what to say. He looked at the time and switched off his phone. Behind him, he could see the reporters were catching up to him, so he quickly hailed a cab and left the place.

“Where to?”

“Please go to Weiwo Company.”

“OK.”

The cab driver drove off.

.....

The unit.

At this moment, many people had already clocked out.

But the WebTV department colleagues still stayed around. Because of the press conference, most of them stay behind to watch it. They were watching it until now.

There was quite a bit of commotion in the office.

“There’s no reprieve for Teacher Zhang this time!”

“Aiyo, how did it become like this!”

“That Li Tao was biased in the first place. Now with this incident, it would be a wonder if he let Teacher Zhang off. Teacher Zhang is too bold!”

“He’s more than bold! He’s bolder than the skies!”

Initially, they thought that poem, “The Answer”, was already earth shattering, but who knew that an even more earth shattering one would appear. With such an awesome poem, it did not even signal the end. It was followed by an earth and sea shattering “The Last Speech”, with wave after wave of ruthlessness! Each wave ‘wavier’ than the last! During the live broadcast, the staff members of SARFT could be seen wearing ashen expressions. From that, it showed what the atmosphere of the location was like! It could be deduced how much hatred Li Tao and his staff had towards Zhang Ye! It was relentless!

His colleagues were still shocked by Zhang Ye’s guts. They were still in awe of Zhang Ye’s literary prowess. In the past, they had only heard that Zhang Ye was a talented scholar back in Beijing. He had written several great works and had even slapped the faces of several elders in the literary and poetry stage. Even though they had not witnessed these events in person, they did read Zhang Ye’s

works afterwards. They could never understand the atmosphere and mood of those events, but today, they had witnessed it first hand and seen the Zhang Ye's talents. They could only be impressed!

Zhang Han looked at Feng Guiqin, but did not dare to say a word. Then she asked, "Director Feng, will Teacher Zhang Ye still be able to host a program? Will his hosting qualifications be revoked? Does Li Tao have this authority?"

Feng Guiqin slowly replied, "It not simply a matter of revoking his status anymore. With Little Zhang's rage this time, he might not be able to re enter the entertainment circle anymore!"

"How could that be?!"

"Eh, that's such a pity!"

"Teacher Zhang's talent is too outstanding!"

"If Zhang Ye's going to be given the cold shoulder, then...."

Many people had turned quiet. Even if Feng Guiqin did not say it, they already knew it in their hearts.

Suddenly, someone looked towards the door in shock.

"Zhang Ye!"

"Teacher Zhang!"

"Holy sh*t! You're back?"

Everyone else looked over as well and saw Zhang Ye appear outside the door, as he prepared to walk in with a very relaxed deposition. Looking at his footsteps, his expression, it did not show a hint of someone who felt he had created big trouble. It was as if he had gone out for dinner and returning blissfully.

Feng Guiqin flashed a face of anger, "Little Zhang, get over here!"

"Director Feng." Zhang Ye smiled and walked over, "I'm sorry, I have to bid farewell to the entertainment circle. Your kindness to me, I will definitely return in the future."

Feng Guiqin said with a sunken expression, "You still know how to be sorry?"

How could you speak in such a manner! That was a live broadcast! Do you know how many people were watching?!”

A WebTV mid management leader beside Feng Guiqin also said, “Little Zhang, you were too impulsive!”

“I know, but if given another chance, I would still do the same thing. If I don’t scold them, I would never get over it!” Zhang Ye said unrepentantly, “Leader, I understand the consequences of the matter and I’m ready to bear it. I’ve come here now...to hand in my resignation!”

“What?”

“Why resign?”

“Even if you can’t be a host, you can still do other things!”

“Yea, you’re so good at program production planning... you don’t have to quit!”

The colleagues from WebTV were all giving their two cents. In the past, everyone had some misunderstanding of Zhang Ye and felt that he was not easy to get along with. They assumed that his temper was not good either, but after watching today’s live broadcast, they no longer had any bias against Zhang Ye. A sincere person who dared to walk the talk, was easily trustworthy. You would never have to worry that a person like that would stab you in the back!

Zhang Ye smiled and said, “Thank you everyone, but I’ve already made my decision.”

Dong Shanshan glanced at him, not saying a word.

Feng Guiqin said flatly, “I don’t accept!”

“Even if you don’t accept, I still have to resign.” Zhang Ye firmly took out a resignation letter, “I’ve written this while on my way here.”

Feng Guiqin seemed to have understood clearly, “You don’t wish to implicate the company?”

Zhang Ye said, “Nothing like that, I just don’t wish to work anymore. I also want to take a break for a while.”

However, Zhang Ye's explanation was not believed by anyone. Anyone with brains knew that Zhang Ye's sudden resignation was because he did not want to implicate the company, the staffs, and the other programs after the live broadcast incident with Li Tao. So when he returned from the SARFT, he had immediately submitted his resignation, to draw a clear line between the company and himself. He did not want the company to bear the brunt of Li Tao's suppression — This was Zhang Ye. He could be an asshole and a hooligan, but when it was time to be responsible, he would take it all!

Zhang Ye left the resignation letter on the table, "Whether or not you accept, I am leaving today. Thank you for always trusting me." Then he turned to his colleagues and said, "Thank you everyone for taking care of me all this time." Saying that as he waved to them, "I'm leaving, till we meet again!"

Chapter 272: That “Sunflower in the Sun”!

At dusk.

Zhang Ye turned to leave.

“Teacher Zhang Ye!”

“Reconsider your decision!”

“Yea, it might not be that serious!”

“Right, it should not affect us. Since it’s such a big incident, the upper management might even call for an investigation. You still have a chance to continue hosting your program!”

A few colleagues, who were on good terms with Zhang Ye, tried their best to keep him.

Even Teacher Han, who wasn’t exactly on good terms with him said, “They’re right. There is still a chance, you should wait a for some tiem.”

After a few minutes,

Zhang Ye still headed downstairs.

The others were also about to go, so they left together.

Downstairs, Wang Bei said, “Teacher Zhang, why don’t you give in and apologize to SARFT. At least placate the situation!”

Little Yu said, “Correct, correct, correct, you’ve scolded them enough anyway. Your anger should have been placated. Let’s just lower our heads for the moment and offer them a symbolic gesture. They were wrong to halt your program in the first place, so it’s not a logical decision. I don’t think Li Tao would want the matter to get out of hand and wouldn’t be too hard on it. Those officials have more rules to follow than us. If you offer to do self-reflection first,

they might not even revoke your hosting qualifications.”

Zhang Han blinked a few times and clapped, “That’s right. Li Tao surely would not want the issue to spread. It would not do them any good either. If you apologize, it would mean you are giving face to Li Tao and a platform for him to stand on. Although the issue would be difficult to explain, at least it won’t worsen!”

Ah Qian also nodded, “That’s the only choice. Although it might not work, if Teacher Zhang wants to continue staying in the entertainment circle, that’s the only way out. Even if his hosting qualifications might not be restored, at least he can continue on in other fields in the entertainment industry. Like acting in a movie or writing a novel. It’s better than being banned from all fields!”

“Zhang Ye.”

“What do you think, Teacher Zhang?”

“Just act like you mean it!”

Everyone was thinking of how to help Zhang Ye, but only Dong Shanshan, his old classmate understood him best. She did not even offer any persuasion. Not a single word from beginning till now.

Zhang Ye shook his head, “Thanks everyone, there’s really no need to.”

Wang Bei frowned, “Why not? You really do not want to stay on in the entertainment circle?”

At this moment, everyone had arrived downstairs. They were heading out of the office building as they saw Wang Xiong rushing towards them.

When he saw Zhang Ye, Wang Xiong pointed at him harshly, “You, you sure are indescribable!” then he walked quickly to Feng Guiqin and admitted his mistake, “Director Feng, I’ve failed to perform my duty this time. I did not watch over Little Zhang well enough. That’s why.....”

“It’s not your fault.” Feng Guiqin sighed.

Wang Xiong quickly said, “There’s quite a lot of reporters outside looking for Zhang Ye. I’ve told security to block them off, but there’s too many of them, at least a few dozens!”

It came to no surprise as Zhang Ye had flagrantly challenged Li Tao and the Shanghai SARFT. He even came up with such a poem and a speech. It would be a surprise if the reporters did not come looking for him. This was big news in Shanghai with no precedence, so how could there not be an uproar!

Their shouts arrived before their person!

“Teacher Zhang!”

“Zhang Ye! Please accept our interview!”

“Why can’t we go inside, please open the doors!”

“We will leave after we ask a few questions! Teacher Zhang!”

The reporters had blocked off the main door. Some were carry video cameras, while others were holding recording pens.

Wang Xiong immediately looked to Zhang Ye and said, “Little Zhang, it’s still not too late to save the situation. Just tell the reporters that you wish to apologize to SARFT and explain that you said things impulsively earlier or that you had a drink too many. Whatever reason is fine, I know you can’t take this lying down now. but this matter needs to come to an end, with a step backwards. Otherwise, don’t even think about staying in the entertainment circle and developing your career in the future. When that happens, you definitely become even more indignant!”

“That’s right, Teacher Zhang!” Wang Bei kept up her persuasion, “Just take a step back and leave a chance for yourself. You can settle scores with Li Tao again in the future when there’s a chance!”

“Director Wang and Teacher Wang are right!”

“Even if you don’t think for yourself, think about your fans!”

Everyone had good intentions. They did not want to watch Zhang Ye go down just like that. He had so much more talent to show for, but had lost the right to show it because of a moment’s anger. That would be such a pity!

Whew!

The main doors were being forced opened!

A bunch of reporters had rushed in and the security couldn't stop them!

Wang Xiong quickly whispered, "Little Zhang, remember what we said. It's all for your own good!"

In a short ten seconds, the reporters had surrounded Zhang Ye, Feng Guiqin, Wang Xiong, and the others!

A female reporter excitedly said, "Teacher Zhang Ye, I am a reporter from The Shanghai Daily. We would like to ask if you thought of the consequences when you said those words at the press conference earlier?"

A middle aged reporter held up his pen recorder asking, "The SARFT has already revoked your qualifications as a host. You might not be able to do any programs in the future. Regarding this, what do you have to say? Do you regret what you said? After all, this will completely cut off your career path!"

A young reporter emerged from the group from the front and asked, "Teacher Zhang, we heard that you were famous for being very outspoken in Beijing. You don't hold back. We have witnessed this today in Shanghai too. What do you have to say about yourself? Also, regarding this incident and the punishment meted out by SARFT, will you be releasing a statement of apology?"

Wang Xiong, Wang Bei, Ah Qian, and the others all looked at Zhang Ye. Apologize! Just admit you were wrong for now! Even if it's not a straight out apology, at least explain that you handled things wrongly during the live broadcast! Similar incidents had happened before in the entertainment industry. Like a certain actor who had blasted his director, like a certain celebrity blasting their management agency... these incidents all ended with an apology. Sometimes, people say things in the heat of the moment, an apology will ensure survivability. There was nothing to be ashamed of!

After the question was raised, everyone turned silent!

The reporters were waiting for Zhang Ye to speak. Weiwo colleagues were also waiting for his answer.

As the defendant, Zhang Ye was still carrying the same smile face from before. At this moment, he had no worries and was feeling relaxed. Apologize? Let me admit that I was wrong?

Alright then.

Let me reiterate the type of person I am once more today.

The setting sun was still up, as it shone down on the company's courtyard. At the side of the courtyard was a fenced area. Planted in it were some flowers and plants with some tall growing sunflowers. Although the weather was turning cold and the sunflowers were beginning to wilt, it still stood tall in there. The colors were still very beautiful.

Zhang Ye spoke. He did not answer anyone's questions, but pointed to a corner, "Do you see it?"

Oh?

What do you see?

The reporters and the company colleagues were stunned as they all looked towards the corner.

Zhang Ye walked towards the corner step by step, "Do you see that sunflower in the sun? You see, it didn't bow its head. but turned its head back, as if to bite through, the rope around its neck, held by the sun's hands." With a pause, he softly said, "Do you see it? Do you see that sunflower, raising its head, glaring at the sun? Its head almost eclipses the sun. Yet even when there is no sun, its head still glows!" While he spoke, he had already walked to the garden.

The sunflowers did not bow its heads?

Even when there is no sun, its head still glows?

The reporters were stunned. So were his colleagues!

It was an obscure modern poetry! Zhang Ye had just opened his mouth and another poem was born! Holy shit! What kind of talent do you have?! How much do you have in your stomach!? Other authors and poets, even if they were famous depended on inspiration! Sometimes, they might not be inspired for several months at all, but you!? You come up with one randomly! And another one again randomly! Just how many did you come up with in this past hour? And each and everyone of them did not have any flaws! They were all classics! This is too exaggerated!

The poem was not done yet, it had not reached its high point, but the people who heard it already had their feelings evoked by the first few line. They were now staring at Zhang Ye without blinking!

Zhang Ye stood in silence beside the sunflowers and looked back at them. Then he said to them.

“Do you see that sunflower?”

“You should get closer to it!”

“Get close and you’ll find!”

Zhang Ye put out his finger and pointed it at the bottom of the sunflower, then at his own feet.

“The soil beneath its feet, each handful of soil!” His final words were said with a thick accent, “would.. ooze with blood!”

The reporters understood everything and were stunned by Zhang Ye’s poem!

Wang Xiong, Wang Bei, Ah Qian, and the others kept listening. They looked at each other and at this moment knew unanimously that there was no use in trying to persuade Zhang Ye anymore!

“Sunflower in the Sun”! — This was Zhang Ye’s attitude!

He had expressed it very clearly!

Then, Zhang Ye did not answer anymore questions from the reporters. He turned around and walked off.

The reporters did not force it because this poem of Zhang Ye’s had already expressed many things. It was enough material for them to go back to complete their jobs. Besides, even if Zhang Ye were to answer any questions or say anything, it would certainly be nothing compared to a poem of his! Who didn’t know that Zhang Ye’s poems were worth a thousand gold! With this poem, the reporters’ eyes had all lit up! There was enough news material for tomorrow! They would use this poem!

This work of course did not exist in this world. This was a famous work composed by the famous poet, Mang Ke from Zhang Ye’s previous world — “Sunflower in the Sun”. This poem was used originally to beat down on

autocracy, to pursue freedom and realization of self-worth, advocating an independent personality, but Zhang Ye was expressing it with some differences. He was reiterating to everyone what sort of person he was and also to speak sarcastically about Li Tao and his staff!

The sunflower is inseparable from the Sun!

But even so, even if it twisted its head off or to drain its blood, when it needed to fight, it would stand tall and proud while glaring straight at the Sun angrily!

Zhang Ye's "The Last Speech" had a great influence on everyone. Some familiar faces had appeared and there were also new faces who joined in the denouncement army. They were all here to support Zhang Ye. The people applying to join Zhang Ye's Tieba also steadily increased. Zhang Ye was supposed to be bidding farewell to the entertainment circle and had almost no chance of making a comeback. but after that press conference, in which he was banned and sentenced to "death" was over, his popularity increased instead. In fact, his fame was soaring!

The fanclub member numbers had increased by 30%!

Zhang Ye's weibo followers also increased by a 100%!

Several major discussion forums left a good spot for Zhang Ye on their news section. They made the press conference from last night a highlight!

Then, Zhang Ye's "Sunflower in the Sun" that he had recited at the reporters last night also appeared on many Shanghai morning newspapers. The online press also began to comment on it!

"It's another classic modern poem!"

"Teacher Zhang Ye's accomplishments in poetry are really a wonder of the world!"

"This was something said casually! And can you tell from it? The poem might seem to expound and describe Zhang Ye's character, but in fact, it was still scolding the SARFT and Li Tao in the end. There was not a single phrase that was used to scold in the text, but it perfectly described Li Tao and company as the Sun, but the more you f**king do it this way, the more powerful the cursing is that touches the heart! It was the same as "Dead Water", "The Answer", "Some People", and even "Self-mockery". In the area of sarcastic poems, Teacher Zhang Ye had long since reached to the acme of perfection! The sunflowers under the sunlight! This was in fact describing the entertainment industry under the SARFT, but the video of the situation has not been posted. Hurry and post it! Hurry and let us all see the actual scenes! Just from the text version of 'Sunflower in the Sun' is not forceful enough! Teacher Zhang Ye's modern poems are still the most shocking when seen live! Zhang Ye's words, movements, expressions cannot be isolated. They are a complete whole, and it the way Zhang Ye expresses his

literature!”

“Right!”

“Pleading for the video!”

“Not a single of Teacher Zhang’s works can be missed!”

Maybe it was because they heard the pleas of the people, a Shanghai newspaper immediately posted a video of Zhang Ye reciting the poem under the setting sun from last night on its official website. A staff of this newspaper agency had carried a camera back then, and had managed to record it perfectly.

The video was revealed!

“Do you see that sunflower?”

“You should get closer to it!”

“Get close and you’ll find!”

“The soil beneath its feet, each handful of soil, would ooze with blood!”

Zhang Ye’s figure stood under the setting sun, beside the almost withering sunflower was imprinted into the hearts of many!

Zhang Ye’s fans were seething with excitement!

“Wow!”

“It’s too awesome!”

“Indeed, this video gives you the feels!”

“Teacher Zhang Ye, you are so f**king handsome! So handsome!”

“Although Teacher Zhang has average looks, his courage and personal charm is nothing anyone can compare with. What Lee Parkwoo, he’s worth nothing. Handsome, my ass! Our Teacher Zhang is what’s truly handsome!”

“How is Zhang Ye average-looking? He looks very handsome in my eyes! I even want to marry him!”

“Brothers, what are we waiting for!? The war gong has sounded! Today we must let Li Tao and that bunch of people see! We would rather die than become marionettes! There’s not only Teacher Zhang Ye! There’s still us!”

The moment “Sunflower in the Sun” appeared, it was as if it had given them additional ammo!

Under the lead of Zhang Ye’s few hardcore fans, everyone charged towards the Shanghai SARFT official website. Some flooded the page, some cursed, and some went to speak reason with them. What touched ZhangYe greatly was that even ZhangYeNumber1Fan, Yang Lian, had appeared. Zhang Ye had been in contact with Yang Lian’s family in the past few days to ask about her condition. He knew that Yang Lian had just successfully completed the first operation, but she was still not completely recovered. Due to cellphone signal interference, cellphones were prohibited in the wards. Maybe because she had remained in the hospital ward for such a long period of time, Yang Lian had somehow managed to find a cellphone to log into her account, using her little amount of strength to cheer on Zhang Ye!

“Aiyah!

“Number1 is here!”

“Are you feeling better!? Hurry and rest!”

“Right, you aren’t allowed to use cellphones there. Leave this till after you have recovered!”

Zhang Ye’s fanclub all knew the fan leader, Number1. They also knew of her story, so the moment they saw her appear, they hurriedly urged her to rest.

However, Yang Lian wrote, “When I was at my most helpless and difficult times, it was Teacher Zhang Ye who helped me and saved my life. Now, when he is in trouble, I will naturally come!”

“Alright!”

“Number1 said it well!”

“Everyone has a chance to fight alongside each other again!”

“That’s right. I really missed those days! Troll army gather!”

“Eh, where’s Big Saber Bro? I saw him just now, but why has he disappeared in the blink of an eye? It was not easy for everyone to gather, so we can’t be lacking Big Saber Bro!”

“Don’t bother looking for him. While you guys were busy chatting, Big Saber Bro had already gone to flood the Shanghai SARFT website. He has already flooded it with more than 300 messages!”

“Holy sh*t!”

“Big Saber Bro is so f**king fast!”

“Big Saber Bro is too empowering! He only acts and never talks!”

“Onwards! Let’s go on up to! Let’s not let Big Saber Bro fight alone!”

“I’m here too! F**k it, count me in!”

“Eh, who’s that upstairs? I’ve never seen you in the fan club before?”

“I’m just a passer-by, but this time, I really cannot stand it. I came specially to support Zhang Ye!”

“I’m a passer-by too. A twenty year old experienced ultra-nationalist. Count me in for this battle! They are indeed going too far! They really think we are easily bullied!”

“Count me in!”

“Me too! Let’s go together!”

“I am a fan of Teacher Chen’s children’s program! Let’s go!”

“Teacher Zhou Hao’s fans are here to help! All for one, and one for all!”

People from everywhere came here by word of mouth. Some were fans of the hosts who had their programs banned, while some of those that came to help were people who could not stand what had happened. Finally, there were also quite a number of trolls that came to join in the fun. Commoners tend to pity the weak, so with Zhang Ye banned, they ignored everything. Some didn’t even know of the background ongoing or what had really happened, but just with Zhang Ye’s shocking works with “The Answer”, “The Last Speech”, and “Sunflower in the Sun”, they all rushed here to help without thinking!

Zhang Ye was right!

With one Zhang Ye sacrificed!

Thousands and thousands of Zhang Ye will stand up!

The Shanghai SARFT seldom had a lot traffic flow, and their servers had always been quite old. Their website staff only had average skills, and were not professional web administrators. The server could only sustain a limited load, hence in half an hour, the entire Shanghai SARFT official website was paralyzed. Many of those who knew of the ongoings behind the scenes were not aiming for the SARFT, but at Li Tao and his inspection team! A large portion of flooding messages on the website were cursing at Li Tao! Every injustice had its perpetrator, every debt had its debtor! This mass halt of programs was too controversial. Those pirated programs that plagiarized and should be halted were not halted, but those which should not be halted, such as a childrens' program and the original Talk Show program were halted! This was also because Li Tao had been too underhanded in his execution. He used the governmental policies of being able to suppress movie and television programs for his own interests! This caused the current controversy! Actually, if he had been a bit more restrained, by stopping a few programs that were obviously in violation of the regulations or plagiarized programs, it would not have led to such a situation!

Despite the Shanghai SARFT being on the verge of collapse due to the criticism directed at Li Tao, the SARFT did not put out an official word. They made no action!

Many netizens had already guessed and had expected this. The higher management might not care about this matter, or they pretended not to see it. However, even if they were guesses, the people still could not accept it, so the curses grew in intensity! The emotions of the people also became angrier!

The website was finally hacked!

Many people began to curse Li Tao on Weibo!

Numerous people emerged to @Li Tao on Weibo. His name began trending almost instantly!

.....

Morning.

Shanghai SARFT. In an office.

Li Tao was sitting in the room, smoking. A young civil servant rushed in to report to him!

“Chief Li! Our official website has crashed from the traffic!” The youth wiped his sweat, “It has already hung! There’s no way for it to run normally!”

Li Tao said angrily, “What?”

The youth said, “It seems it’s all due to Zhang Ye’s fans and those trolls!” With a pause, he said carefully, “And, last night, Zhang Ye seemed...seemed to have composed another poem.”

Another poem?

Li Tao quickly opened a webpage, and after seeing “Sunflower in the Sun”, he slammed his table angrily. With a loud thud, “That damn hooligan!” Yesterday, Zhang Ye had said to his face, that his future job was to scold them, and it was a scolding a day. Back then, Li Tao believed Zhang Ye was just speaking on the spur of the moment and was nothing much. He never expected that in less than a f**king day, which was yesterday or the day itself, Zhang Ye had already come up with a new poem to curse them? F**k! Why did we offend such a hooligan!?

A hooligan!

A piece of sh*t!

A piece of stinking gum!

This was their impression of Zhang Ye in their hearts!

Li Tao nearly died from infuriation. Against such a fellow, he really could not hide. Li Tao had seen many hooligans in his life, and he had taken care of several of them. Didn’t they become obedient under his department’s power? However, for an outrageous and shameless person like Zhang Ye, this was the first time he and his Shanghai SARFT had ever seen this type of situation! They were experienced in dealing with disobedient people. However, against Zhang Ye, who was fearless against anything, and was like a shameless stone in a rural toilet—smelly and impervious, they had no experience at all!

Chapter 274: The Target of Scrutiny by the SARFT!

In the day.

The warm sunlight shone into the room.

There were too many calls — Zhang Ye switched off his cellphone.

Online, information was a mess — Zhang Ye disconnected from the internet as well.

He went to the living room to get a flask of water, a tea cup, and some Pu'er tea leaves and went back into his room. He sat at the window under the sun and made some tea for himself. Shaking the tea cup and inhaling the fragrance, Zhang Ye sipped and tasted the tea. His eyes were focused on the view of the garden below.

At this moment, Zhang Ye's mind was at ease. He thought about his actions from the previous evening. It was true that he was impulsive, but he did not regret it.

Exit from the entertainment circle from now on?

Give up his dream of becoming the top star of this world?

Zhang Ye placed his cup of tea gently onto the window sill. He felt that he could not do that, but what should he do from here? What path should he take? He needed to think about it, maybe he should become a singer? He couldn't get away from SARFT! Be an actor? He couldn't get away from SARFT! Even if he were just writing novels, he would not be able to get away from what was called the News, Publication & Broadcast SARFT! Now that Zhang Ye had somehow walked into a corner, his chances of turning around was not big!

What should he do?

In the entertainment circle, no matter what he chose to do, everything seemed to involve the SARFT!

And to be honest, Zhang Ye was reluctant to let go of his “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”. He really couldn’t bear leaving it. He had spent too much effort and time on this production. Just the amount of Reputation spent on buying Memory Search Capsules to sort out the segments for this program alone was worth too much! For this program, Zhang Ye didn’t get much sleep for the past few days. Sometimes, he would even work into the night and sleep at the recording studio. He would even eat there. With all that blood and sweat used to produce this program, it would now be halted after just a few episodes? No matter how Zhang Ye thought about it, he could not accept it. If it were possible, he would like to have continued his own Talk Show. He would need at least another month to finish recording the first season of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”. Otherwise, how was he to put it as his representative work to others? What was a representative work? Oh, it would be “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” that ran for 4 or 5 episodes? How could you call that representative work!? It would be like a 2 hour movie that you only filmed for 10 minutes. Who could acknowledge that to be a classic?

The cancellation of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” was too hurtful for Zhang Ye. This was the reason for his rage at the SARFT press conference!

How could he revive the show?

Was there any other way?

Zhang Ye shook his head, he no longer carried much hope. He could only take it one step at a time, observe the situation, and wait for new developments. If there was no other way out, he could use his own money to rent a recording studio to continue recording his Talk Show and post it online under his own name. This might end up infringing Weiwo’s copyright and there was a possibility that the conditions and funds would be insufficient. This would affect the quality of the recorded program and there would also not be proper promotions leading to less visibility for the program. However, Zhang Ye was determined to finish his Talk Show. It needed a proper ending. All of these contributed to his achievements. Only if he really did not continue on in the entertainment industry, would Zhang Ye ever give up on these achievements and results. He had already gone past the point of no return.

Noon.

He began feeling hungry.

Zhang Ye strolled over to the fridge and pulled open the door. There was still leftover food from yesterday, so he took it out and heated it in the microwave. He finished everything up.

After eating, Zhang Ye washed the dishes and cleaned the table. Suddenly, he felt really comfortable and relaxed since putting aside all his work.

His mood was also better.

Zhang Ye switched on his cellphone and messaged Dong Shanshan: "Coming back tonight for dinner?"

Di, di. She replied very quickly: "I will be, what do you want to eat?"

Zhang Ye typed: "Don't bother yourself with it today. I will get it settled. I will order some takeout in the afternoon. Shall we get some wine?"

She replied: "Anything is fine."

Zhang Ye: "Red or white?"

She replied: "I'm fine with either. This lady will let the man decide."

Zhang Ye smiled: "Alright then. I will wait for you tonight."

He switched off the cellphone and put it away. Zhang Ye did not want to think about anything else, he just wanted to relax for the day. He did not go online and had broken off all connection to the rest of the world. Then, he walked over to the balcony where the landlord left a treadmill machine. Zhang Ye, who was in his pajamas, stepped up and starting running. All these days, he had been busy with his job, working continuous days and nights. His physical health had deteriorated and since he had finally managed to catch a break, he decided to start training again. Firstly, it was good for his health. Secondly, his Taekwondo and Taiji Fist techniques depended on his physical condition. If his strength and reaction were better, so would the power of those techniques.

2PM in the afternoon. Zhang Ye finished running and was sweating profusely.

3PM in the afternoon. After showering, Zhang Ye went out to the supermarket

and bought 2 bottles of red wine. He did not have any wine glasses at home, so he bought some of those too.

After reaching home.

He took the key and opened the door.

When he pushed open the door, he was stunned for a moment, “Hey, you’re back? It’s only 3PM.”

Dong Shanshan was standing in the living room. It was obvious she had also just stepped in and put down her bag. She was now tying up her hair into a bundle. She looked back to him and smiled. “There’s no work in the afternoon, so I clocked out earlier.”

Zhang Ye brought the red wine in, “Why didn’t you inform me?”

Dong Shanshan glanced at him, “I wanted to, but you need to switch your phone on.”

“Sigh, I forgot.” Zhang Ye smiled wryly, “Are you hungry yet? Shall I order the food now?”

Dong Shanshan laughed, “I’ve just had my lunch. Take your time. Yo, you bought wine? Why don’t we have some first? Give me the glasses.” Her high heels made tapping sounds as she walked into the kitchen to wash the glasses.

Zhang Ye did not wait to open the red wine and quickly filled the glass to the brim for the two of them.

“Cheers.” Dong Shanshan clinked her glass with his, and drank half in one mouthful.

Zhang Ye also drank half like her and took a deep breath afterwards. He made her sit down.

“Hu, home is still the warmest place.” Dong Shanshan reached out and unbuttoned her coat. She pushed her chest forward and took off the coat to hang at the side.

When the coat was off, the school belle’s dress was revealed. She was wearing a qipao. It was a long white qipao with embroidered red flowers. It was the first time Zhang Ye had seen Dong Shanshan dressed like this, so he took a double

take. She looked very sexy wearing the qipao. A qipao has always been a slim type of dress that exuded the contours of a person's body. It had outlined very clearly the curvatures of Dong Shanshan's body and the side split of it almost revealed the entirety of her thigh. From the side split down to her feet, she was wearing a skin colored stocking which extended downwards. Dong Shanshan's legs, which was wrapped in those stockings, were wearing 4 inch white high heels! No wonder she was bundling up her hair. It was not because of convenience, but because she wanted to match this qipao. It brought out the classical charm of her.

Zhang Ye teasingly said, "You're really not afraid of the cold."

Walking back, Dong Shanshan sat on the couch again and crossed her legs. She smiled. "I was wearing a coat and there's a heater at the office and at home. Why would it be cold?"

Zhang Ye stared at her chest, which she was holding up with her posture, "But it's not that warm either."

Dong Shanshan said nonchalantly, "We're public figures, of course we can't dress too casually. What if we get recognized on the streets and they want to take pictures with us? That would look too shabby." With a shrug, she said, "So my principle has always been to dress up well wherever I go."

Zhang Ye blinked and said, "You're a real professional." Saying that, he quietly reached for her hand to hold it.

Dong Shanshan laughed and quickly avoided his reach, "Why are you being so touchy again?"

Zhang Ye gave a cry, "Your old classmate has been banned and won't be able to feed himself anymore in the future. As my old classmate, don't you think you need to comfort me?"

"Oh, how do I comfort you?" Dong Shanshan blinked a few times.

Zhang Ye reached his hands out again, but this time he reached for the slit of Dong Shanshan's qipao. "Like this."

Dong Shanshan did not avoid him. Looking at him, she asked, "You will be comforted like this?"

“Yea, I’m easily satisfied.” Zhang Ye freely bullshitted.

Dong Shanshan held up her wine glass and had another drink with him. Then she said, “Alright, on account of this old classmate, who is in such a sorry state, I will comfort you a little, but don’t touch anywhere out of this zone.”

“Sure.” the two of them continued drinking.

Zhang Ye chatted with her as he squeezed her thigh gently. The qipao was a smooth satin finish and he was touching her firm thigh through that material. It was further separated by another layer of stocking. This was something of another level. Zhang Ye had previously briefly touched her thigh before, but this time he was touching her in detail! It was a good sensation, but he was not satisfied and put his hand further down.

One centimeter...

Three centimeters...

His hand had moved to her outer thigh.

That was where the qipao slit was at. It was where the satin did not extend to and all that was before Zhang Ye’s vision was her thigh and the skin colored stocking.

“How’s the situation at the company?” Zhang Ye asked. His hand had slipped into the slit of the qipao. His fingers reached for the inside as he felt her up with just the stocking material between them.

Dong Shanshan shook her wine glass, “How else would it be? Everyone’s just talking about you. You’ve become famous in the industry this time, even the SARFT headquarters knows your name.”

Zhang Ye’s fingers went deeper in, but as the qipao was very tight, there was little room for maneuvers. His fingers were not caught between her thigh and the qipao, but Zhang Ye was still lingering about that beautiful leg, he did not care that he might accidentally tear her qipao.

“That’s all. This is not that zone anymore.” Dong Shanshan said trying to stop him.

Zhang Ye did not listen. “This area is also part of the zone you mentioned. I did

not touch any where else.” Then he changed the topic. “Oh right, how would the headquarters know me too?”

Dong Shanshan laughed uncontrollably, “You caused such a large commotion, how could they not know about you? I got a call from an ex-colleague from Shanxi Television Station this morning. She mentioned about you to me. Maybe she has some insider news. I heard that last night, your name has already been flagged by the SARFT headquarters! You’ve become the focus on their blacklist!” Maybe she was feeling embarrassed by all that touching by Zhang Ye, so she uncrossed her leg and sat up a little.

Chapter 275: Another War of Words with 'Working Together'!

Afternoon.

It was getting warmer in the house.

Maybe the air conditioner settings were too high, or it could be a matter of passion.

Zhang Ye's neck was feeling sweaty, so he removed his thinly knitted top layer. He was still wearing a T-shirt underneath. Then, he continued to put his hand inside Dong Shanshan's qipao thigh slit. Bit by bit, he pushed it further in. His left hand lifted the wine glass from the coffee table using its stem.

"Here?"

"Cheers."

"Cheers."

Cling, their glasses touched and they had some red wine.

Dong Shanshan leaned forward and flipped open the laptop that Zhang Ye had put on the coffee table. She switched it on, "Can we surf the internet?"

"Of course." Zhang Ye answered.

"Eh, it's disconnected?" Dong Shanshan asked.

Zhang Ye acknowledged, "Log in again and it'll be fine."

Dong Shanshan smiled. "You've switched off your phone and even disconnected from the internet... are you trying to isolate yourself?"

Zhang Ye sighed, saying, "There's been too much happening and it's too messy. Might as well not know. Out of sight, out of mind! Saves me the trouble

of scolding people, I can't suppress my anger after all."

Dong Shanshan began to read the news.

Zhang Ye did not bother about what she was doing. He was only focused on the school belle's smooth long legs. His right hand had unconsciously made its way further in. When Dong Shanshan uncrossed her legs, the qipao was naturally tighter. Now that she had put down her legs and leaned forward to use the laptop, the space had expanded by a lot more and it allowed Zhang Ye more space to move around too.

Pinch!

Fondle!

Zhang Ye narrowed his eyes into a slit, feeling relaxed. Listening to Dong Shanshan clicking on the mouse, his hand, that was touching that smooth skin of thigh, all his troubles from the past two days had now disappeared.

Si la!

Suddenly, there was a nasty sound from the dress!

Zhang Ye made an uh and coughed dryly. He looked towards the slit of her qipao. The dress was alright, but her stockings had been accidentally torn agape by Zhang Ye. He had been rather busy in recent days and had not bothered to cut his nails. With his long nails and the thin material of the stocking, any sudden force would have torn it.

Dong Shanshan looked at him in a speechless manner, "You really don't hold back, even with your old classmate. That was really aggressive, I'd just changed to a new pair of stockings today."

Zhang Ye said embarrassed, "A misunderstanding, misunderstanding."

Dong Shanshan tucked her legs back in, "Alright, the comforting is over."

"Don't, I'll buy you a new one." Zhang Ye still did not retract his hands, and instead moved it further in. With a flick of his hand, he squeezed into the opening of the tear and slowly dug inside. This time, there was no longer the stockings putting up resistance, so he could touch her smooth long legs directly. Naturally, the tiny tear in the stocking slowly enlarged with Zhang Ye's hand. Si

la. Su la. The tear reached all the way to Dong Shanshan's knees. The tear was also not very clean, as the nude-colored stockings dangled on Dong Shanshan's outside thighs.

She cringed, maybe because it was a little itchy.

Zhang Ye pinched her naked thigh and felt the high body temperature of her legs. They were warmer than his palm. It was unknown if Zhang Ye had pinched too forcefully or if there was originally a reddish mark on the school belle's thigh after she had been freed of the stocking's restrain. It looked extremely enticing, like a ripe fruit that one could not help but wish to bite on it. It was extremely sexy.

"We're almost done here." She glimpsed at him and put her hands on her legs. With a layer of nude-colored stockings above Zhang Ye's hand, she pressed down on his hand.

Zhang Ye thickened his skin saying, "We have nothing else to do anyway."

She laughed in exasperation, "Are you treating this as entertainment?"

"It feels too good, let me touch a little more." Zhang Ye was unwilling to stop.

"Don't push it." Dong Shanshan teasingly slapped his dirty hands, "The hanky panky time stops now. Stop messing around. Let's watch the news."

She switched on the television.

Zhang Ye was not interested, he raised his glass, "Here, let's have another one."

"Cheers." As Dong Shanshan switched channels, she casually drank with him.

After Zhang Ye put down the glass, he looked around. He was still feeling horny, and finally, his gaze landed on Dong Shanshan's thighs. He did not ask for her opinion, and took off his shoes and lifted his feet onto the sofa, as he lied down, his head rested on Dong Shanshan's thighs. As her legs were full of elasticity, the moment his head landed, it bounced up a little due to her thigh's flesh, before falling back down into a stable state.

"I feel a little giddy. Let me lie down to watch." Zhang Ye said by acting before obtaining approval.

The face he saw while lying down looked at him and said helplessly, "Lie down then."

With him drunk, while lying on a beauty's lap, Zhang Ye found it extremely comfortable. He was enjoying it like a lord. After adjusting his body, he even raised a leg and crossed it over the other on the sofa. All of his face pressed against the flesh on Dong Shanshan's thighs. The qipao's fabric was very thin and very smooth, so there was no need to mention how comfortable lying on it was. There was also the fragrance of the school belle's perfume. Today, she had put on a faint perfume, and the faintly discernible scent went well with the classic qipao.

"Eh?" She said.

Zhang Ye asked, "What's the matter?"

She gestured with her chin towards the television, "Are you watching? I think it's about you."

"Let's watch it. Who's talking about me again?" Zhang Ye turned his head towards the television.

The volume was very low. Dong Shanshan adjusted the volume with the remote control as the sound became louder bit by bit.

This was a Shanghai provincial channel. Its signal covered the nearby regions. On the screen, there was a caption of "Television Station Deputy Director" under a middle-aged man being interviewed. He said, "This matter's effect is quite terrible. As a member of this industry, I strongly condemn Zhang Ye's unethical behavior. If everyone disobeys the instructions from superiors, then won't the entertainment industry be in chaos?"

It seemed like a discussion program.

Another guest added, "I agree with Director Qian's view. A person like Zhang Ye should be forced out of the entertainment industry as soon as possible. I've seen his 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' before. It's full of nonsense. It is indeed a very bad influence. The investigation team of the the Shanghai SARFT's Chief Li did not make any mistakes. Such a program should be axed as soon as possible to prevent undue influence. Also, I want to urge those industry insiders and

netizens who joined in Zhang Ye's revolt. Do you know what you are doing? Do you all still know how to tell right from wrong?"

A few guests castigated Zhang Ye, and scolded him in all sorts of ways!

Only one guest proposed a different view. The guest was a middle-aged woman. She had a common face, and looked like a mass media reporter. "Whether 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' violates regulations, I will first not talk about it. Actually, the reason why this matter caused such a huge controversy has to do with a few pirated WebTV programs that plagiarized 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' without being halted. They were not even punished. Everyone's content was more or less the same. Some of the joke segments from a few talk show programs were even copied directly from Zhang Ye, but 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' was halted. Zhang Ye was used as a classic example, and then forced to apologize and reflect, while those programs that plagiarized his program did not pay a single cent in copyright fees, and still remained fine. I believe this is the reason behind Zhang Ye's rage. It is also the reason why some people in the industry are speaking for Zhang Ye, and also the reason why the netizens are mad. All of this resulted in the Shanghai SARFT's website's denial of service."

The middle-aged guest from before looked coldly at him, "Just because he was angry, he could speak gibberish on a live broadcast to incite the crowd? Because of anger, the netizens can disrupt a website belonging to the nation?"

The middle aged woman frowned, "You are taking my words out of context! My main point is....Why weren't those copy-cat programs not halted?"

The youth guest said, "I heard that Chief Li's team is currently investigating those programs, the problem at hand will be resolved very soon."

The middle-aged woman shook her head, "Since a press conference was held, then it means this round of investigations has come to an end. Why didn't they stop the pirated programs from the beginning? Instead they investigate after the press conference? And the investigation results have not been revealed and there are no updates on it."

The middle-aged guest said coldly, "The officials definitely have their plans as to how to handle the issue!"

The middle-aged woman looked at him and said, "Then I would like to ask, is a

pirated and plagiarized program's influence more dangerous, or an original program's influence that someone produced with their heart and soul more dangerous?"

The middle-aged man laughed, "Do you still need to ask? Of course it's the original program's influence! Just like 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show'. With that many views, its bad influence is the most widespread! That is why the investigations started with Zhang Ye first!"

The middle-aged woman fell silent before she said, "I have nothing else to say. Some people's views really make me speechless!"

.....

The program ended.

Seeing Zhang Ye looking gloomy, Dong Shanshan switched off the television.

Zhang Ye got up from her lap. He coldly took a sip of red wine and then leaned forward to take control of the mouse. He started browsing the internet and Weibo.

Dong Shanshan comforted him, "Don't worry about it. Some people just like to bootlick. There's no point bearing a grudge against them."

"That won't do." Zhang Ye said, "It's fine if I didn't see it, but since I've seen it, then I shall not stand for it!"

At this moment, the denouncing and condemnation at Zhang Ye was increasing. There were still many supporting him, but at the same time, there were also more people scolding him!

"With Zhang Ye gone, the entertainment industry is clean and quiet!"

"The Shanghai SARFT did the right thing. There was no problem in their decision!"

"For such insubordination, a person like Zhang Ye should be punished severely!"

Those who said this on Weibo were mostly industry insiders, or were famous figures or famous hosts. A large number of them were not even known by Zhang Ye, nor did he have a grudge with them. However, it was as if those people had

discussed it beforehand. They all began criticizing Zhang Ye at the same moment, as well as strongly advocated the Shanghai SARFT's decision!

This bro hasn't even made any actions on one scolding a day!

You ended up scolding me first? Fine! Let's see who can out-scold who!

Zhang Ye immediately logged into his Weibo. He began writing a poem on his Weibo, and pulled out the big guns to launch scoldings at a large number of people!

"Junior officials to senior officials."

"Submitting obsequiously to their will."

"If this is done to kin!"

"Won't they be filial children!"

"—'Working Together'. This poem is dedicated to those 'filial sons and dearest grandchildren', as a way to express my highest adoration towards you. Zhang Ye."

Chapter 276

The poem was posted!

It was getting lively on Weibo again!

“Quickly take a look! Zhang Ye has posted on Weibo!”

“Let me take a look at what Teacher Zhang just posted!”

“If this is done to kin, won’t they be filial children? Wahahaha!”

“That last sentence is such a classic! Godly scolding! It didn’t even have a single word of profanity in it! Aiyo, such a joy to read! It was even dedicated to those ‘filial children’?”

“Zhang Ye has fired his cannons again!”

“Teacher Zhang’s scolding is too awesome!”

“But of course, haha. Our Teacher Zhang is a scolding specialist. Those industry insiders wanted to use Teacher Zhang as a bridge to bootlick Li Tao? Wish to step on Teacher Zhang Ye to get to higher places? I can’t help but laugh at their low intelligence! Teacher Zhang Ye’s already so infamous. He has already scolded so many people till they had to beg for their lives and yet they dare to scold him? What’s wrong with their memory? Haha, now they have badly scolded by Teacher Zhang! Serves them right!”

“Well scolded by Zhang Ye. This group of lackeys are f**king disgusting! Everyone knows clearly what the hell is going on! As long as they have eyes and a brain, everyone would know that there’s some conspiracy, let alone you industry insiders, but you all!? You all put the blame and scolded Teacher Zhang for having no professional ethics? Then where are your professional ethics? You clearly know that it’s wrong, yet you help the party in doing wrong to create additional pressure for Zhang Ye! Compared to Teacher Zhang Ye, people like you

do not deserve to be public figures! Misleading the public! Fanning the flames! Do you all really take the commoners to be fools?! Filial children as a description for you guys is too suitable!”

“Zhang Ye is on a roll these past few days!”

“Hehe, do you think people on Li Tao’s side will regret?”

“Do you still need to ask? Of course! Those people must be regretting until their intestines turned green!”

“That’s right, haha. They thought they were pinching a soft persimmon, but little they did expect Teacher Zhang Ye to be such a thorn. His whole body is full of thorns!”

“I’m impressed. Only Teacher Zhang Ye can rebuke this well!”

“I’ve deduced that anyone who messes with Teacher Zhang will not live peacefully. Didn’t he create an earth-shattering mess the other time?!”

“There’s no other way. Who asked Zhang Ye to be so daring to speak the truth, I like him so much!”

“Heeheehee. Teacher Zhang is different from the others. Look at the other celebrities and public figures. They only know how to create news out of nothing by ‘falling down’ or having ‘wardrobe malfunctions’, but Teacher Zhang Ye has never resorted to any such stunts, even though he gets exposure from time to time. From his debut till now, I believe the number of people who follow him for his works does not surpass the people who follow him for his scoldings and finding trouble. Do you guys think that even if Zhang Ye were to be banned from the entertainment industry, could he depend on scolding others with his poems....to miraculously become an A-list or B-list celebrity?”

“Haha, that’s totally possible!”

“In Teacher Zhang’s dictionary, nothing is impossible. Teacher Zhang has done so many amazing things that I won’t even be surprised anymore!”

“Those who replied, don’t you think you guys are getting carried away? Teacher Zhang is still at a crossroad right now.”

“No choice, Teacher Zhang is exactly such a person who makes others happy.

His works aren't even my taste, but everytime I see him scolding or causing an incident, I cry with excitement!"

Fans of Zhang Ye were all tickled funny!

In contrast, those industry insiders, including the guests on Shanghai provincial channel earlier, who were showing their support for Li Tao and the SARFT's decisions, now had their faces red with anger and embarrassment. They felt like they could strangle Zhang Ye now!

Filial children?

Filial children your sister!

Zhang Ye, you're too wicked! That mouth of yours is to fucking wicked!

They immediately launched a counter-attack on Weibo, but before Zhang Ye could even bother himself with their replies, Zhang Ye's fans had already drowned them out!

"Yo, the filial children are getting anxious!"

"Haha, the filial children can't take it anymore!"

"Teacher Zhang Ye, run away quickly. Don't let those filial children bite you! We will sacrifice ourselves in your place!"

After scolding for a full day, the industry insiders also stopped. Because they realised that no matter how much they scolded Zhang Ye, whether it was a thousand or ten thousand scoldings, it would be in vain. It couldn't even compare to the ferocity of Zhang Ye's "Working Together"!

This was a poem used to scold those who adulate and flattered others. It was a poem by Dong Yingju from his previous world. "Working Together" had been passed down from the ancient times to present days. It was very famous and Zhang Ye had used it today to insult the 'filial children' who bootlicked Li Tao. It seemed to be very suitable for them!

That bunch of people could not outscold him. They could only keep their anger inside as their rage slowly extinguished without a place to vent!

Counter-attack?

How could they counter-attack!? What could they counter attack with!?

Even if they combined their efforts, they could not match his literary talents!

Zhang Ye's poem was like a nuclear weapon. It could be described as extremely savage. Not only them, the Beijing Writer's Association's members also got a taste of his scolding! Zhang Ye ability in stirring up trouble and scolding of people was already very well known. It was extremely famous!

Those industry insiders were now regretting quite a bit. They had initially felt that Zhang Ye was done for and that he would disappear from the entertainment circle. They felt that even if they were to offend him, there would be no problems. So instead, they sucked up to Li Tao and the Shanghai SARFT. They openly supported them so that they may get some beneficial decisions in the future, but seeing Zhang Ye jump out with a ferocious "Working Together", they suddenly felt that what they did caused more harm than good. Every poem of Zhang Ye's was very classic. This was already a fact well known to everyone. Like the previous time when Beijing Television imprisoned Station's Wang Shuixin had "Some People" thrown his way at the memorial service. That poem had shocked the nation and displaced a leader of a television station of his role. It was rumoured that he was. In the past, Wang Shuixin had some fame as a poet and was the person who wrote "Everything", which made its way into our educational material, but who was Zhang Ye? A man with no fame and authority. Just with a poem like "Some People", whenever it was mentioned, it made people hateful of Wang Shuixin. They would need to scold him a bit to ease their rage!

What kind of viciousness was this?!

This was the power of Zhang Ye's works!

"Working Together" might not be as good as "Some People", but it was also a powerful work. That bunch of industry insiders thought to themselves and hoped that they wouldn't become related names with "Working Together". To be mentioned in the same breath whenever this "Working Together" was brought up by people and the future generations? To be alluded with this poem? Holy sh*t! This sort of opportunity was not something they wanted!

The scoldings faded.

They did not make any posts on Weibo!

Zhang Ye's practical move had warned many others. Yes, this bro did offend people. I might not be able to continue on in the entertainment industry, but my conscience is clear. I did nothing wrong. The truth and facts are clear to everyone. I did not provoke any of you, so don't provoke me. If anyone thinks that just because I have been banned and wanted to take the chance to bully me while I'm down? Consider yourselves to be blind! Even if I am going to become an ordinary commoner! Even if I don't work in the entertainment circle anymore! I will scold you all like I scold my grandchildren. It's that simple! If you think you can win against me in scolding! Then let's have a practice match! If you think you have the ability! Then don't waste time talking and do it instead!

.....

He closed his laptop.

Zhang Ye snapped his fingers, "Alright, I've settled it."

Dong Shanshan, ".....That's how you settled it?"

"Yea." Zhang Ye was feeling at ease and smiled. "Then how did you think I would settle it? I just want to scold them into submission. Different situations call for different actions, I don't care who it is. Whoever it is, come get me!"

Dong Shanshan curled her lips in helplessness, "You're really not afraid of offending people."

"I'm not in the entertainment industry anyway. I don't have anything to consider. Even if it's an A-list celebrity who comes to insult me, I will scold them without hesitation!" Without worries and without a job, Zhang Ye was feeling at ease all over again. He was a free soul, so who would scare him?

Dong Shanshan opened the laptop that Zhang Ye had just closed, "Let me read that poem." After reading it once over, she said, "In the past, I was a little skeptical. I thought that maybe your poems were pre-written, but today, I believe you. You really composed it on the spot?"

Zhang Ye smiled. "More or less."

Dong Shanshan looked at him and toasted, "Sure, to this poem, cheers!"

Chapter 277: Li Tao's Reputation Destroyed!

After dinner.

The sun had set. The lights in the house were now on.

Dong Shanshan gathered the dishes, "I'm going to wash the dishes."

"Let me." Zhang Ye said, "It's always you doing the washing."

Dong Shanshan slapped his hand away and smiled, "When I can afford to pay such expensive rent, you can be rest assured that I won't be polite to you. You can do the dishes everyday then."

Zhang Ye did not insist, "Alright then."

Wearing a qipao and high heels, Dong Shanshan did not bother changing out of her getup. Hua la la, the running water could be heard.

Zhang Ye said loudly, "Oh yes, how's your program going?"

"What do you mean how's it going? It's doing alright." a female voice drifted out from the kitchen.

Zhang Ye said, "The second episode's going to air tomorrow, right? Why did you come back so early today? Is the recording done? Or will you be doing the recording tomorrow? There won't be enough time, right?"

"It's already recorded."

"Then that's OK."

"Hur Hur, you should be more worried about your own job."

"What's there to worry about? I will rest for a few more days first."

"You've lost your status as a host, but you can still take on a guest role."

"Guest? In this situation, I've offended Li Tao and the Shanghai SARFT, who

would still dare to invite me on as a guest.”

“Eh, that’s true.”

The two of them chatted sporadically.

After a long while, Zhang Ye switched on his phone as he was afraid he would miss out on important matters. His phone had already been switched off for 2 days now, and when he switched it on, a phone call came in immediately.

Ring, ring, ring.

It was a call from his colleague host, Wang Bei. His relationship with her wasn’t too bad, but Wang Bei and Dong Shanshan were much closer than he was to Wang Bei. He spoke in the direction of the kitchen, “I’m going to answer a call, so don’t speak.” Saying that, he went into his room and closed the door before answering, “Hello, Teacher Wang.” No one in the company knew that he and Dong Shanshan were living together. Even now that he had resigned, he had to keep it a secret. He might not be working anymore, but Dong Shanshan still had to go to the office. If anyone found out, it would affect his old classmate greatly.

Wang Bei’s voice came on, “Teacher Zhang, you finally turned on your phone!”

Zhang Ye laughed, “I wanted some peace and rest, so I switched it off. I’m sorry, yea, how’s the office? Is there a reason why you are looking for me?”

Wang Bei said, “I’m not looking for you. I’m actually looking for Shanshan. Her phone has been engaged all this time.”

“Ah?” Zhang Ye looked out towards his room door’s direction, “That can’t be?”

Wang Bei said helplessly, “She hasn’t been taking any calls since she knocked off. I’m looking for her, but I can’t reach her. You’re Shanshan’s old classmate, do you know where she went to?”

Zhang Ye said, “I contacted her a while ago. Why don’t I get her to call you back? Is it urgent?”

“Nothing urgent, but I want to comfort her a little. To meet up for a drink, hai.” Wang Bei sounded a little depressed.

Zhang Ye did not understand, “Why do you need to comfort her?”

Wang Bei was shocked, “Didn’t you just contact her? You don’t know?”

“I don’t know.” Zhang Ye was stunned, “What should I know? What happened?”

Wang Bei hesitated for a while and said, “It’s not convenient for me to say. If Shanshan wanted to tell you, she would have done so.”

Zhang Ye replied, “Teacher Wang, don’t leave me hanging like this. You’ve already said all these things, so finish it up? Quickly! What happened?”

Wang Bei hesitated for a long while before saying “Alright then, let me tell you. Even if I don’t tell you, you will still find out. Shanshan’s ‘Online Talents’ received a visit from Li Tao and his team. They were informed that the program has been indefinitely halted. The reason for the halt was because a performer in the first episode used his head to crush 20 bricks. Another performer could eat 250g of glass. Li Tao said that Shanshan’s program promoted negative influences and that if people copied what they saw, the consequences will be unimaginable. So they halted it based on this reason!”

Zhang Ye’s rage, which had already been suppressed, suddenly rushed into his head, “What? Isn’t he f**king finding issues out of nothing?”

Wang Bei said, “Everyone knows that Li Tao has something against us, but since the program halt instructions were already given, the company couldn’t do anything about it. Shanshan’s program would definitely be halted. The SARFT’s penalty directive has already been issued, they even want to fine our company. Right now, everyone’s job in our WebTV department is at risk!”

Zhang Ye took a deep breath, “It’s because of me right?”

“You can’t put it that way.” Wang Bei sighed.

Zhang Ye angrily said, “Haven’t I already resigned? I did it so that no one would be affected like this. What does that Li Tao want? Does he still respect the law? Is he trying to pull the wool over the public eye!?”

Wang Bei said, “You’re not to blame. It’s Li Tao and his people, they’re bastards! Shanshan’s program has been stopped, but luckily her host status has not been revoked. She can still do another program in the future.”

Zhang Ye said, “A talent program that has so many views, how much pain and effort was put in for it! Too much was invested into the earlier episode! Being halted after finishing the first episode? F**k his grandfather!”

“Cool down, don’t be impulsive.” Wang Bei knew Zhang Ye’s temper. She appeased him, “If you try to take it up with Li Tao again or scold him. Their crackdown might be even harder. By then, Shanshan might not only get her programs halted, she might even lose her hosting qualification. I’ve heard that Li Tao would be promoted soon. He will hold a lot of power and authority, and his word will become law! The reason why Li Tao took action against Shanshan, was definitely because he knew that she was your classmate. You’ve mentioned it multiple times on ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’ before, so don’t be so impulsive!”

They hung up.

Zhang Ye threw his cellphone down onto the bed in frustration. He pulled a long face and walked out of his room. He saw Dong Shanshan’s cellphone was still on the TV console, so he picked it up to check. It was indeed on silent mode. He quickly went towards the kitchen to confront Dong Shanshan, who had just finished doing the dishes, “You still want to keep it from me?”

Dong Shanshan looked at him, “What’s the matter?”

“What do you think!?” said Zhang Ye angrily, “Didn’t I just ask how your program was doing! You told me it was doing alright and even said that you finished the recording!”

Dong Shanshan smiled and shrugged, “Who told you? Ah Qian? Wang Bei?”

Zhang Ye said, “The program has been halted and you still have the nerve to smile!”

“What can I do besides smiling?” Dong Shanshan threw down her washcloth and walked out of the kitchen, “Should I torch Li Tao’s house with fire?”

Zhang Ye looked at her and said, “You should’ve told me!”

“What can you do if I told you?” Dong Shanshan replied.

“I can think of a solution for you! You never tell me the truth!” Zhang Ye caught his breath, “Forget about this, your program was halted because of me. I

thought that if I resigned, Li Tao and his people would not target you and the others. Who knew that he would be so ruthless?! Alright! He's not playing by the rules and bullying people again and again! Then don't blame me for being unreasonable! Shanshan, I will definitely resolve this matter for you!"

Dong Shanshan waved her hands, "Forget it. If you scold them again, even if you scold them to their deaths, it would not solve the matter. The penalty directive has already been issued, it won't change anything."

Zhang Ye closed his eyes, "This time....I won't be scolding anyone."

Dong Shanshan was probably a little worried, so she said, "You better not try anything funny. It doesn't matter, it has nothing to do with you. Even if the program's gone, I can do another. Your old classmate still has her looks and figure. How could a program of mine not end up popular? Hur Hur, so don't worry anymore. Who knows? Maybe my next program will be better than 'Online Talents'. At that time, I might even need to thank Li Tao and gang."

Zhang Ye knew that she was forcefully saying all this, "If you move on to your next program and Li Tao's people come after you again?"

Dong Shanshan lightly laughed, "Then I will do another program again."

"You say it like it's so easy!" Zhang Ye could see now that it wouldn't help even if he were to scold Li Tao. Two days had passed since the incident, and yet, there was no action from the SARFT headquarters. It seemed like they had no intention of starting an investigation and Li Tao was still doing fine. Zhang Ye's scolding might make them lose face and get angry, but it didn't hurt them in any other way. As long as he was in charge, he could abuse his authority the same way he halted Dong Shanshan's program with just a word. Zhang Ye's poem did not make Li Tao take a step back, but instead made him go from bad to worse!

That Li guy!

You're f**king courting death!

Zhang Ye only said simply to Dong Shanshan, without saying anything else more "Call Wang Bei back. She's been looking for you and feeling worried."

"OK, I will go back to my room then." Dong Shanshan pressed her hand to her forehead, "I might have had too much too drink, I will rest early today. Should I

wake you tomorrow?”

Zhang Ye said, “I’ve no work, don’t bother.”

“Hur Hur, I am also not working tomorrow. Then I won’t be waking up too early either.” Dong Shanshan casually waved her hand and took her cellphone with her to her room.

Zhang Ye also carried his laptop and returned to his room. He closed the door and sat heavily onto his bed. He narrowed his eyes and took a deep breath. His eyes became colder and colder with each moment!

Before, Zhang Ye would take on Li Tao’s provocations by scolding him relentlessly. In this aspect, he was already holding back. Otherwise, it would not be simply a matter of words, but with this development now, it was no longer something that affected him. He had dragged his old classmate, Dong Shanshan, into the matter with Li Tao’s slaughtering of Dong Shanshan!

You can keep torturing me!

You can even stop my program!

But now you even want to touch my friend? Go f**k yourself! Am I still leaving you guys with too much face!?

Zhang Ye could bear anything targeted at him, but this! This matter left him with no room for tolerance! At this moment, Li Tao and his people had really driven Zhang Ye into a rage!

It was in such a situation that Zhang Ye’s reaction was quicker. To keep scolding them would no longer mean anything. Right now, he had no other thoughts than to ruin Li Tao’s reputation and cause his downfall.

How was he to do that?

How could he bring down Li Tao?

Zhang Ye suddenly remembered a skill experience book he had gotten in the lottery back then. He had already ‘eaten’ and learned it, but had never had the chance to use them!

21 books of [Computer Programming Skills Experience Book]!

And another 11 books of [Computer Programming Skills – Network Technology Experience Book]!

Zhang Ye eyebrow ticked slightly in anger. He had now conceived a wicked plan. Back when he drew those books, he had bemoaned with regret thinking that they were useless, but just like the lockpicking skill, some things that might look useless at first usually turned out to be extremely useful at the right moment!

Chapter 278: Hacker Zhang Ye!

In the bedroom.

It was 7PM, so the night was still young.

Zhang Ye drew his curtains and placed the laptop on the table. He tested the internet connection and mouse pointer then stretched his arms a little and prepared for action. Although he had ‘eaten’ the two types of computer programming skills experience books, he had never put them to practical use before. He did not know if he could do it, nor did he know whether the experience he gained was enough to let him do what he planned to do, or rather, how much he could execute the plan with his experience. There was never enough of these experience books. It seemed like he could keep gaining more experience no matter how many he ‘ate’. The more he ‘ate’ the more experience he received. If he only ate a few, then he would certainly only know a trivial amount. The 11 [Computer Programming Skills – Network Technology Experience Book] could not be considered few, but to be on the safe side, Zhang Ye still needed to know how he’d do.

Zhang Ye found a foreign website and with the computer knowledge from his world and the skills experience that he’d gained, he was soon doing his thing. He installed an add-on for his browser. This was something similar to his previous world’s Firefox browser’s add-on called Go2 proxy, but was named differently in this world. The browser was also a different one, but they were similar in most aspects. After installing the add-on and activating it — after around 2 minutes, Zhang Ye had successfully loaded that foreign website. This was actually one of the simplest forms of proxies.

Hot pictures started loading up one by one!

One by one, tempting videos of hot foreign women came into view!

Zhang Ye looked hard at this outstanding foreign website that he had just loaded up with his outstanding skills! He couldn't help but exclaim 'Godly!'. Although it wasn't a difficult technique, Zhang Ye knew that he never had such skills in the past!

After the warm up!

His confidence was boosted!

He started off by browsing some programming-based websites and researched on this world's development of computer programming, techniques, and software, *etc.* After spending the whole night, until midnight, when the public lights were turned off, Zhang Ye finally took a rest, rubbed his eyes, and took a deep breath. He found out that this world's computer systems, hardware, and software had no big differences to those from his previous world. The principles of it were all the same, like the types of programming language used and the concept of programming. The main differences were only the naming conventions. For example, those operating systems that were like Microsoft Windows, but were not called Microsoft Windows were also available in this world. Even the commands were the same. After comparing for a long time, Zhang Ye had reached a preliminary conclusion. This world's operating systems and hardware, *etc.* were slightly less advanced than his previous world's. It was behind by a few years, except for the technology in server firewall and antivirus softwares, which were somewhat more advanced. This was why amateur hackers like those from his previous world were not so apparent in this world. This world's network security protocols were of a much higher standard. Any download of a firewall software would be able to block out 99% of non-professionals. Even professional hackers would have to put in some work, as there weren't many people silly enough to not install a firewall or antivirus software on their computer. As such, there was no chance of any mass amateur hackers.

This resulted in the current situation. There were only very few hackers in this world and they were not as rampant compared to Zhang Ye's previous world, but conversely speaking, the hackers, who were more well known here, had more sophisticated skills and were at the top of the pyramid. They could do as they wished in the online world.

These were the main differences between the two worlds.

Operating systems, hardware, programming languages, and software architecture were also of similar origins. This was a good thing as it meant that Zhang Ye could conveniently use his past experience from his previous world. Even if there were slight differences, Zhang Ye also had the experience he gained from the skills experience books. The experience he gained was knowledge from this world and could be used here. From this point, there was nothing Zhang Ye needed to worry about. However, one thing that gave him a headache was the security of networks here. Even before he could even satisfy himself with the thrill of hacking, he would already be stopped by the firewall?

He still had to do it anyway!

Li Tao wouldn't be able to escape him!

Zhang Ye had already set his mind to the task and did not hesitate. When he went to the bathroom outside, he saw no lights from the gap under Dong Shanshan's room door. She must've fallen asleep, so he made his way back to the room silently!

Let's get started!

By trying out a little hacking!

This world's hacking tools were also available freely online, but most of them were not available in it's source code form, so they couldn't be considered open-sourced. In Zhang Ye's previous world, the hackers there were very particular about open-sourced. They felt that it was a general rule and honor to list them in open-sourced forms. This was where the notion of such matters differed between the two worlds.

Zhang Ye began downloading a simple software — This was a hackers knife, an essential tool to hacking. Without them, you couldn't even find the IP address of someone, let alone attempt to gain access.

Command injecting plugin.

Remote access Trojans.

Event logs clearing software.

Etc, etc, *etc*. Zhang Ye downloaded a list of tools.

Then, he started testing this world's software and trojan horses, and as expected, they were the same as his previous world's. It was just like any other common hacking software. You are going to say that they were useless, right? That's not really it. Such softwares were normal and could be used. but to say if they were effective? This sort of hacking software that could be freely downloaded off the internet was not so effective. They might not even break past a firewall, especially when this world's network security was so tight. The chances of them being intercepted as malicious code was too high. The truly world class hacking software was all written by the hackers themselves. These hackers wouldn't even share them with their hacker friends, let alone put them up on the internet. Such softwares were considered their own trade secrets.

Another reason why common software and the world class hacking software had such a gulf of a difference was mainly down to the system loopholes that these hackers knew of. The common hacking software had already been researched thoroughly by others, such as the operating system developers or network security companies. These system loopholes had been patched by these researchers. Unless you were using a pirated system that did not get updates, these genuine operating systems would get patched with every update. Then, the hacking software's effectiveness would greatly decrease. It might not be totally ineffective, but its damage would be considerably reduced. However, a world class hacking software was different. It could invade a system based on the creator's own knowledge of loopholes and control of the operating system. Besides the creator, no one else would know of the loopholes. As such, the operating systems developer would not be able to patch these security loopholes. They would not be able to know how the hacker invaded either. Such confidentiality was the reason why world class hacking software has such widespread damage and basically could not be stopped!

But Zhang Ye read a thread that explained that there were only about ten world class hacking softwares in this world. Of course, these softwares only appeared in this world slightly over ten times. And naturally, all of these have been patched after being discovered, so they were no longer as effective. Although it was certain that there were many other undiscovered hacking

softwares, it could also be seen as the reason why such softwares were extremely rare. It was comparable to a top pugilist's weapon. The world class software or trojan horses — were those divine weapons, precious and rare. To exploit a loophole that even the software developer did not know of was already extremely difficult and this world's software developers were a lot more reliable than his previous world's. Yes. Once a vulnerability was found, one still had to take into consideration the nature of the loophole to exploit it with either a software or trojan horse. This was prohibitively difficult to achieve.

This was the reason why such software was so rare. Zhang Ye did not think too much about it. What he needed to do now was to get into the SARFT's network and locate Li Tao's workstation.

Chapter 279: Support Genuine Products!

Late at night.

The district was without a sound.

The only place lit up was Zhang Ye's room. This fellow didn't rest at all. He was fighting at the frontlines against corruption by himself. He patiently attempted to hack into Shanghai SARFT's website. However as time passed, Zhang Ye's expression became more and more annoyed. This website's network security was too well planned. The vulnerabilities had already been patched and no matter how Zhang Ye tried, he could not hack into it.

For example, he wanted to use the SARFT's website to propagate the trojan horse, and then use that to gain access to find the location of Li Tao's computer, but having tried twice, Zhang Ye gave up. He couldn't even break through the server's firewall and was stuck outside the network. It was difficult to go on as he couldn't even get past the first obstacle, let alone install the trojan horse. It was bizarre to him, to the point of him giving up thinking about it.

Next, Zhang Ye downloaded another hacking software to try and punch through the firewall into the web server. He did not expect to install the trojan propagator, but instead wanted to at least gain access to the system administrator's account and password. This step proved to be the same as the first. The hacking software was too outdated and the firewall had records of it. When Zhang Ye tried to gain access, the firewall immediately alerted the administrators and traced the unauthorized point of access. It would have tracked for Zhang Ye's IP address. He did not know whether it was the system administrators who did this manually, or whether it was an automated response by the firewall. In any case, Zhang Ye nearly shat his pants. Luckily for him, he had 'eaten' 11 books of [Computer Programming Skills – Network Technology Experience Book] and he was rather skilled. His immediate action was to stop

the counter attack and clean his traces. Then he quickly pulled the LAN cable out from his laptop before he could catch his breath.

Your sister!

Does this world need to be so safe!

This bro can be considered a somewhat skilled hacker by now, but you're just a damn provincial SARFT website, yet I can't break your low level security?

Why did he say that the website's security was low?

Zhang Ye's fans had gone to the website and refreshed it for 30 minutes and caused a denial of service. It was only restored after more than 10 hours in the evening. The website's standards were definitely not high. At most, it was considered as a basic security model. Even the website administration team's standards were average at most. Yet Zhang Ye couldn't break in. It showed that this world's web security was already at the most forefront of times! Of course, part of the reason could be because of Zhang Ye's laptop settings. His laptop specifications were very average. It could be used to play games at times, but if it were used for a software attack, then that might be over the limits. The configuration and internet speed was also not good enough. Looks like it was time to change his laptop, but that's another story. He had to think of other ways to break in for now.

Next, Zhang Ye connected back onto the internet. He had thought of a few more ways now. Back in his previous world, Zhang Ye had already been rather interested in hacking. He had ever read books and browsed the internet for information, but never took it up. Ahem, but still he was quite well versed in understanding of this topic.

The 3rd tactic was for Zhang Ye to use a phishing email and attach a trojan horse with it before sending it out to the Shanghai SARFT's provided email address. If the administrator clicked on the attachment and in a situation where the computer security was less tight, the trojan horse would definitely take effect and meet its objective, but regretfully, this phishing mail sent by Zhang Ye did not even reach the target's mailbox. It was intercepted by the email server!

Failure!

Failure!

And more failure!

Numerous failed attempts had caused him to become disheartened. He also became more and more aware of this world's network security. It was little wonder for this world to have so few hackers. Most would have given up by now. With such networking security technologies, it's your mum who's not leaving rice for the hackers to eat. Not only did she not leave them any rice, there's not even a scrap of other dishes left for them. All of you are too inhumane!

The noob hacker was now raging!

It was his first time hacking and he had failed!

Zhang Ye thought that his plan was perfect, but he did not expect that he couldn't even make any progress in it. Breaking into the SARFT was not something he had on his mind anymore for now. Finding Li Tao's office workstation and controlling it was also out of the question. The only choice he had now was — To locate Li Tao's home computer, access it remotely and take control. He was hoping that Li Tao's home was using a pirated operating system that was not updated and patched, but a new problem arose. Regardless of the operating system he used, he did not even know Li Tao's home address or IP address. He did not even know his accounts used for communicating. He had more questions than answers! Without any information, how was he to hack in? There were hundreds of millions of computers in the whole country. Where would he start looking!?

It was aimless.

Zhang Ye did not hide his IP address this time. He visited Shanghai SARFT's website normally and found the public information regarding Li Tao.

His full name.

Age.

Occupation.

Etc, etc, *etc*.

Things like residential address were not written.

Zhang Ye was indignant, so he checked the website for any records of posts that came from his ID. Opening one of Li Tao's report uploads, he did not find any viable information. Hence, he continued looking at all the posts by Li Tao. Suddenly, a thread from the middle of this year had given Zhang Ye a pleasant surprise. This was back during the early stages of a crackdown. As at team leader of the Shanghai district, Li Tao had publicized the scope of the crackdown, leaving behind a hotline to tip him off. There was also a SARFT website tip-off email address, and finally a small line of text. Li Tao had actually left his personal email address there!

He'd gotten his email address!

Zhang Ye was immediately elated. He immediately downloaded a new trojan horse. This was a trojan horse that was embedded within a picture. It was very well concealed, so without thought, Zhang Ye used his skills and software to create a non-existent email address, to prevent him from being tracked. Then, he used this email to send Li Tao a pornographic photo, which was the trojan horse program. After dwelling on the matter, he titled the email containing the picture, "Shh, don't tell anyone. I'm sending all of you a picture of a private voyeur shot of Heavenly Queen, Zhang Yuanqi. If you don't take a look, you will be shamed to dare say you are a man! No need to thank me. Please call me Red Scarf!

Tell me, how much of an asshole grandson is Zhang Ye?

With this passage, no one would be able to resist opening it!

The email was sent over very quickly. A personal email was different from the official email at SARFT. The protective measures were definitely not that strong. This time, it was sent out successfully and did not get filtered out.

After waiting for a moment, there was still no response from the other end. Zhang Ye knew that Li Tao was probably asleep already. He did not want to wait up stupidly, so he set an alarm for an early time and fell asleep under his blankets.

Hopefully this time, it'd work!

Hopefully, Li Tao's home used a pirated operating system and firewall. As long as his computer had not been updated with the latest patches and virus detections, Zhang Ye had a good chance of taking control of his computer!

It was the first time in his life that Zhang Ye had so much love for pirated products. He was also looking forward to it!

Of course, this was only with regards to pirated operating systems. After all, that was the intellectual property of foreign companies, but for domestic products.....

Novels especially!!

Especially novels!!!

Zhang Ye had to read the genuine versions!!!!

There's a need to support the domestic literature industry!!!!

Chapter 280: Finally found Li Tao's skeletons!

Saturday morning.

The alarm shrilled loudly. Ring Ring Ring.

Zhang Ye opened his eyes and saw that the sky was still dark. He yawned and got out of bed to take a shower. His movements were light, as he noticed that Dong Shanshan's room door was still closed. She was still asleep. When he came back to his room, Zhang Ye was refreshed after taking a cold shower. He sat in front of his computer and waited. He waited for the other party's email read receipt. If he downloaded and activated the trojan horse, Zhang Ye would receive a response on his trojan horse software from his side.

Waiting.

Waiting.

Why was this grandson still not online?

Has he even woken up yet or has he just not switched on his computer?

.....

At the same time.

In a residential district.

After getting up, Li Tao had breakfast with his family.

His wife asked, "Do you need to go to work today?"

"It's my rest day." Li Tao did not say much, just a sentence.

His wife asked, "The trouble that Zhang Ye caused, is it giving you a lot of pressure? Will it affect you? Nothing will happen right?"

Li Tao was eating a dumpling as he laughed, "If I say it wouldn't affect anything, I'd be lying, but don't worry. He can't cause much trouble for me, he's

no threat.”

His daughter looked up, “Dad, is Zhang Ye really done for?”

“He’s done for.” Li Tao patted his daughter’s head, “He has already provoked the masses, there’s many other who want him to go down. Even if I didn’t deal with him, he’d be dealt with sooner or later!”

His daughter clapped her hands in joy, “That’s great, that’s what happens when he scolds our Lee Parkwoo! Hngg. Oh yes, Dad. Can you get Lee Parkwoo’s autograph for me?”

Li Tao dotingly said, “OK, OK, OK, when he comes to Shanghai for any programs, I will give the television station a call for the favor. It’s just a small matter.”

His daughter excitedly said, “Dad, you’re the best!”

Li Tao said, “Hur Hur, quickly eat.”

After breakfast, Li Tao’s wife went to work. His daughter went out with her classmates. He was alone in the bedroom, so he turned on the computer to read some news and check his Weibo and email.

Di.

You have mail.

Li Tao looked over at the notification and did a double take.

Not a man if you don’t look? Voyeur shot? Zhang Yuanqi’s private photo?

Damn, so erotic and so blood-stirring! This...I must see this!

Without another word, Li Tao navigated his mouse and clicked on the email’s picture attachment. This world’s network security was very good. It had managed to limit a large number of hackers or those hobbyists with selfish motivations. To them this was a form of abuse, but as with all matters, there were always pros and cons. From a different perspective, there was a pro in this being that the netizens’ awareness had greatly lowered. They were not as wary as people from Zhang Ye’s previous world. As such, Li Tao had totally no sense of wariness. All he wanted to do was to quickly view the picture, but when the picture finally loaded, Li Tao couldn’t help but curse, “F**k your grandma! Who

is this foreigner?! Where is Zhang Yuanqi? Where is the very erotic shot? Isn't this cheating! Do you still have a shred of humanity left!

.....

At the other end.

Zhang Ye's house.

After drinking his tea and having a smoke, Zhang Ye suddenly saw that his trojan horse client software had responded. On the control interface, a client PC had appeared. He had only sent the trojan horse to Li Tao, so needless to say, this must be his PC!

It's done!

He had finally succeeded!

This grandson was really using pirated software!

Zhang Ye suddenly sat up straight. Nowadays, trojan horses were basically controlled with a C/S structure. This was what they were called back in Zhang Ye's previous world. Over here, it was called B-IC structure. The meaning was the same and it was easy enough to understand. The trojan horse had been planted successfully and had made its way past Li Tao's firewall. Using a very old vulnerability in the system, it could be said that Zhang Ye now had total control over that PC. It had become a part of his botnet — simply to say, it meant he could control that PC freely now.

Entering a command, Li Tao's IP address was displayed on screen. It was a non-static IP and every time he logged onto the internet, it would be different. but with this trojan horse active in his system now, Zhang Ye did not need to worry about verifying his IP address each and every time anymore. Every time that PC connected to the internet, the trojan horse would send its IP address over to Zhang Ye's trojan horse client. Unless the infected system had been patched or had its firewall upgraded, he would not be able to get out of Zhang Ye's control.

As for the language and style of entering of the command, there were no large differences between the two worlds. This was due to the fact that all programming languages were made in English. If this world's English did not change, then programming languages would not differ by too much either.

Zhang Ye entered a few more commands. His victim's current web browsing details, the computer's workgroup, computer name, account name, and administrator passwords were all gathered by Zhang Ye and no one else knew a thing besides him.

Zhang Ye was afraid that his victim would disconnect from the internet. If that happened, then no matter how skilled a hacker was, he wouldn't be able to do anything. So he quickly executed his plan — To check all of the computer's documents, including the hidden ones!

C Drive — Nothing.

D Drive — Nothing.

E Drive — Nothing.

Li Tao's computer was clean. Except for a few games and softwares, it had nothing else on it. Not even a movie file. Zhang Ye checked the web browser's history and did manage to find traces of several unhealthy websites, but that was useless, it would barely get Li Tao into any trouble. Zhang Ye was not satisfied. He searched high and low, but could not find anything!

This was impossible!

Who would not have any shameful things in their computers!

Zhang Ye was left scratching his head. This plan wasn't fruitful either, but he still had something else up his sleeves. Since his victim's computer was now under his control, then he could still gather more information!

Like turning on the webcam!

This was Zhang Ye's next course of action, but before that, he had to adjust some settings. So he entered a command. These days, webcams would usually come with LED lights. Some camera LED lights were used to brighten the subject and were common in standalone webcams. The other type would be those webcams built into computers which has a small pin-like light indicator. Even a fool would know that those wouldn't brighten up any subjects with such a small pin-like light. This light was instead used as a signal to let the user know that their webcam was in use. So naturally, this setting would have to be switched off. Otherwise, it would give away everything. Some hacking softwares had a

setting to switch off this light, but others didn't. It required some effort to switch it off, but it was necessary to ensure stealth. Of course, the CPU resources usage would hike quite a bit after turning on the webcam, but that couldn't be helped. This was a hardware issue, no one could do a thing about it.

It was all set!

The webcam was activated!

Suddenly, a large face appeared in front of Zhang Ye. He focused and the smiled coldly. It was indeed that asking-for-a-beating face of Li Tao!

Li Tao was staring at his screen. There was no transmission of sound from the other side.

Zhang Ye took another action — activating his victim's PC microphone.

Da, da, the sound of mouse clicks could be heard by Zhang Ye now. He could hear everything going on in the room of his victim. Everything was in Zhang Ye's control!

Subsequently, Zhang Ye didn't care about the consequences as he began recording the video and audio — This was a process that was happening on his own laptop. He recorded every move made by Li Tao. The objective was to find something that could bring him down. However, when he started the recording, Zhang Ye's laptop with normal specifications began to crawl. Even if he did not try to open any other application, his mouse pointer was already severely lagging as it jumped across the screen. Zhang Ye smiled bitterly as he disabled some background tasks to ease the load on the CPU.

After another long wait.

About 10 minutes later, Li Tao suddenly got up. He left the screen to where the camera could not see. Zhang Ye could hear from the audio feed that Li Tao went out into the living room. He did not disconnect from the internet since Zhang Ye was still connected to his PC.

So he waited.

Besides waiting, there was nothing else he could do.

After another few minutes, Li Tao returned. He sat in front of the computer

once again.

Being a hacker carried its risks. This was the reason why Zhang Ye did not leave his seat. In the event someone started tracing the hack back to him, he could quickly erase his tracks.

A cellphone's ringtone started playing.

Zhang Ye subconsciously glanced over, it was not his own cellphone.

Then he saw on screen that Li Tao had answered his phone. He was smoking a cigarette and talking, "Hello, Little Yong ah....Yes....Yes....How are the investigations of those Talk Shows going....I know there are violations...but just symbolically take some actions against them and it will be fine, there's no need to halt their broadcasts....Right...Copyright? I know they plagiarized Zhang Ye's program, but whether there's an issue with the copyright, it does not concern us. It's the job of the relevant copyright departments. Even if they bring it to court, it has nothing to do with us.....Right, right, just issue them warnings and that will be enough. We don't need to met out overly harsh punishments on them, but don't make it too light either. At least we have to show the public that we mean business. Do you even need me to teach you?"

What?

Talking about me now?

Zhang Ye's eyes lit up!

Then continuing on, Li Tao said, "That girl from Weiwo Video...that Dong something girl. Her program's been halted right? Good...who? Whoever calls in....Yes... I know, but it doesn't matter who pleads for her. She's Zhang Ye's university classmate, so we will ban the both of them...Right, to go against our team and cause us so much trouble, hur, did they even think they would live peacefully? No way! In the future, keep an eye on this Weiwo Video company as well. If there's any problem with any of their programs, report it to me....Yes, we will use them as an example to others. Let's see who still dares to rebel....Hur Hur, you think I'm not aware that 'Online Talents' doesn't have any problems? Even if there are no problems, we will still take action against it! Who can do anything about it.... You understand?.....Alright, go and take care of it. You must repress all of those negative opinions! Whoever refuses to accept it, report them

to me!”

The call ended.

Li Tao extinguished his cigarette and continued surfing the internet. He was completely oblivious that every word he just said had been recorded by Zhang Ye!

Zhang Ye was very excited, he slapped his thighs loudly!

It's done! This was just what I wanted! With this, Li Tao still wants to flourish? He won't flourish another day!

After waiting for another 15 minutes, with nothing worthy to show for, Zhang Ye disconnected from that computer. He switched off its camera and microphone and cleaned up the event logs on his victim's computer. He eliminated all traces of the hack except for the trojan horse, which he couldn't delete. There was no way to do it as it was a very common type of trojan horse. There was no uninstall program for it, only the world class trojan horses would have that, but it was harmless. Every hacker would leave some traces of softwares, emails, trojan horses, and such when they hacked into someone's system. As long as the event logs were deleted, there wouldn't be a problem. It would be untraceable from there.

He closed the control program.

Zhang Ye disconnected from the internet to be safe. Only then did he review the recorded footage and edited the most crucial part of it out.

You wanted to take a bite at me and my old classmate?

Li Tao! You're....finished! Even if your father from Heaven comes, he wouldn't be able to save you!

Chapter 281: Revealed at roughly 8:20!

Morning.

There was a knock from outside his bedroom door.

Knock knock. "Old classmate, it's time to wake up."

Zhang Ye hurriedly closed his notebook computer's lid, "I'm already awake."

The door opened. Dong Shanshan walked into the room, dressed in pajamas, "Yo, you've already woken up? I thought you would be sleeping till noon. Are you eating breakfast?"

Zhang Ye smiled, "It's almost 10. Let's have lunch in a while."

Dong Shanshan acknowledged, "Alright, then I'll go do some groceries. The fridge is empty already."

Zhang Ye did not stand on ceremony as he said, "Buy some pork belly for stewing. Let's celebrate this afternoon."

"Celebrate?" Dong Shanshan chuckled, "Are we celebrating the loss of our jobs?"

Zhang Ye did not reply and vaguely brushed it away. He had to keep this matter absolutely confidential. After all, it was illegal to access someone's computer through the internet, so he could not let a second person know. What was most important to a hacker was not his skill or the strength of his digital attacks, but the ability to protect and conceal himself. This was the first rule of a professional hacker.

His old classmate went out.

He flipped the computer lid and began working again. He immediately used false information and an IP address to register an account on a large discussion forum. After pondering all day, he wrote a title, called "The evidence of

conspiracy behind why Zhang Ye and Dong Shanshan were banned”.

This matter had already caused an uproar, and was the focus of many. Hence, despite not having any content in the thread, there were many people who followed it.

“Conspiracy?”

“Is this real or fake?”

“Hai, who doesn’t know that there’s a conspiracy?”

“Right, ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’ clearly is in line with the requirements. I heard ‘Online Talents’ was halted yesterday? It would be strange if there’s no conspiracy!”

“OP is speaking nonsense. Appraisal completed!”

“Proof? Where do you get it from? What proof?”

“Where’s the OP? Why did he disappear? Is he cheating us for clicks and replies?”

“Hurry up and post it. Provide whatever evidence you have! We are all waiting for it!”

Zhang Ye used the same method and registered several new accounts of Tieba and Weibo, as well as places where many netizens gathered. There was no need to provide a real name to register, so by doing so, even if the website investigated him, they might just ban or delete his account, but it was alright, Zhang Ye only needed the account once. All the accounts he registered were of the same name, “Kevin Mitnick”.

This name was chosen firstly because no one in this world knew of him. This was because he was one of the highest profile and best hackers in Zhang Ye’s world. He was labeled by the U.S. Department of Justice as the “most wanted computer criminals in U.S. history.” Hence, it was obvious how awesome he was. Secondly, Zhang Ye also used this name to draw a clear line and distanced himself from this matter. If he chose an “ultra-nationalist” nickname, he might be suspected by others. After all, his intrusion this time was beneficial to himself and his colleagues. So it was inevitable that he would be suspected, hence, he

decided to choose the name of the number 1 hacker, Kevin Mitnick of his world. Furthermore, it was in English, so as to avoid suspicion.

Of course, Zhang Ye was just being alert. This was just a small intrusion, and would not concern the heavy-weight security department as it was not at a high enough level. Li Tao was just a small cadre, and he was not intruding into the nation's Department of Defense. He was just being careful and deliberately turned attention away from himself. Anyone who had seen his program knew he was the ultra-nationalist amongst ultra-nationalists, so it was impossible for him to take on a foreign name.

“SARFT Conspiracy Revelation”!

“The Manipulator Behind the Scenes”!

“Zhang Yuanqi's Private Collection! Come gather around”!

“Angled Scenes of Dong Shanshan! Internal Unedited Versions Leaked”!

Zhang Ye was a complete asshole. If he went all out, without bragging, he could really cause the entire country to fall into chaos. One could tell just from this fellow's topics. Just these topics would not only attract the citizens who were focused on the halted programs by the SARFT, even those unconcerned people would be f**king attracted in. Each title was more staggering than the other!

But the ones above were nothing much.

The most pornographic and most staggering title was posted by Zhang Ye using the account, “Kevin”, on the main battlefield, Weibo. Weibo was where the most number of netizens gathered, so Zhang Ye placed great importance on it. He decided to use a certain joke from his world.

Many people nearly vomited blood seeing this Weibo post!

Zhang Ye posted, “Why did a old granny in her nineties die naked on the street? Why did hundreds of sows in the village scream out at midnight? Why did a tiny store's condoms get tampered with? Why would panties from female dormitories frequently get stolen? Who is the serial rapist of sows? Was it a human or ghost who knocked on an old nun's door every night? What is the hidden meaning behind hundreds of young bitches dying? Is the distortion of

human nature or moral decay behind all this? Please stay tuned tonight, where Kevin Mitnick will bring you the latest news...at roughly 8:20."

"Pfft!"

"OP is too funny!"

"I've already seen this Kevin Mitnick posting more than ten posts. All major forums have been flooded by him, but this post is the most staggering!"

"Hahahaha!"

"Aiyah, why is it so funny?"

"Aren't you trying to blow the whistle behind the conspiracy of the banned programs? Why is there a mention of an old granny in her nineties dying naked on the street!? And why is there hundreds of sows in the village screaming out at midnight!?"

"There's actually such a way to cheat for hits!"

"That's right. This promotion..is really inhumane!"

"Your sister! I really thought you had Teacher Shanshan's angled scenes! Angled scenes your sister! What's that in-construction triangle picture up there!?"

"This English abbreviated name, KM is too inhumane!"

"Our pants are already off, but what are you letting us see!?"

Numerous people were cheated in, and then numerous people began cursing, but it was because of this that more and more people came in. Immediately, these threads gained a lot of popularity. There were two threads that were deleted by the website due to the titles, but most of them were left alone.

"Reveal at 8:20?"

"Why is the time so precise?"

"Hurry up and post it. What's the conspiracy?"

However, Zhang Ye refused to post it. He whetted everyone's appetite. By doing so, he could maximize the attention placed on this matter. After all, Li Tao was not some celebrity, so just posting his video might not gather enough

attention, and not enough to stir up a huge matter for Zhang Ye.

.....

Time slowly passed.

Around 8 at night, Dong Shanshan went to the office to settle some matters, maybe something associated with a notice about her program being halted. Due to this, Zhang Ye was left home alone.

He switched on his computer and saw his posts and Weibo popularity greatly increasing. The main reason was Zhang Ye's titles and content were written too well. Although many netizens knew that they were being deceived, they still clicked in and had a good laugh upon seeing the content, before leaving curses. If not, they would reply and mess around, just to soak in the lively atmosphere. Sows screaming out at midnight was seriously lacking in moral integrity!

"Where is he?"

"It's almost time, right?"

"That's right, where's the information about the conspiracy!?"

On Zhang Ye's side, he was uploading the video. After he finished uploading, he linked the video to the posts and on the Weibo he had posted before.

It was 8:20 sharp.

Li Tao's video was released.

"Hello, Little Yong ah....Yes....Yes....How are the investigations of those Talk Shows going....I know there are violations...but just symbolically take some actions against them and it will be fine, there's no need to halt their broadcasts....Right...Copyright? I know they plagiarized Zhang Ye's program, but whether there's an issue with the copyright, it does not concern us. It's the job of the relevant copyright departments. Even if they bring it to court, it has nothing to do with us.....Right, right, just issue them warnings and that will be enough. We don't need to met out overly harsh punishments on them, but don't make it too light either. At least we have to show the public that we mean business. Do you even need me to teach you? That girl from Weiwo Video...that Dong something girl. Her program's been halted right? Good...who? Whoever

calls in....Yes... I know, but it doesn't matter who pleads for her. She's Zhang Ye's university classmate, so we will ban the both of them...Right, to go against our team and cause us so much trouble, hur, did they even think they would live peacefully? No way! In the future, keep an eye on this Weiwo Video company as well. If there's any problem with any of their programs, report it to me....Yes, we will use them as an example to others. Let's see who still dares to rebel....Hur Hur, you think I'm not aware that 'Online Talents' doesn't have any problems? Even if there are no problems, we will still take action against it! Who can do anything about it.... You understand?.....Alright, go and take care of it. You must repress all of those negative opinions! Whoever refuses to accept it, report them to me!"

The sounds and scenes of Li Tao sneering streamed from the video!

"Who is he?"

"Isn't this that team leader from the Shanghai SARFT live broadcast!?"

"Yes, it's him. He's called Li Tao!"

"Holy sh*t! There really was a conspiracy!"

"So the reason why 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show' and 'Online Talents' was halted was because of Li Tao's machinations. There is no problem with the programs! It's all because of a personal grudge!"

"F**k! It's so sinister! Too sinister!"

"F**k! I knew Teacher Zhang's program had no problems!"

"I can't stand it! This footage is too overwhelming! If the video is real, then there is hope in saving Teacher Zhang and Teacher Dong's programs!"

"Waiting for SARFT headquarters to settle the matter!"

"This sort of person has to be dismissed!"

"What sort of god is that KM poster? Hacker? He can even get such a video?"

The moment the footage finished playing, a new wave was set off into the internet that had been quelled!

Many industry insiders, who had previously spoken up for the Shanghai SARFT

and Li Tao, immediately turned silent. No one dared to say anything!

The other counterparts, who were just watching the bustle, also did not make a sound. As the matter was too sensitive, no one dared to take sides before the matter came to a conclusion!

Chapter 282: Offering a Limerick!

At the same moment.

Weiwo Company.

The WebTV department was still filled with people who were working overtime. Dong Shanshan had come back to discuss how to handle the halted “Online Talents” and deal with it’s fallout.

As everyone was busy discussing.

Somewhere at the back office.

A logistic staff member suddenly looked straight dumbfounded. Then he pointed at the computer screen and shouted out to everyone, “Everyone, quick, take a look! Quickly look at this video online!”

“What?”

“What video?”

“We’re having a small meeting right now.”

“Yea, we’re already in this situation, what’s there still worth watching?”

Everyone was speechless. Feng Guiqin and Wang Xiong also frowned.

But that person was still extremely anxious. He kept saying, “Director Feng, Director Wang, something big just happened!”

Only then did everyone get the graveness of the situation. Feng Guiqin walked over and said, “What’s the matter? What’s the video about?”

“You’ll understand when you watch it.” That person immediately replayed the video. Everyone else in the office also came over to watch as Li Tao’s words were delivered into everyone’s ears!

“For crying out loud!” Feng Guiqin exclaimed after watching the video!

Wang Xiong was also furious as he slammed on the table, “This bullying is outrageous! This is pushing it too far!”

An old man in the office said, “I had thought the crackdown this time was just being stricter, but who knew there was such a conspiracy! They were intentionally coming after us!”

A young girl, who was working as an assistant, said angrily, “He said it clearly that our Talk Show and Talent Show had no problems, and even instructed his subordinates not to deal too harshly to those pirated programs! What the hell does that Li Tao want?! Does he still have regards for the law!”

Dong Shanshan asked, “How reliable is the video?”

A moment later, Sister Four, who had already knocked off and left the office building, was called back. She sat in front of the computer momentarily to investigate the video, then turned around and nodded to everyone, “Although I am not a professional, but I’ve spent more than 10 years shooting and making videos. This video is definitely real. The movement of the mouth and audio is synchronized perfectly. This was definitely not edited. A very skilled hacker probably hacked into Li Tao’s home computer and recorded this video. Chief Li is...done for this time!”

Feng Guiqin did not say a second word. She immediately grabbed her cellphone and made a call. She did not look for her friend, nor any contact. She called in directly to Shanghai SARFT’s mainline and questioned them furiously!

.....

On the other side.

At a certain hotel in Shanghai.

Li Tao had just finished his bath and was comfortably lying in the bed. He had a cigarette in his mouth as he quietly hummed a melody, probably a melody from his home city.

A woman’s figure could be seen behind the frosted glass in the bathroom.

“Are you done?” Li Tao urged on.

“What are you in a rush for? Isn’t your wife at work?” The woman said.

Li Tao flicked the ash off his cigarette, “She went in for overtime.”

The woman said, “I was wondering why you’d be so free today. Are you going back tonight?”

Li Tao laughed loudly, “I’m not going back. I said I was going in for overtime too. Anyway, I’d be going to the office from here tomorrow. It’s not too far away from here. My baby, I missed you so much!”

“Naughty jerk,” the woman scolded him with a smile.

The cellphone suddenly rang!

Li Tao frowned. He did not want to answer it at first, but seeing that the call was from a Leader at work, he reluctantly said to the person in the bathroom, “Don’t speak. I need to answer a call!”

“It’s already this late, who is it?” the woman complained.

“My leader, don’t speak anymore!” Li Tao then answered the call.

On the other side was a middle-aged man who said in an angry voice, “Li Tao, I don’t care where you are at now! Come to the office in 10 minutes!”

“Ah? Leader....”

Du, du. The line was already cut!

Li Tao was stunned, what’s going on? What had happened?

The bathroom door opened and a woman wrapped in a towel came out, “What’s the matter?”

Li Tao hesitated for a moment before putting on his clothes, “I’m going out for a while, something came up at the office.” Then ignoring her complaints, he rushed back to the office in his car. As he had a guilty conscience, his heart was drumming all the way back to the office. He did not know why his leader was in such a rage.

.....

Shanghai SARFT unit.

Today was a rest day and it was also past 8 in the evening. There weren’t many people around, except for two guards on duty outside. A few cars were parked in

the yard outside. They were the cars of several Leaders of Shanghai SARFT and other team leaders. Li Tao was feeling curious. Why were so many Leaders back here tonight? Did something major happen?

Upstairs, in a small conference room.

Li Tao was the last to arrive. He pushed open the door and went inside. There were 7-8 other people and almost all of the Shanghai SARFT's leaders were there. Noticing that everyone had arrived before him, Li Tao understood something. According to his estimates, he had arrived at the office within five minutes after being instructed to do so, but the others had arrived even faster than him? Clearly, the Leader had informed them before himself!

This turnout.

Did something bad happen?

Li Tao was getting uncomfortable and nervous, "Leader."

At once, everyone looked over at Li Tao.

Amongst them was a Leader of Li Tao and another of Li Tao's same ranked colleague. They had good relations with him and this made Li Tao glance at the two of them. He thought to himself that they were really too unworthy as friends. Something had happened and yet you guys didn't give me a heads up first? At least let me be prepared! Even if you can't call to notify me, at least drop me a message? However when Li Tao looked over, the two of them were sitting uncomfortably too. They did not even look at Li Tao in the eye. Li Tao had been working for so many years, he naturally knew that in official matters, there was no such thing as friendship, so he felt something was amiss!

Sure enough, the middle aged man, who was the leader and also the head of the Shanghai SARFT, said something that left Li Tao dumbfounded, "Did you know that you were secretly filmed today!?"

Many of those present looked at Li Tao as if they were looking at a corpse. They knew he was done for.

The deputy head, a middle-aged woman smacked the table and said coldly, "It would have been easy to handle if this was an internal issue, but we can't even suppress it anymore! It has been posted all over the internet! The whole world

knows about it now!”

This matter was, after all, a disreputable deed and harmed their reputation as the SARFT. If it was possible, they would have tried their best to prevent others from knowing about it. However, the person targeting Li Tao was too wicked. He did not even report it through the official channels nor did he even make a petition. He had directly posted on the internet, and before posting the video, he had even f**king worked up some momentum such as an old granny dying naked! What sows screaming out daily at midnight! Things like condoms from stores being ineffective! All of this had f**king nothing to do with the video content, but it was in this way that it attracted thousands of curious people’s attention! His tactic was ingenious!

He had invaded Li Tao’s computer without any detection!

He had even used such a brilliant promotional tactic to absorb the people’s attention!

Against such an expert, anyone would have a headache just encountering him. Everyone present knew that Li Tao had met his match. With that person targeting him, no one could save him!

Upon hearing his Leader’s words, Li Tao was stunned, “This.. No!”

The big boss coldly said, “The video is already on the internet! What do you mean no!? Ah?”

Secretly filmed?

He had been a victim of voyeurism?

Li Tao knew that it had to be true. With so many Leaders gathered here for a meeting, they clearly won’t be so free as to tease him. Li Tao’s face went pale as he stuttered, “Leader, I...am just...friends with that girl...We went to the hotel because...I needed to settle her housing. We did not do anything!”

The moment he said that, all the Leaders present were immediately dumbfounded!

Ah?

Girl?

There was even a f**king girl?

Are you rearing someone outside your marriage!?

A colleague, who did not have good relations with Li Tao, lowered his head, trying to hide his expressions. In fact, he had nearly burst out laughing!

The number-two-in-charge was a woman, and she was nearly infuriated to death when he heard Li Tao's words. "Chief Li! How many things are you hiding from us!? You are way too bold!"

Li Tao was completely stumped, "Ah?" It was not about this? Holy sh*t! Then why did you talk about being secretly filmed!?" He was mistaken!

The big boss waved his hands, no longer willing to speak another word with Li Tao, "Enough, the reason why you came, is for us to notify you that you don't have to return home in the next two days. The headquarters has sent an inspection team here! If you have anything to explain, say it to the people from headquarters tomorrow!"

.....

9 P.M.

The activity surrounding the broadcasting halt exploded!

Many people began to question the SARFT!

At this moment, the SARFT posted an article. First, it thanked the supervision and reports from the people. Secondly, they strongly protested the method of invading a civil servant's personal computer to obtain information. It did not indicate if it would pursue legal proceedings against this matter, but it posted a large heap of official-sounding terms. Finally, it announced that the headquarters were already aware of this matter and had begun investigations against Li Tao. The results of the investigation would be made known to the public as a way to answer the people. If it was proven that the halted programs were due to malfeasance, then they would provide an explanation to the companies, television stations, as well as the program team employees who were affected.

In general, this was what it said. The SARFT's attitude was made known clearly.

Their intervention was timely and the response they gave satisfied the public temporarily!

“Li Tao is going down!”

“Haha, I couldn’t stand him long ago!”

“Halting so many programs that shouldn’t be halted, yet allowing so many programs that should be halted to carry on. He really thinks he is above the law! Now, he has received his punishment!”

“The evil will be rewarded with evil!”

“Thank you to God KM! Thank you for helping Zhang Ye, Dong Shanshan, as well as those Teachers who had their programs wrongly halted! You have removed an evil for the people!”

“God KM is too powerful!”

“Hereby honoring godly KM the title, ‘Guard of the People’!”

“Those programs that have been wronged have redressed the situation! I wonder when ‘Zhang Ye’s Talk Show’ will be restored! I really want to watch it!”

“That’s right! It was so difficult for our country to produce such an awesome new program. We can’t just let it end like that!”

“I also can’t wait to see ‘Online Talents’! The guy who ate glass last episode was pretty awesome!”

“Ai, with such a serious matter happening, why isn’t Teacher Zhang Ye out yet? I want to hear what Zhang Ye has to say! @ZhangYe!”

.....

At home.

Zhang Ye was naturally paying full attention to this matter. He had also seen the notice put out by the SARFT.

He chuckled and noticed someone @ him to say something, Zhang Ye did not stand on ceremony. Back at the Beijing couplet competition, when the Beijing Writer’s Association provoked him and said things like they would not want a person like Zhang Ye, he had used a limerick from his world that was written by

Guo Degang, “It’s not like I’ll come”. Guo Degang only had two famous limericks. This time, Zhang Ye was planning to use the second one!

Zhang Ye posted a large red lettering on Weibo, with the character ‘Happy’!

Then he added the following words, “Gone in the late winter is like the sunset, three cups of wine poured to the sky. Where is the small-minded one? Believing that retribution in the human world works!”

The moment the netizens saw this, they were excited by it!

“Haha! Teacher Zhang Ye has finally appeared!”

“Yet another poem! Is this a limerick?”

“Teacher Zhang is still that coquettish! As coquettish as ever!”

“Where is the small-minded one? Believing that retribution in the human world works! Well said!”

Chapter 283: “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” Restored!

Home.

It was very late.

A cellphone’s ringtone rang in a quiet bedroom.

It was Dong Shanshan. “Hello, old classmate. Let me tell you some good news.”

“Hur Hur, what’s the good news?” Zhang Ye feigned ignorance.

Dong Shanshan laughed, “A video was leaked on the internet, showing proof that Li Tao clamped down on our programs on purpose. Now, the SARFT has begun investigations. Our programs might be restored soon.”

Zhang Ye said, “I already heard about it. It’s all over the internet now. Didn’t you see me post on Weibo?”

Dong Shanshan might have been in front of a computer, “You posted on Weibo again? You set up your Weibo account for months now, but never once have your words been good. Let me take a look...” After a pause, the sounds of a few mouse clicks could be heard through the phone’s receiver, “Heh, you sure are wicked. You even put up a red-lettered ‘Happy’ character? Believing that retribution in the human world works? If Li Tao sees this, he will definitely die from exasperation. You should tone down that mouth of yours.

Zhang Ye refused, “He stabbed us, and you still want me to show him face?”

Dong Shanshan laughed, “Yeah, looks like it’s all because of that live broadcast you messed up. A hacker named Kevin Mitnick could not sit idle and hacked into Li Tao’s home computer and found evidence. Hur Hur, but he could be a fan of ours, or one of the other programs’ hosts that got halted. It’s also possible that

this KM has a personal grudge with Li Tao. Anyway, regardless of what caused it, it's all good for us. The Leaders have already said that once our programs are restored and your qualification as a broadcasting host is restored, they will do the rehiring procedures. You can then carry on hosting and producing 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show'. The program will carry on, and business as usual."

Zhang Ye acknowledged, "Alright, help me thank the Leader."

"Alright, that's it from me. I've got a date with Wang Bei and company to sing karaoke tonight. I probably won't be back tonight. Are you coming? It's the KTV below our office." Dong Shanshan said.

Zhang Ye answered, "No, you guys go ahead."

After hanging up, Zhang Ye washed up before laying on his bed. He had been waiting for Li Tao to open the trojan horse last night and had woken up early. He did not rest well, and now with things settled, he definitely needed a good rest. No one knew that the hacker, Kevin Mitnick, that was being discussed by others, was in fact Zhang Ye. After fighting on the front lines all this time, he could finally sleep in peace.

An uneventful night passed.

.....

The second day was still uneventful.

.....

The third day was still...Alright, this time there was something to talk about.

This afternoon, Zhang Ye went to Weiwo company. Wang Xiong had given him a call, saying that the Shanghai SARFT was releasing the results of the investigations, so Zhang Ye went over. Zhang Ye naturally did so without any hesitation. Although he had quit, he had not cut relations with Weiwo company. Besides, waiting on the internet for news was definitely not as fast as getting news directly from Weiwo. Zhang Ye was very concerned about the outcome of the investigations.

Everything was still the same at the company.

The familiar building, the familiar environment, and the familiar people.

“Yo, isn’t this Teacher Zhang Ye?” In the elevator, a youth Zhang Ye did not know greeted him, “You came to the company today?”

Zhang Ye smiled, “Yeah, I came to take a look.”

Another woman waved at him, “Teacher Little Zhang, good morning.”

“Good morning,” Zhang Ye also greeted her back.

The woman immediately said, “I watched the live broadcast video of you at the SARFT press conference the past two days. There’s really no limit to watching it. You cursed so well!”

Zhang Ye chuckled, “Thank you.”

The woman said in amusement, “When will you have another speech like that?”

“When the opportunity arises next time,” Zhang Ye answered very openly.

Ah?

Next time?

There’s a next time?

The youth and another person from the Marketing department were at a loss whether to laugh or cry when they heard this. Come on! That speech of yours caused chaos in the industry and on the internet back then, yet, you are planning on doing it again!? Do you think there’s not enough chaos!? From just a casual chat with Zhang Ye, they could tell how fearless Teacher Zhang Ye’s temper was. Whoever got in his bad books could only blame on their misfortune!

WebTV department.

In the office, his colleagues greeted him warmly.

“Teacher Zhang!”

“Yo, Little Zhang is back.”

“Haha, Zhang Ye, I saw that limerick you posted the day before yesterday. Awesome. The ancients talk about composing a poem in three steps, I think you don’t even need three. One step is enough for you to compose a poem!”

“That companion picture of the ‘Happy’ character was really nice.”

“He even targeted our Weiwo Video? That Li is asking to be cursed at!”

“Let’s see how the matter is settled today. With people from headquarters investigating it, please don’t make it start off with a bang, but ending with a whimper, where no punishment is dealt to Li Tao.”

“It definitely won’t happen. It’s just a matter of how severe the punishment will be.”

“And the crux of the matter was if our few programs would be restored. That is crucial.”

As Zhang Ye greeted everyone, he began chatting with them, before slowly walking to his previous seat. He realized it was still empty. Clearly it had been left intact for Zhang Ye’s return.

Dong Shanshan smiled with her eyes forming a line, “You’ve come?”

“Yup. When will the official statement be released?” Zhang Ye asked with concern.

Dong Shanshan lifted her sleeve and looked at her watch, “They said it would be announced at 9:30. Just in a little bit.” As she breathed out, she closed her eyes and knitted her eyebrows. She was also waiting. At this moment in time, it was unlikely that Dong Shanshan had the mood to work. Of course, after having her program halted, she did not have any work to do either.

The appointed time was approaching.

The entire office eagerly looked forward to the news.

At the same time, it was likely that many industry insiders from conventional and online television stations were waiting for the outcome of the investigations. After all, this matter was huge in their industry and was unprecedented, hence, everyone wanted to know what SARFT headquarters would choose to do. They were extremely concerned with how the SARFT would deal with Zhang Ye. Although Zhang Ye was the most wronged person in this entire process, with evidence proving that Li Tao had halted “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”, despite knowing that there were no problems, and ignoring the pirated Talk Show programs,

putting Zhang Ye on the advantageous side of reason, his messing up the live broadcast at the SARFT press conference, and had even attacked and mocked the SARFT to the point of even cursing their actions made the matter a bit more complicated.

Suddenly, voices sounded in the office!

“It’s out!”

“Hey, it’s here!”

“The punishment has been meted out. Hurry and take a look!”

Wang Xiong had also come out from his office and into the general office area. He monitored the development of this matter with everyone else!

Zhang Ye also switched on his computer and saw the punishment notice posted by the SARFT: ‘After a complete investigation, the SARFT Headquarters and the Shanghai SARFT had identified malfeasance in Li Tao’s actions. He had received bribes amounting to 250,000 Yuan (US\$37,500), as well as had an extramarital affair!’

Li Tao was doomed!

And according to the amount of bribery he received, he would face criminal prosecution!

“F**k!”

“The punishment is heavy enough?”

“He deserves it!”

“Man, he even had lifestyle problems?”

“I wonder how the headquarters managed to discover that. They are too empowering!”

With Li Tao taken down and facing jail time, this was a result Zhang Ye was very satisfied with. The colleagues in the office also applauded!

At that moment, a second notice was posted by the SARFT.

‘Regarding Dong Shanshan’s “Online Talents”, Zhang Ye’s “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”, Teacher Chen’s children program, as well as the six other programs that

were previously halted at the press conference, the SARFT approved them for rebroadcasting, effective immediately. There were still two other programs, which have been found to be truly problematic, and the original punishments still stand. They are not to be restored, such as “Web Bikini Show”, because it had really broken the restrictions. After a round of investigations, the SARFT also added on a few other programs to the penalty list. Three of them had plagiarized “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” without paying any royalties and are now included on this list. Their broadcasts were halted, and the few conventional and online television stations are to be fined 200,000 to 1,000,000, as well as criticized!

There was great joy in reading the punishments that were to be doled out!

Li Tao was taken down, and the programs were all restored. It was perfect!

Of course, perfection was before the last notice was posted by the SARFT. In the end, the notice mentioned Zhang Ye. Regarding the host of Weiwo Online Television Station’s “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show”, Zhang Ye, the original penalty of revoking his broadcasting host qualifications was changed to a fifteen day suspension!

The public statements ended here!

The colleagues in the office all looked at each other before they looked at Zhang Ye spontaneously!

Zhang Ye nearly cursed. Damn it, revoking the penalty of my broadcasting host would do, why did you f**king temporarily suspend me for half a month?

What did this mean?

Are you trying to clamp down on me? It definitely was!

Zhang Ye knew, and his colleagues could also read the situation!

Although Zhang Ye had caused problems because of Li Tao’s malfeasance, the SARFT did not ignore it. They still punished Zhang Ye. Although half a month wasn’t a very long time, it was not very short either. Although his program was restored, his hosting qualifications were suspended. “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” still could not be aired within the next 15 days. This was clearly the SARFT settling scores, and could also be thought of as a form of clamping down or warning. It accounted to the public, but punished both sides. The only difference was Li

Tao's punishment was heavier, and Zhang Ye's was lighter.

"Teacher Zhang."

"Uh, Teacher Zhang Ye."

The people surrounding him did not know what to say.

After a short moment of depression, he did not take it too hard, as he smiled to everyone, "It's alright. I was already planning to say goodbye to the entertainment industry. Being able to come back is already good enough. It's just half a month, right? I'll wait for it."

Wang Xiong also laughed as he went over to pinch Zhang Ye's shoulder, "Right, it's just 15 days. Little Zhang, we can rehire you today. We will give you the title of a planner. Once your hosting qualifications are restored, we will immediately apply for the restoration of you being a host. As for 'Zhang Ye's Talk Show', you can carry on recording even though we can't broadcast it!"

Zhang Ye blinked, "Record even now?"

"Since it can't be aired, saving it first wouldn't be a problem." Wang Xiong chuckled.

Zhang Ye immediately said, "Alright, then I'll finish recording the Talk Show over the next few days. Once my status as host is restored, then I won't need to be so busy. We can directly broadcast them!"

Chapter 284: Top of the SARFT's Blacklist- Zhang Ye!

The next day.

It was still four days till January 1st.

Zhang Ye had contacted the original members of his program team, as well as allowed them to hand out tickets for a live audience. He had plans to record the rest of the episodes of “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” before the new year arrived. A preliminary estimate was 55 episodes, before he could go back to Beijing to spend New Year’s with his parents.

To film fifty episodes in about four days meant a lot of work each day!

At his fastest speed, he had to record about 12 or 13 episodes a day. With every episode being half an hour long, it would take a minimum of six hours to record. This meant recording would begin in the morning and end in the afternoon.

If it were any other host, they would not be able to handle such a large amount of stress from work. There was no need to even mentioning recording more than ten episodes a day, even recording two or three episodes in four consecutive days was something no one could handle. However, Zhang Ye had the perseverance to do so. He had done crazy things like this in the past. Be it “Ghost Blows Out the Light” at the radio station, or “Lecture Room” he recorded at Beijing Television Station, many staff members of his program teams would privately call Zhang Ye “Desperate Workaholic”. This was because even them as people on the side could not survive the fatigue associated with working on scene, but Zhang Ye could do so day after day. He did not collapse at all. This was also why Zhang Ye was accepted by many members of staff. He always led by example. He worked more than others and rested less than others. With him

holding the stage on the forefront, the members of the program team did not skive. People were, after all, judged by others. This was also the reason why the team led by Zhang Ye was always so efficient.

As for the need for Talk Shows to stick to current affairs?

Zhang Ye was not too worried. His Talk Show touched on current affairs, but he did not need to say those jokes only when something happened. For example, many of the jokes in “Tonight 80’s Talkshow” were universal. Ridiculing the Koreans, or trampling the Japanese, these jokes could survive the ages. Without any exaggeration, even if Zhang Ye used his talk show to scold the Koreans or Japanese, the jokes would still not be obsolete a hundred years later!

.....

The recording studio.

“Is every department ready?”

“Teacher Zhang, we are done preparing.”

“When will the audience enter?”

“In about half an hour. It has already been arranged.”

“Alright, I’ll go backstage to take a rest. Sorry for troubling you to keep an eye out.”

“Are we really recording 12 episodes today, Teacher Zhang? Man, alright. Go take a rest. We will be busying ourselves soon. There won’t be time, but you still have us!”

The staff present were all busily working.

After Zhang Ye went into the backstage dressing room, he began to buy large quantities of “Memory Search Capsule” after closing the door. He closed his eyes and began to arrange and search through all the Talk Show programs in his mind. Zhang Ye had wildly spoken of recording more than ten episodes a day all based on the effects of the Memory Search Capsule. This allowed him to have a continuous stream of jokes in his head. The jokes chosen by Zhang Ye were all good and they had the best effects. He even abandoned certain jokes that only had passable effects, so as to make “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” a signature show, a

program of the highest standards. As such, he naturally burned through a huge number of Memory Search Capsules. Thankfully, the previous few episodes of the talk show program had added a lot of Reputation points to his game ring. He had also received a lot from the live broadcast speech and poem, and finally, the exposure from “Sunflower in the Sun” and the limerick had earned him a large number of Reputation points. It was enough!

Eat!

Ten!

Twenty!

Thirty!

Zhang Ye knew that he should not feel the pinch regarding the amount of Reputation points he just spent. He could earn the Reputation points again when they were depleted, but if he did not do the program well, there was no way of regretting it. Hence, Zhang Ye planned on spending all his Reputation points over the next few days, so as to make “Zhang Ye’s Talk Show” perfect. Besides, there was no need to feel the pinch because even with the Reputation points depleted, when the talk show was restored, all the Reputation points he earned a day would be “pure income”. The more he spent now, the better the program would be. The Reputation points from each episode in half a month’s time would also naturally be greater in amount!

.....

Outside.

The audience entered.

“Great, I’ve waited a long time for this moment!”

“We are really lucky. I heard the program hasn’t been restored for broadcasting.”

“That’s right. There’s still half a month left. It might be restored sometime before or after New Year’s. Since SARFT has not restored Teacher Zhang Ye’s hosting qualifications, all they can do now is pre-record.”

“The SARFT sure is something. What are they doing!?”

“There’s no way around it. Who asked Teacher Zhang to curse them during a live broadcast? He has now been labeled as a destructor of live broadcasts having done it twice. He also had misdeeds back in Beijing. This time, he was only suspended for half a month, so it’s still not too bad. If not for Li Tao smacking himself against a gun by meeting a righteous hacker, Teacher Zhang Ye might not have been able to do any programs ever again. It’s already worth thanking the stars just for us coming here to watch the talk show live.”

“Yea, let’s be content.”

“Zhang Ye is here, Zhang Ye is here!”

“Hahaha! I want to laugh just from seeing him!”

“That’s right. I haven’t seen Teacher Zhang Ye in a long time! He’s so f**king warm!”

The recording began. Zhang Ye made his debut on stage. However, the moment he stood onstage, the audience spontaneously stood up as they cheered on Zhang Ye’s name!

“Zhang Ye!”

“Zhang Ye!”

“Zhang Ye!”

The audience were very excited!

Zhang Ye was also very touched as he chuckled, “Thank you for not forgetting me. Thank you. Everyone, please sit down. Some trifling matters have happened over the past few days, causing the halt of this program...”

“Yi!”

The audience began laughing loudly. Trifling matters? When were any of the troubles you previously got yourself into f**king trifling!? When was it not earth-shaking!?

Zhang Ye was already famous. Before he even said his jokes, the audience was already laughing loudly!

.....

On the first day, Zhang Ye recorded 12 episodes. The audience was changed twice. At the end, he felt like he was in good condition, so he ended up doing another two more episodes.

On the second day, Wang Xiong came to persuade Zhang Ye as he was in great trepidation seeing the scenes. This workload was too tiring, so he hoped that nothing bad would come out of it. However, Zhang Ye rejected the good intentions of his Leader, and carried on insisting on recording the programs. In the end, he recorded 13 episodes in one go, from day to night.

The third day was the same.

The fourth day was as usual.

Zhang Ye's shocking performance was evident. It even caused a sensation throughout the entire company. Even many industry insiders knew of this matter. Without exception, all of them had only two things to say about Zhang Ye's actions — madness and perverse! This was simply an impossible task. Even if you had the energy and physical strength to do it, how could your scripts keep up? What was most shocking was that Zhang Ye did not prepare any scripts from beginning to the end. He actually managed to finish all the episodes of the talk show in four days. The quality of each episode surpassed the previous one, and all of them were basically recorded in one pass. There was no precedent of a re-recording!

What sort of concept was this?

It was f**king playing with one's life!

However, Zhang Ye actually managed to do it!

Many industry insiders heard of this matter and they refused to believe it. Hence, they came to Weiwo company to watch. Feng Guiqin specially approved it and gave them front row seats. As a result, a number of people showed up with faces full of disdain. They were prepared to pick at it, hoping to expose Zhang Ye for having a script, but after more than ten episodes were recorded, none of them made a sound after they left!

.....

Today.

Zhang Ye finally finished recording the last episode of the Talk Show. At the end of the filming, the entire audience gave him a standing ovation and broke out into an enthusiastic round of applause!

The audience were dismissed.

The program team gathered together.

“Teacher Zhang, it’s been hard on you.”

“You’ve worked hard the past few days.”

“Zhang Ye, you are too fantastic!”

“Haha, our team has created an industry miracle!”

“That’s right, to finish recording fifty episodes in four days. No one would f**king believe it even if we mention it!”

“Back then, I thought it was impossible, but who could have thought that we actually managed to do it! Teacher Zhang, how does your brain have so many joke segments? And they were all interconnected so nicely, and you did not even stutter once? If it were me, I would already be stuttering a single line without a script!”

“Hehe, you want to compare yourself with Teacher Zhang?”

“Who is Teacher Zhang? He is a mighty person who cannot be measured using common sense!”

With the program wrapped up, everyone was very happy.

Zhang Ye also smiled, “It should be said that it has been hard on all of you. I made you accompany me in this madness the past few days. So, tonight, I’ll be treating you all. Let’s go to the best restaurant in Shanghai! I’ll pick up the tab no matter how much you eat!”

“Oh!”

“Teacher Zhang is impressive!”

Everyone cheered!

The best restaurant? To have a single nice meal would be tens of thousands at least!

Zhang Ye naturally did not care much about money. He was ambivalent towards money as his goal was always fame. He wanted to become the world's top celebrity. That was what mattered most to him!

Dong Shanshan came through a staff door, "What's this about eating?"

Following that, Wang Bei and company entered, "Hehe, I think we heard it as well. Zhang Ye is treating, right? Are we included?"

Zhang Han, who had good relations with Dong Shanshan, said with a smile, "Am I allowed in?"

Zhang Ye waved his hands, "All of you are included. Anyone here is included!" Saying that, he gave Feng Guiqin and Wang Xiong a call to invite them. On this matter, Director Feng had given Zhang Ye a good deal of support. She did not abandon him at the most critical point. With the program done recording, Zhang Ye naturally wanted to express his gratitude.

.....

At night.

With everyone gathered together, they headed straight for the restaurant.

On the way, everyone saw a blacklist for next year posted by the SARFT on the internet!

Similar to Zhang Ye's world, every year, the SARFT headquarters would publish a "blacklist". Of course, this was what everyone called it in private. It was not an official term. The goal and purpose of producing this list was to stress one's specification and professional conduct. In other words, those people who entered the blacklist, be it in their future programs, movies or television dramas, the production would be strictly reviewed as long as a person on the blacklist was in it. This was a limitation as well as a warning!

There were about eight people on the SARFT blacklist!

Two of them were actors who were caught for taking drugs this year. Three of them were two television drama actors and a scriptwriter who were caught engaging in prostitution. Another one was a director who had been involving in scamming. As for the other person, no one knew why as the internet did not

report on his matters, but he was last on the blacklist.

As for the number one person on the SARFT blacklist, it surprised and shocked everyone when they saw it!

First page...

First row...

First line...

There was Zhang Ye's name!

Zhang Ye's name began with Z, and according to this ordering, his name should have been at the back, and even if it was ordered according to strokes, Zhang Ye should not have been first! But he was surprised to find that he was first on SARFT's blacklist! At the same moment, numerous people were shocked seeing this, they also had the impulse to laugh!

Take a look!

All of you take a look!?

Look at how powerful Zhang Ye's mouth was!

He neither cursed or did anything serious. All he did was say a few poems or speeches with his mouth, but what was the outcome? He was ranked ahead of people who took drugs, engaged in prostitution or scammed! The attention and vigilance that SARFT placed on him was higher than those f**king drug addicts! What did this mean? It meant that to the SARFT headquarters, the offensive power of Zhang Ye's mouth was greater than that of all of those people!

Hence, he was ranked number one on the blacklist!

Many people expressed their speechlessness in posts!

"Did they get it wrong?"

"Holy sh*t! Zhang Ye is ranked first this year?"

"The number one person on last year's SARFT blacklist was a director who beat someone up to death in public! This year... it's Teacher Zhang Ye?"

"Next year, Teacher Zhang Ye will definitely suffer! He is a target of specialized suppression! Any program or work of his will be strictly reviewed, with

specifications higher than the average person!”

“There’s no other way about it. Teacher Zhang Ye has caused too many problems!”

“Even so, he shouldn’t be ranked first. There’s a celebrity with drug addiction behind Zhang Ye! No matter how I look at it, Teacher Zhang Ye should be placed behind him!”

“That’s right, what great sin has Teacher Zhang committed?”

“What sort of standards are they using to form this ranking list?”

“Is there a need to ask? Haha, the SARFT ranks it according to the damage one can cause!”

Many netizens and industry insiders finally gave a stunning analysis. Zhang Ye’s mouth was something even SARFT was f**king afraid of!